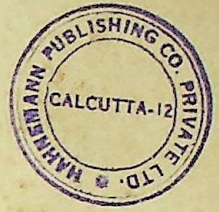




129



LECTURES ON MATERIA MEDICA

PART I

By

Dr. N. Ghatak, B.A.

Price Rs. 8/-

Published by

THE AUTHOR,
124/1/1, Bowbazar Street, Calcutta.

All rights reserved by the Author

Printed by
Kishori Mohan Dey,
Paris Art Press,
38/A, Scott Lane, Calcutta.

Preface.

It is through the infinite mercy of God that a portion of the Homœopathic Materia Medica in English has been able to see the light of day. The first part of it which is ready for sale, contains description of remedies up to Dulcamara. The publication has been much belated on account of repeated untoward events and sad bereavements in the family during the last three years, which added to my own heavy Blood-pressure, made me almost incapable to devote to any important and serious matters. However, I am glad to say that in spite of those obstacles in the way, I have been thus able to present before the reading public the first part of the work, which, as will be obvious, is the outcome of much labour and serious attention.

A question may arise as to the necessity of writing and publishing the English Materia Medica when so many, from the able hands of our illustrious colleagues and predecessors, are in the market. My humble reply is that there are many, of course, but excepting one or two, no Materia Medica is found to be fully helpful in the way of giving a living picture of any and every remedy, especially, of the deep-acting and miasmatic nature. This inconvenience I myself had to feel during the first period of my Homœopathic practice, and I had to labour much on this account. The dry symptoms and conditions as manifested in the provings of remedies cannot give a living picture of any remedy,

though that is the thing utmostly needful for the true Homœopathic Practitioners. Of course, I do not know how far have I been successful in my attempt, and it is for the worthy readers and Practitioners to judge.

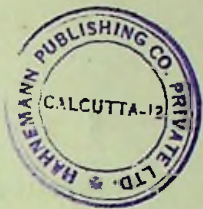
I am extremely sorry that my two worthy sons, Shital Chandra and Ratan Chandra who gave me the suggestion and impetus for this work, are no more in this world. With an extremely sad and broken heart, I have been and shall be going on in the way of completing these works that have been undertaken by my most unfortunate self. Absolutely do I depend upon His Will and Mercy, because I know that His ways are the best.

Lastly, I must express my whole-hearted blessings for Dr. Hari Sankar Mukherji, M.H.S., my ex-student and chief Assistant, as well as for Dr. Ram Krishna Chatterji, M.H.S., my eldest son-in-law and Homœopathic Practitioner, both of whom did so much help in publishing the work by way of making proof-corrections and giving me various other helpful suggestions, without which I could hardly be able to publish the work. May I pray to Him for their welfare and advancement in the Homœopathic field.

124/1/1, Bowbazar Street,
Calcutta.

Author.

30th of June, 1939.



LECTURES ON MATERIA MEDICA.

ABROTANUM.

Though **Abrotanum** cannot be called an antipsoric, yet it is so deep-acting that it may be taken so. It is a remedy to fit in a constitution of deep disorder.

Marasmus,—In the case of marasmus of children, Abrotanum is one of those that can remedy the disorder, and there are lots that come in for their share, viz Natrum mur, Lyco, Psorinum, Iod, Sanicula, Tuberculinum, &c., but each has its own individuality, and you are always to distinguish before prescription.

Do you know what a “marasmus” is? It is a disorder in the very morning of life, on account of which a child may eat well, and the food-stuffs may also be goodly nourishing, yet the child may be gradually losing. This is called “marasmus,” and unless you remedy the wrong, the child will famish and famish, and will not develop, even many of them I have seen die of inanition. But why does the disorder come in case of some children, and not in others? It comes generally as a result of miasmatic birth,—in other words, children coming off from the

sycotic parents may have this and many other nervous disorders in their life.

The proper sphere is to be assigned to Abrotanum, so that it may rightly be used in marasmus. Abrotanum is useful where the *emaciation commences in the lower region, that is, in the legs, and travels gradually high and higher up*, so that the face is the last to be dried up ; and the neck gets so much weakened that the child cannot hold up the head. It has a ravenous hunger but the child persistently loses all the time. (Iod, Lyco, Natr. mur, Psorin, Sanic, Tuber).

Now to compare,—*Iodine, Sanicula and Tuberculinum*,—all these three remedies have their marasmus commencing in the legs and travelling upwards like Abrotanum ; but *Iodine* is unusually hot, anxious and always longing for cold and cold air, and Abrotanum is chilly. *Sanicula* child is headstrong, obstinate, with head and neck sweating profusely during sleep, incontinence of urine and fæces, offensive foot-sweat, burning feet, &c. *Tuberculinum* child has intense susceptibility to cold and frequent coryza, and has generally tubercular heredity, with restless and dissatisfied mind.

Lycopodium, Natrum mur and Psorin—have emaciation with rather an abnormal appetite, but the emaciation commences high up and *descend* gradually. *Natrum mur* is hot, yet much susceptible to cold and has much thirst with a longing for salty food. *Lyco* has the peculiar appetite,—it gets filled up with a small quantity of food. It has also tympany in the abdomen and a general aggravation in the afternoon from 4 to 8 p.m. *Psorin* is chilly, full of

skin-symptoms, and good all day but whining and restless at night. It has a general aggravation from bath and cold air. Offensive discharges.

Metastasis,—you should know what a metastasis is. It is a condition of the system due to which, disease symptoms travel from one organ or one portion of the organism, to another organ or another portion, either in the form of same disease symptoms or in the form of different disease symptoms. For example, rheumatic pains travel from knee joint to elbow joint; or, rheumatism disappears and heart-symptoms follow,—as the result of some pain-killing remedy being applied to the affected spot; or a diarrhoea is suppressed and rheumatic symptoms come in, and so on. Where such a scene occurs, either by virtue of some unhomœopathic treatment or of itself,—in that case, it is called a *metastasis* and is really a *condition* of the system, which is responsible for such a thing. Abrotanum has such a condition owing to which, metastasis occurs. Two other remedies generally come to mind in this connection, viz, *Ledum* and *Kalmia*. Abrotanum is chilly and wants warmth, but *Ledum* is just opposite, because *Ledum* is relieved from cold. *Kalmia* has heart complications due to suppression of rheumatism, and if other symptoms agree, *Kalmia* may bring back the original rheumatic pains and relieve the heart.

Case Report.—A four years and a half aged son of Dr. K. C. Mitter, M. B., of Serampore, Bankura, came under my treatment in July, 1918. The child had all along been treated by the good father, but no permanent effect could be made, specially the gradual

emaciation inspite of good appetite and nourishing food, could not be put a stop to. The Doctor came to me with his wife and the only son for the latter's treatment. I recorded the following points.

The neck was found to have been thin and skinny,—emaciation had commenced lower down and had distinctly been spreading upwards. Ravenous appetite and proportionate wasting. No complaints regarding stool or urine, except that the fæces were bileless and muddy, but no offensive smell. Horribly chilly, and the child would resent washing even with tepid water. *Sulphur* failed, and *Psorin* was ruled out as there was no offensive smell and the *Psorin* mental picture was also absent. *Abrotanum* 1M. brought in much improvement, and the case was finished and perfect cure followed after 5m.

The father was so much moved that after the cure, he took up Homœopathic study. I know he has been practising Homœopathy and has also made a name.

Rheumatism,—*Abrotanum* has the metastatic Rheumatism from a suddenly checked diarrhœa. In every case, there is injury done to the patient if any symptom is scarced or suppressed with the help of anything not similar to the symptom-totality of the patient. In some patients, it is metastasis that results, in others graver injury may follow.

The *mental* characteristic of the child patient is ill-natured, sad and despondent, with cruelty, so that it has a readiness to kill or injury little animals.

Modality—It is a chilly remedy sometimes useful in pleurisy of children who are rather unable to

stand even, so much prostrated they are. They appear to suffer from a type of hectic fever. It is aggravated from dry cold or damp cold,

Any disease commencing in the lower regions and going upwards should call Abrotanum to mind.

ACETIC ACID.

Acetic acid acts in a good deep way, though it does not appear to be an anti-psoric. All acids are proverbially weak and prostrated. This acid is often indicated in diabetes and dropsy.

Modality—The patient wants cold, and cannot tolerate heat.

Characteristic conditions,—prostration, want of blood, loss of appetite, emaciation and intense thirst.

Remedies for comparison:—*Apis*, *Apocynum*, *Phos-ac*.

Diabetes,—There may be a confusion with *Acid Phos* only, but *Acid-Phos* has much appetite and less thirst,—*Acetic-ac*, just opposite, because it has no appetite but intense thirst; moreover *Acid-Phos* is chilly, whereas *Acetic-ac* wants cold.

Fever.—This remedy has a peculiarity of having *no thirst in fever* but intense burning thirst and for a large quantities of water, in dropsy, diabetes, etc.

Case Report:—Sj.....Roy of Nichitpore had been suffering since 1917, Aug, from dropsy, off and on. Kaviraji treatment was followed all along; and, first, because no lasting benefit had been found, secondly, salt and water were absolutely prohibited, which seemed

troublesome for the patient, he intended a change and came under my hands on 3rd April, 1918.

Symptoms and Conditions.—The patient was intensely hot-blooded and so, liked cold bath more than once a day, had an intense thirst, anæmia, &c. His genital organs were found to have been swollen to the point of bursting. No appetite. I did not stop water or salt, because I thought it a cruelty to the patient. One thing I have forgotten to mention that inspite of the fearful swelling of the parts, the patient would lie on the abdomen and would not lie or sleep on the back. It is, by the bye, a peculiarity of Acetic-ac. It was given in 6th, 30th and 200th by and by, as soon as the improvement from one potency wore off; and the patient was cured in three months.

Phos has a dropsy, and it has also an intense thirst; but *Phos* is actually chilly, though wanting cold in the head and stomach. But the main distinction lies in this that *Phos* has much appetite expressed by the patient as goneness in the stomach and *Phos* will lie invariably to the right.

* Under the indigenous system of treatment, namely Ayurvedic, salt and water are invariably restricted. One may ask,—Is it scientific at all in Homœopathy? No, we must follow the modalities of the *indicated remedy* and the desires and aversions of the *patient*. We must look to the individuality and should not make a *general* case for all the patients or work in accordance with the *names* of diseases. I have seen intolerable agony from the application of hot poultices and hot fomentations in a *Puls.* patient. I have seen really a sight of torture in a Dry

Pneumonia under such directions. It is senseless, rather harmful, to give such directions to our patients. *We treat patients and not diseases.*

ACONITE.

Mind,—*Anxiety, restlessness, fear of death, extreme nervous excitability, mental agony ; full of fears and forebodings ; fears the crowd and to cross the street ; restless tossing about in bed ; pains seem intolerable ; fears the immediate as well as the future :—these go to make up the mental picture of this remedy. Any disease of Aconite must be qualified with this mental make-up. If nothing more about this remedy is known, still the above mind picture, if present, will suffice for a correct prescription.*

Modality,—*Acon. modality is very important. Aggravation from dry cold air as in winter (Bell, Hep. Caust, Dulc, &c.). Bell aggravation from dry cold air leads to swelling of the throat glands, soreness on deglutition with throbbing pains ; Hep has also a similar condition associated with stitching pains or fish bone sensations ; both are ameliorated from warmth. Caust. aggravation from dry cold may bring in local paralysis. Dulc aggravation is more due to the sudden change from hot to cold. Aggravation from cold exposure during sweat is another peculiarity of Acon.*

Fever :—*Various types of fever, namely eruptive fevers, puerperal fevers, fevers from mental worry, dread, etc ; but the nature of the fever must be synochal, that is, never intermittent or remittent, but*

one continuous fever. In any of the above types, *Acon.* mental symptoms must be there. Fever is high, sometimes very high, but anxiety, restlessness and fear of death must be there. Dry heat continues, burning thirst for a large quantities of cold water, intense nervous restlessness, fear of death and inquietude not to be allayed.

Compare—*Bell, Bry, Gels.* Sometimes, *Acon.* and *Bell* are advised to be given in alternation. It is misleading. The pictures of *Acon* and *Bell* are widely different. *Acon* and *Bell* may have the exposure to dry cold air as the common cause of fever, but *Acon* has a restlessness of the above type, and *Bell* has no *Acon* mentals, but has a sleepy mood without ability to sleep; *Acon* has dry skin, *Bell* has sweats on the covered parts; the thirst symptom differs,—*Acon* has a burning thirst for a large quantity of water, whereas *Bell* wants water in sips only. *Acon* fever comes as a violent storm upsetting the physicals and the mentals of the patient with a good deal of violence but it goes off not to return again. *Bell* fever has a *suddenness* to come and a *suddenness* to go away. There is another thing, namely, though cold exposure may be the cause in one as in the other, but during the fever *Acon* patient wants cold, *Bell* patient wants warmth. These are sufficient distinctions. *Bry* and *Gels* fevers have no *suddenness*, nor the violence of *Acon* and *Bell*; the fevers in *Gels* and *Bry* develop very slowly. Both desire lying quiet, because movements aggravate, —*Bry* has positive aggravation of all the symptoms from movement and *Gels* does not want to move because he feels so heavy. In any case, *Acon*

mentals,—restlessness, fear, agony, etc. are not to be found in either of them.

* It will be seen from the above that Acon and Bell can never be recommended to be used in alternation. From the outward picture regarding high heat, they may look alike but further examination clearly shows that they are wide off.

It is practically needless to enumerate the various disease symptoms in which Acon may be required, because in any disease of whatever name and denomination, unless the above mentals are present, Acon can not be prescribed, and on the contrary, if they are present, you are perfectly justified in prescribing the remedy. Here as elsewhere, the name of the disease is not important but the symptoms are. Still one or two disease symptoms should be dealt with where the remedy may be required, which may be a great help for the beginners.

Dysentery ;—The same cause is there in almost all cases. The scene can not be described, it is so pitiable. The discharges, namely, blood and mucus, sometimes pure blood, are very scanty, but the frequent urgency and the violent tenesmus are simply intolerable. The Acon mentals must be there, otherwise it can do no good. Sometimes, a fever considerably high, complicates the case, and still Acon may be prescribed if the above mental group is present. *Merc Cor* may be needed after the use of the latter. In spite of the timely and intelligent use of Acon or *Merc Cor*, if the case continues without abatement, *Sulph* may be needed, which is a complementary to Acon. *Merc-Sol* may be needed in place of *Merc-Cor*, when the

violence of the case is much smaller than *Merc Cor* and the discharges contain fœcal parts instead of pure blood and mucus as in the other remedies.

Pregnancy,—Pregnant women sometimes see dreadful visions and sights of terror, after which there is every apprehension of immediate abortion which *Acon* may stop; *Opium* may be needed in these cases, where the terrible sight constantly floats up before the mind's eye. In many cases of pregnant women, they appear to have a prevision and say "I wo'n't survive this pregnancy, I must die before or after the delivery"; in such cases, *Acon* may cheer her up and may cure.

During *labor*, *Acon* may be needed where there are *Acon* mentals. The woman says, she is quite unable to stand the pains. Sometimes the case may look like *Chamo*, but though in both cases pains seem intolerable, the central feature in *Chamo* is extreme irritability, that in *Acon*, extreme fear.

After the delivery, the new-born babe may not have stool or urine for a long time. This in most cases is due to cold exposure during delivery. *Acon* 30th or 200th may avoid the trouble in a safe way.

An interesting **Case Report**—One summer I was at home, and a co-villager, then a fifth year student of the Medical College came up to me for "doing something" for his sister's protracted labor for the last 6 days, so that she may have delivery very shortly, as all the means to that effect, tried by him, failed. I went there with him and found a perfect picture of *Caulophyllum*, which in two doses of 30th succeeded

in bringing in a safe delivery. But there was another thing which caused the gentleman to again come to me. The child did not pass any stool or urine for the last 36 hours,—they all in the family were waiting and waiting, but nothing up till now. “The case may get fatal, I do not know what happened already, please do the needful ; mother says, “well, if you can not do any thing in these dangerous predicaments, medical education with so much cost seems good for nothing”. Acon 200, single dose, and the child had simultaneous stool and urine.

The period after the above delivery was absolutely uneventful.

Croup.—Is a very dangerous disease and may prove fatal in a single night. So the remedies generally indicated in this disease should be specially borne in mind, with the peculiarities of each. Acon croup has for its cause, the exposure to *dry cold* air, and a few hours after, the disease symptoms may appear. Suppose, the child was exposed to the dry cold air in the afternoon, it may show signs of its onset, after rising from sleep at about 9 or 10 P. M. with following symptoms,—*dry* cough, difficulty of breathing, high fever and *restlessness* ; under this circumstance, Acon in 200th potency should be given every 15 to 20 minutes, and gradually, at greater intervals, unless and until *the fever is off*, If, notwithstanding the timely use of Acon, the *dry* cough continues with a “sawing” respiration, *Spongia* comes in. In both Acon and *Spongia*, the cough is a dry cough—a point that should be remembered. Then, when *mucus* or humid sound appears and there is an aggra-

vation from cold and towards the dawn, *Hepar Sulph* may have to be given.

There is a misconception in many minds regarding the use of high potencies in acute diseases. The above advice for administering 200th potency every 15 or 20 minutes may look queer but the point is that wherever an immediate by fatal course of a disease is apprehended, the high potencies must have to be used and a dose may certainly be given *in proportion to the rapidity and fatality* of the disease at short intervals as the occasion will require. The thing is that you may use any potency according to the demand and circumstance, but as soon as there will be found an *impression* made on the system, you are always to stop,—and this is rule to which there is no exception. If after six such doses a relief commences, it should be supposed that only *one dose* of the remedy has been given ; or, if the good impression appears even after a single technical dose being given, this may be called *one dose* ; and if it appears after a series of such doses, in that case also the series of doses will be tantamount to only *one dose*. So that sometimes one dose is equal to one single technical dose, and sometimes, a number of such doses, but the real point is, not *how many times* the remedy has been administered but you are only to see whether the vital force has commenced action by showing some relief, because, then only it should be understood that *one dose* has been given.

Then, the unalterable rule should always be observed that as soon as there is an impression appearing on the patient's economy, "hands off", that is,

stop further repetition and no medicine should be given as long as the improvement continues. It is absolutely immaterial whether this improvement is obtained after a single time or after a number of times the remedy being given. Provided as above, in immediately dangerous cases even of acute nature, high potencies like 200th or 1000th or even higher may be so administered as the occasion may require.

Paralysis,—Sharp, dry cold may bring in paralysis. Acon certainly has it, if the following symptoms appear, namely, a benumbing sensation in the paralysed spot and coldness there; Acon mentals must also appear, viz, intense restlessness, and fear of death. *Rhus tox* has also paralysis but in *Rhus* the immediate cause is exposure to damp cold. If in Acon case, Acon cannot finish, *Causticum* may have to be given and at last *Sulphur* may complement. Acon and *Causticum* have only local paralyses that are confined to a particular portion or organ.

It is impossible to enumerate all the disease symptoms and disease conditions where Acon may be required. In any case, irrespective of the names of diseases, and provided the Acon mentals are there, any disease of acute nature, but of whatever name and denomination may call for it.

Relationship,—Though Sulphur is its grand complementary, yet *Bell* may sometimes come in after Acon. For instance, suppose, in a case of synochal fever, Acon was apparently well indicated and it has been given. The brunt of the fever is gone, and instead of intense restlessness of Acon,—sleepiness with

inability to sleep, startling up on entering into sleep, and instead of dry skin of Acon, sweating on covered parts, &c. appear, *Belladonna* may help. There are other remedies as well, that may come after Acon,— and the then symptoms and condition will decide as to which may come.

Suitability,—Acon can never be indicated in chronic conditions, except in any acute aggravation of a chronic disease ; and if Acon is indicated and used there, it will only remove the acute foaming and that is all, but it will not touch the deeper current of any chronic disease.

Potency,—Potencies, 3 to 200, and sometimes 1000 are used.

ACTÆA RACEMOSA OR CIMICIFUGA.

This remedy is peculiarly suitable for the female sex and so is generally used in most of their ailments.

Modality—Cold aggravates, either *dry cold* or *damp cold*,—any cold aggravates ; ameliorated by warmth, as also from open air. During head-pains, cold water application is much soothing. All symptoms are aggravated *just before* the menstrual period.

Mind.—Actæa mind is sad, very sad ; looks to the darker view of things ; she cannot be cheered up, because it is a settled conviction in her that the world is full of misery and so she keeps on moaning and drooping all the time. It is almost parallel to the mental condition of *Psorin* and *Puls*, Then again, just like *Ignatia*, there

is a changefulness that is *sudden*. This changeability of her nature is most important. One moment she is sad, saddest of the sad, absolutely "blue",—the next, she is full of cheers and merrymakings. *Crocus* also has it in a considerable degree, but *Crocus* differs in her black string-like bleeding *regarding* almost all her bloody discharges. *Psorin* must keep the head covered even during the hottest of weathers. *Puls* is highly hot-blooded and *Ignatia* has an inclination to constantly sighing. Further, *Ignatia* has really a history of long-concentrated grief which has exhausted her mentally and physically.

Chorea,—It is a disease in which the muscles shall keep on twitching, due to nervous excitement. There are lots of remedies having true chorea ; but Actæa has a type of it in which the muscles of the side lain on twitch, and if she changes the side, the twichings will also go to that side. In *Hyoscyamus*, the muscles of the whole body twitch, from head to foot.

Menses,—The menstrual symptoms are very important ; one thing to specially remember in this connection, is that, *more the flow, greater the pains*. There are good many remedies in which the pains decrease or cease on the flow appearing or increasing, as *Lachesis*, *Zinc*, &c, but Actæa is peculiar in that. Menses irregular, full of pains and the pains increase in proportion as the flow increases.

There are many disease-symptoms of the females in which Actea is indicated, and it will be seen that the uterine disorders must be there. It has a peculiar

neuralgic pain in the head, around the eyes, and the patient feels that the crown of her head would fly off. There are felt stitching pains ϕ round the eyes, and the pains direct upwards. *Spigelia* has a similar type of pains, but in *Spigelia* the pains commence in the morning and aggravate with the sun, going up to maximum at noon, and going off in the evening. Both *Actæa* and *Spigelia* patients feel that the head is getting larger, but where there is disorder in the uterine sphere, *Actæa* is to be thought of.

In **abortion** or **labor**,—*Actæa* has a pain from one side of the abdomen to another. *Lycopodium* has it from right to left, and *Ipecac* has it from left to right, associated with an awful nausea. *Actæa* labor is most painful, the patient trembles and even faints.

You cannot possibly confuse *Actæa* with *puls*, as the former is a chilly remedy and the latter intensely hoted-blood. *Caulophyllum* pains are intermittent and so come and go: moreover, in *Actæa*, more the flow, greater the pain, but *Caulophyllum* has no such peculiarity. *Caulophyllum* has a general tendency to abort, *Actæa* has it in the third month.

In **spinal irritation** amongst the females, *Actæa* is indicated where the whole spine is sensitive and so cannot tobrate pressure there and therefore patients cannot press their back when sitting on the chair. *Natrum mur* has just opposite modality, as pressere is rather relieving and *Natrum* patients desire lying over the back, so that the painful spine may be relieved.

Potency,—6, 30, 200, are always used.

ÆSCULUS.

This remedy is not much used, because it has only a limited sphere of action. It has a few important symptoms, viz.—

1. A sense of fulness or weight, a sense of congestion,—in abdomen, in the intestines, stomach, heart, head, &c.

2. In the anus or rectum, a *feeling,—of heat and dryness, and as if full of small sticks* located there ; *knife-like* pains, *shooting* pains in the region of the rectum ; blind piles, rarely bleeding. Moreover, apart from dryness and heat, rectum feels *sore, burning and itching*. No bleeding in the hæmorrhoids, but much *soreness and itching*. Pains in the rectum for a long time after evacuation. *Nitric acid* has the similar characteristic, but it is deeper-acting, being a syphilitic remedy ; moreover, Nitric acid has a pungent urine like that of a horse.

3. A severe type of lumbo-sacral back-ache,—a severe dull pain in the lumbo-sacral articulation,—more or less constant. Back “gives out”, and this is an associated symptom,—with uterine prolapsus, with constipation during pregnancy and with leucorrhœa, of this remedy. This backache compels the patient to stand still or sit down during walking.

It appears that the severe back-ache attended with constipation and rectal symptoms is the main characteristic of this remedy. It should be compared with Sulph, Aloe, Collinsonia, Nux vomica, and Muriatic acid.

Sulphur has back pains, worse during standing position. *Nux* has it from sexual weakness; the patient must sit up to *turn* over in bed. *Aloe* has it alternating with headache, with aggravation after insufficient stools; a feeling of heat in the anus, relieved by cold water. *Collinsonia* has also alternate constipation and diarrhœa along with constant back-ache. *Muriatic acid*,—intensely debilitated; anus and rectum intensely sore, sensitive and painful to touch. Mouth full of ulcers.

Modalities :—Aggravation from movement and cold air; back-ache aggravates from walking and bending. Patient himself wants cold and cold air.

Back-ache,—associated with constipation; aggravated when rising from a sitting posture. The patient cannot rise up at once; further, aggravation when walking and on bending. During a walk the patient feels as if the back will break down.

Hæmorrhoids:—From studying the rectal symptoms it would appear that it is a remedy for hæmorrhoids, and so it is. Frequent urgency to stools but no evacuation is common to this remedy and *Nux vomica*. Where back-ache predominates, it is *Æsculus*, but where chilliness predominates, it is *Nux vomica*.

It should be noted that sometimes the modalities of the whole patient differ with those of his local symptoms. For example, *Æsculus* patient wants cold and cold air but his local symptoms are aggravated thereby. *Puls.*, *Sulph.*, &c have also a similar nature.

Case Report :—In July 1918, when we were taking a walk towards evening along the embankment of the

Shaheb Bandh in Purulia, we noticed a gentleman walking over there but frequently sitting down after walking a few steps each time. When asked the reason for it, he said,—“Dear sir, I have an obstinate type of bleeding piles attended with a severe backache which fearfully aggravates during walking. It appears as if my back would break and so I have a frequent inclination for sitting down. These two things are my life companions. But what cannot be cured must have to be tolerated,—they say that piles have no cure. Further, I am a poor clerk and cannot pay for any costly treatment.” The gentleman was given assurance about the sure chance of cure as well as about a very small expense. He came to my dispensary next morning and got Æsculus 200th to begin with. He was cured by and by with the help of potencies,—200th and 1000th.

I think that the peculiar back-ache is the most characteristic feature of the remedy.

ÆTHUSA.

Æthusa is a remedy specially useful in the case of children, and so is a necessary domestic medicine. It is full of spasms and convulsions, mostly in children, during dentition and in hot weather. It is specially suited for those children *who cannot bear milk*. Weakness, vomiting, anxiety, pain, and *violence* are the features of this remedy. The child is so much prostrated that it is unable to hold up its head. Idiotic look and confused condition. *Somnolence* is also a characteristic feature of this remedy.

Modality ;—Aggravation from food, drink, vomiting and spasm.

Characteristics,—*Child cannot tolerate milk* in any form,—must vomit in curds, big or small, immediately after it is taken ; then the child gets drowsy and falls into sleep. It rises up again to nurse and the same scene is repeated. After vomiting, intense prostration comes in, and the child falls asleep, out of sheer exhaustion. Vomiting,—*Violent and sudden. Total absence of thirst.*

Spasms and Convulsions,—Epileptic spasms, red face, thumbs clenched, eyes turned downwards, pupils dilated and fixed, with foaming at the mouth, and jaws locked.

These symptoms are found to appear during dentition and in hot summer weather.

Comparison,—The following remedies are to be compared ;—viz., Ipec, Ant. tart, Ant. crud., Calc-carb, Arsenic and Psorinum.

During the work of comparison, the *picture* of *Æthusa* must have to be clearly retained in mind. *Æthusa* child has a morbid desire for food, and sucks breast or drinks milk, but vomits almost immediately, and then, out of sheer exhaustion drops down into sleep ; after some time, it wakes, as if simply to nurse again, and then again vomits and sleeps down ; this is often repeated, unless cured with the remedy.

The *Æthusa* child is drowsy, *Ipec* is never so, rather a bit restless ; moreover it has no appetite. *Ipec.* has more nausea than vomiting, at least,—never any vomiting of curds. *Ipec.* has cramps as well,

though not so prominently as in Æthusa. Both are characteristically thirstless.

Ant. tart is also thirstless, has much vomiting and drowsiness too, but it has hardly any cramps. *Ant. tart* has white coated tongue, want of appetite and has a vomiting which is relieved by lying to the right. Moreover, during the vomiting of *Ant. tart*, there is a cold sweat on the forehead (*Carbo veg*, *Veratrum album*). *Ant. tart.* has damp aggravation, Æthusa has summer.

Ant. crud.,—has a thick milky white coating on the tongue and vomiting too. But the mood is intensely sad and irritable, so much so that the child will not let you feel its pulse,—it will resent a even look at it. Aversion to and aggravation from cold bath (*Sulph*).

Calc. carb. has like Æthusa, vomiting of curds, but has no morbid appetite like it. The vomited curds in *Calc-c.* smell sour, in Æthusa they are rather offensive (*Psorin*). There is an absolute intolerance of milk in both the remedies.

Arsenicum alb.,—has offensive smell in vomit and stool which are rather scanty in quantity ; want of appetite, and a thirst for a small quantity of water each time, with an intolerance of it, shewn by almost immediate vomiting. Far from drowsiness of Æthusa, it has an intense restlessness and a fear of death, with inquietude not to be allayed.

Psorin,—May come in as a complementary to Æthusa when there is much offensiveness in discharge and Æthusa cannot complete the cure.

Case Report,—It was in 1917, when I was in Purulia, that a grandchild of the most renowned member of the local Bar,—Sj. L. K. Mitra, M. A. B. L., fell seriously

ill. It was a child of 10 days only that was having severe fits of convulsion along with fever that was running 103° to $103^{\circ}.6$ all the time. The offensive curds in the vomit, opisthotonoid type of spasms, difficulty of breathing,—so much so that child would suffocate to death, &c, pointed my attention to *Æthusa*, which was given in 200th. in water—a few drops after the severity of convulsion diminished each time. In course of two hours, the remedy worked, convulsions ceased, and the child had a good sweet sleep. No other remedy was required and the child fully recovered the next day.

The children coming off from sycotic parents have a special tendency to have convulsions and cramps, especially during their dentition and many of them may have *Æthusa* symptoms.

The remedy does not work deep enough,, and so *Sulph* or *Psorin* may have to be given as a necessary complement for a perfect cure. Of course, the symptom-totality will decide which of those two, or if any other, to be selected.

Potency,—30th and 200th are the potencies that are generally used.

AGARICUS MUSCARIUS.

Agaricus has a special action upon the nervous system of the human economy, specially the spinal nerves. Jerking, twitching, trembling and itching are strong indications of the remedy. There is more excitement than congestion in the cerebral spheres; a *sensation as if pierced by needles of ice* is a feature,

Its symptoms appear diagonally, as left arm and right leg. Its pains are generally accompanied by sensation of coldness, numbness and tingling.

Modality,—*Aggravation* after eating, coition, exposure to *cold air and cold winds*, before thunder storms. *Amelioration*, during sleep.

Group of symptoms,—1. Muscles of the body twitch, specially of the eye-lids; they twitch and dance involuntarily; dancing, twitching, trembling of the muscles with a sensation of crawling as of ants.

2. I have already told you that the remedy has special action upon the spinal centres; of course, it also affects the cerebral sphere, but not so much as the spinal nerves. There is a feeling within the spine as of ants crawling there, and a pain with soreness in the spine itself; the patient can not bend over to the front without much discomfort, on account of the pain and soreness in the spinal column; moreover, there is exquisite soreness and sensitiveness in the small of the back. The patient feels the soreness and pains especially, during sitting, as in *Zincum*.

3. This remedy has *itching, burning*, and redness, in different portions of the body, viz. nose, ears, palms and soles,—associated with swelling and heat; they look like chilblains, “as if frost-beaten”. Aggravation from cold and amelioration from heat.

Chorea.—It is one of the remedies in chorea. The muscles twitch and throb and dance, so much so that the patient gets nervous and restless. In connection with chorea, you are to remember its twitching in the eyelids and soreness and pains in the spine, A few

remedies are there which should be compared with Agaricus, viz,—Mygale, Actea racemosa, Tarentula, his, Hyoscyamus, Stramo, and Zinc.

In *Mygale*,—which is a spider poison, the chorea symptoms predominate in the *right* side. The facial muscles twitch, and the mouth and the eyes open and shut in rapid succession; the right hand is thrown off, as it were, when it is attempted to be raised to the mouth; words are also jerked out when speaking; grating of teeth at night, violent erection of the penis, &c. *Actea* chorea relates more to the *left* side of the body, and is found in females in connection with their uterine disorders. *Tarentula* is also a spider medicine,—has twitchings mostly in the right hand and right leg; it has a peculiarity in that though walking aggravates the chorea symptoms, yet the patient cannot do without walking. Soft rubbing ameliorates the twitchings. The whole patient is soothed with *rythmical* music and dance. *Hyoscyamus* has twitching in all the muscles of the body, specially of the fingers and the toes, and has brain symptoms associated with chorea; moreover, it has a complete insomnia or sleeplessness. *Stramo* has violent type of brain disorder with chorea; the patient suddenly raises his head from the pillow and then puts it down again. *Zinc* has restlessness of the legs even during sleep, associated with chorea.

Regarding *spinal pains and soreness*, you may have to compare with *Zinc* and *Cobalt*. *Nux-vomica* may also come in. Agaricus has formication and creeping sensation inside the spine with twitching of the eye-lids and eye-balls, as given before. It has

also the sexual desire much exalted with relaxed penis and impotence. *Zincum meta* has pains and soreness in the spine, specially towards the lower part, in the small of the back, with weakness of the legs and a desire to *constantly move them, even during sleep*. The spine symptoms aggravate while sitting,—a symptom also found in *Agaricus*, *Cobalt as Zinc*; all the three remedies and *Nux-vomica* are intensely sensitive to cold, only *Agaricus* is sensitive to sun-rays as well. *Nux* has a history of much excitement and abuse, and has still a great sexual desire, with its peculiar constipation; *Nux* has a back-ache due to which it must sit up to turn over in bed. *Nux* and *Zinc* are inimical. Then, *Agaricus*, *Nux-vomica* and *Cobalt* have aggravation of all symptoms from emissions,—voluntary or involuntary, but *Zinc* has the peculiarity of having amelioration therefrom. *Nux* and *Cobalt* have the spine symptoms and spine irritation, as a result of excess.

Typhoid Condition,—*Agaricus* has also its use during a typical Typhoid fever or a fever under Typhoid condition, where in course of the fever, the patient gets spine irritation indicated by his repeated attempts to get out of bed, and has ravings too. I cannot refrain from citing a peculiar case from my case diary of 1916.

Case-Report,—Sj. S. C. Dutt, a clerk in the Subordinate Judge's Court, Purulia, was attacked with a bad type of Cholera, and was relieved of the severe cramps, frequent evacuations of rice-water stools, &c., by the timely administration of *Cuprum meta*. For 5 or 6 hours he was apparently going

towards recovery, but as a matter of fact, he was slowly sinking and was found to develop typhoid symptoms,—viz, muttering delirium, reddened eyes and low fever temperature. The turbulent symptoms of constantly sitting up in bed and attempting to escape, pointed my attention to *Agaricus*; it was given in 200th potency in graduated doses, repeated every 15 minutes. After three doses being given, the patient slept a quiet sleep for full two hours and a half, after which the recovery was uneventful.

In this condition, three remedies ought to be brought in for comparison; viz, *Stramo*, *Agaricus* and *Tarentula. his.* *Stramo* has no specific attempt to leave the bed but has a raving delirium. Of course *Stramo* sometimes raises the head from the pillow but at a word he puts it down again and has hardly any symptom indicative of spinal irritation. *Tarentula-his* has nervous restlessness, even developed chorea, but it has a characteristic amelioration, viz,—from rythmical dance and music,—a point absent in the other two.

Agaricus, *Tarentula* and *Zinc* are to be remembered where imbecility is apprehended after a severe and protracted acute illness, involving brain symptoms.

AILANTHUS.

It is a remedy not of much wide range except under a few conditions in course of some acute diseases, viz, measles, small-pox or typhoid fever, in which diphtheria and sore throat may come in as complications. The following remedies, viz *Arum-triphyllum*, *Rhus tox*, *Arsenicum albnm*, *Baptisia*, *Ammon Carb* and *Lachesis* are to be compared.

The modality of this remedy is not much pronounced or characteristic.

The **picture** of this remedy is not at all difficult to make. The characteristic points are practically only two, viz. (1) The discharges are profuse, offensive, *highly excoriating* and mixed with blood, and (2) Drowsy or rather comatose condition of the brain. It has produced a severe type of swelling and ulceration in the throat and in the cavity of the mouth, for which the patient is almost unable to swallow. Diphtheria is easily developed, attended with spurting of drinks through the nostrils. All this may be due to suppression or repercussion of some eruptions like measles, small-pox etc. or may appear idiopathically. The discharges are *highly excoriating* and the patient lies down *comatose* apparently with a death-ward tendency. This type of cases generally ends fatally, unless readily relieved by Ailanthus or any of the kindred remedies that may be homœopathically indicated.

Now, let us compare,—

Arum Triphyllum :—It has almost a similar picture,—the same diphtheric condition, extreme sensitiveness in the throat, inability to swallow, excoriating discharge, &c, &c, but the main difference lies in this that it has a propensity to *pick at and bore into the nostrils*, though the act is highly painful ; moreover, it is *turbulently restless*, and never drowsy or comatose like Ailanthus.

Rhus tox,—It has a local swelling with soreness in the neighbouring glands, but no discharge is there from the throat, not to speak of its being of excoriating and offensive nature. Moreover, intense *restlessness*

governs the case of Rhus tox, and coma predominates in that of Ailanthus.

Baptisia,—In this remedy, there is a mixture of coma and restlessness, but the main point is the *horribly offensive* or *putrid smell* emitting from the throat and discharges, as the decomposition is a predominating feature.

Ars alb,—It is complementary to Rhus tox and generally comes after it ; it has a restlessness, fear of death and mental inquietude not to be allayed. Discharges are there and offensive too, but they are scanty, as dryness of the parts is more characteristic. Moreover, there is a thirst for a small quantity of water sipped each time, because water is not tolerated. In *Ars*, the *general condition* is more to be taken into consideration than the local symptoms.

Ammon carb,—has all the local symptoms and conditions, except perhaps the offensive smell. But the main distinction lies in this, that the patient suffers intolerably from the *stuffing of the nose*, specially during night. It has aggravation during and after sleep, as well as towards the latter part of the night. Intensely chilly, and cold bath aggravates. There is *somnolence* as well.

Lachesis—the disease symptoms either keep to the left or extend from left to right ; aggravation on entering into sleep and after it, is most prominent ; moreover, the patient feels more pain during empty swallowing, but less or no pains when swallowing food-stuffs. He feels as if something is lodged in the left of the throat inside, *Lachesis* and *Ammon carb*

are *inimical*, and so should not be used one after the other.

Apis,—It has also somnolence or drowsiness, but is an exceptionally *hot* patient and relieved from cold and cold bath ; the patient is *characteristically dry*, yet has *no thirst*. Local tumefaction or swelling is the the nature of the remedy. *Animal* remedies do not seem to follow each other well. Fever paroxysm comes or it aggravates at 3 P.M. or thereabouts.

Bell,—it should have come first for comparison, because, as a matter of fact, it is indicated, if at all, earlier. No discharge is there, simply a congested condition is found locally. Sleepy mood but the patient cannot sleep and startles up just on closing the eyes. The other conditions, viz, high fever, throbbing pains with soreness, relief of local condition by warmth and warm drinks, sweat on covered parts, &c., are or may also be there. Most cases are *aborted*, if Bell is indicated at the very outset, and no ultimate is allowed to come in. It is full of acute congestion, and is never weak and exhausted like Ailanthus.

In order to properly understand the use of the remedy, one or two cases are cited below.

Report of Case No. 1.—A child of two years, a grandson of Sj. Pulin Behari Dutta (then Sheristadar in the Purulia Subordinate Judge's Court) had an attack of high fever, ranging from $100^{\circ}.5$ to 105° , lying comatose for 3 days. First he was placed under an Asst. Surgeon who treated, and declared the fever to have been of zymotic type ; however, the fever went on increasing and showed no sign of abatement, There was a big swelling in the outer throat all

round. On the 6th day, I was called in, and the Allopathic physician was also there with me and he gave the family a note of alarm. The case was apparently growing from bad to worse. I found the child comatose and lying still though with high fever of 105°. With no guiding symptoms, I thought of *Bell* which was given in 200th potency, expecting that the remedy might abort the ultimate that was rather impending in the throat. The fever was a bit lowered down and that was all, but it appeared that it could not touch the patient. The condition on the following day was as follows,—the fever heat 104°6, hurried breathing, fulness, rather tympany, in the abdomen, drowsiness deeper than formerly. I had a presentiment of the child's having some sort of eruption which could not come out owing to psoric taint. On that supposition, I gave *Sulph* 200 and on the next day, a sprinkling of eruptions like so-called German measles appeared over the upper portions of the body, but to our astonishment, we found that bloody saliva and watery mucus were coming out of the mouth and nose, which appeared to be highly excoriating, inasmuch the spots over which they flowed were marked white and in a few places, ulcerated also, with suffused eyes and face; on all these, I thought of *Ailanthus*, and instructed a dose of 30th every 3 hours,—a few doses of which at once showed signs of improvement,—the fever came down by and by to normal on the 3rd day after the administration of *Ailanthus*; I do not remember if I had to use any dose of 200th, because it was an acute case and so there appears no record in my diary. But in any

case, it was only Ailanthus that cured the child completely.

The family asked me about the *name* of the malady but I could not give any satisfaction in that respect for want of good pathological name, but my friend, the worthy Allopath, came to my rescue and let them know that it was a terrible case of Scarlet fever,—a disease, cent per cent, fatal under the Old School treatment, and they were much satisfied and thankful to us.

Report of Case No. 2.—Sj. Kedar Nath Ray, aged 18 or 19 years, of Satbari (Bankura) had suffered from an attack of Typical Typhoid fever, and had been kept under Allopathic treatment for 22 days. At the beginning of the 4th week, the patient showed signs of developing Diptheria and the case was declared fatal by the gentleman and so I was called in. Fever varying from 100° to $103^{\circ}6$, with nightly aggravation,—horribly offensive mucus, and of a colour of white cement, for 5 to 7 times a day, passed involuntarily, with violent nausea and absence of thirst. The patient was not speaking for the last 4 days, brain completely upset and the unfortunate patient was delirious; moreover, since the 20th day of the fever, there was a continual flow of bloody saliva and mucus from the mouth and nose, so much so that 3 to 4 napkins could not sufficiently soak them up. Fully unconscious, the patient had apparently been feeling intense pain on deglutition and so nursing was almost impossible. On this totality of clear cut symptoms, I prescribed Ailanthus and gave in 200th, daily 2 doses. Only a couple of days after the

administration of *Ailanthus*, the child called up his dear mother with "mamma", and the whole family was so much gratified that they wept aloud and with the fulness of their heart prayed to God for my welfare and unmixed success in my line. It was the most terrible case of its kind I ever treated and it is Homœopathy only that can expect cure under such a fatal predicament. I think, I had to use *Arsenicum Alb*, 30, a few doses for completing the cure in an all round way.

Potency,—6, 30, 200 are generally used.

ALLIUM CEPA.

It is our common *onion*. Those that peel an onion must feel a pungent sensation in the nose and the face, from which they can have an idea of its action on the mucous membranes of the nose and of the eyes. This remedy has no depth of action.

Coryza,—The prominent action of *Cepa* is to bring in *coryza*, the secretions being profuse and watery, so that the patient has to constantly rub over and wipe off the nose. But the most peculiar point in this connection is that the nasal secretion is *extremely acrid and excoriating*, whereas the lachrymal is *bland*. This should be remembered. Suppose, a man has just been attacked with an acute coryza,—with a profuse watery secretion from the eyes and the nostrils, frequent sneezings and a feverish condition of the system; and if you mark that there is *no burning* in the eyes, because the lachrymal flow, though profuse, is *bland*, you may abort the case with a single dose of *Cepa 200*; I do so in numerous cases and the people wonder at the

suddenness of the stoppage of so much profuse and constant secretions. In case the patient is badly *miasmatic*, the cold may travel down to the chest, and he may have rather a trail of the disease and may get cough, dry or humid. Then, a dose of *Phosphorus*, which is, by the bye, complementary to *Cepa*, will finish cure.

Modality.—The patient himself wants open air and cold, has aggravation in the evening and in warm room. Now, to compare—*Euphrasia*, *Pulsatilla*, *Phosphorus*, and *Arsenicum alb.*

Euphrasia,—has just the *opposite*, *re.* the condition of the secretions, excoriating if they are from the *eyes* and bland from *nostrils*. Further, it has the characteristic aggravation after exposure to south wind, though quite similar to *Cepa*, in all other respects.

*Treatment of *acute cold and coryza* is rather difficult for a beginner, and so I intend to give a fair start. Suppose, a man has just been exposed to cold, and he knows from his previous experience that he must have *coryza*, but, as a matter of fact, has not yet got it; in other words, he is still *cold* and there is as yet no *reaction*; in that case, *Camphor* is the proper remedy in order to avoid or ward off the cold and *coryza* that is rather ahead or threatening. But in case, the re-action has already commenced, the man is no longer cold, but is rather *feeling hot*, with a sort of burning in the nostrils, dulness of the whole system with a feeling of feverishness, then, you must know that *Camphor* stage has passed, but yet you can *abort* the whole trouble with *Aconite 200*. Thus, if timely

administered, your Camphor and Acon. can *abort* a common cold, cent per cent, unless the patient is miasmatic, in which case, *Sulph* or *Psorin* or *Tuberculinum*, &c., may have to be given as a complement according to the individuality of the case.

Now, suppose the cold and coryza is already on, and you had not had the time and opportunity to ward it off with Camphor or Acon, still you can *shorten* the course of the coryza, with the help of *Nux vomica*, *Merc-sol.* *Cepa*, *Euphrasia* and a few others. A special mention should be made of *Arsenicum alb*, and *Pulsatilla*, as many are under an erroneous impression that these two remedies are always indicated much late and only when the case turns chronic. Of course, they are indicated so, but there is a stage when common cold and coryza is acute and still the two remedies may be required. There is still another remedy, namely, *Ant. tart*, which is also required in the very first stage as above and also late in the course of the disease, when there is much accumulation of mucus in the chest and the lungs seem powerless to throw it off. Thus these three remedies may be required in the beginning in order to put a stop to the further progress of the disease, as well as late, very late, in order to *cure* at that stage, that is, neither to abort nor to shorten the course. The first is a *dry* stage and the later is a stage of *ultimate*. The symptomatic indications of three remedies must be remembered with reference to each of the stages, dry and humid, which are given :—

Ars,—*chilliness*, the patient wants warm covering and warm room ; aggravation in the open and cold

air, thirst *with aversion to drink*, loss of appetite, nausea and *restless* mood, full of *fears*; nostrils, dry and burning, coryza not much,—but if any, it is thin and excoriating.

Puls,—A sense of burning all over, very small coryza, rather dryness of the nostrils; *want of thirst* with *dryness* of the mouth and tongue; *cold and open air is grateful*, inability to remain in warm room or covered.

Ant-tart,—dry wheezing respiration, absence of thirst, white-coated tongue, nausea which is relieved by lying to the right, *an irresistible inclination to sleep*, flapping of the *alæ nasi*, clammy sweat, &c. In the later stage, when it is indicated, the chest appears full of mucus, and when the patient coughs, it seems as if a cup-ful would be expectorated, but nothing comes up. Ant-tart has aggravation from damp cold, warm room, and lying down, except to the right. Cold open air, upright position and expectoration ameliorate. The main characteristics persist in both the stages.

The other two remedies, viz *Ars* and *Puls*, when indicated in the later stage, also maintain the same generals and particulars, save and except the humidity, though *Puls* has *thick* and *bland* mucus, whereas *Ars* has always *thin* and *excoriating*.

Merc-sol and *Nux vomica* are not very easy to distinguish in coryza, because both have it from exposure to cold, and the following points ought to be remembered. You know *Cepa* coryza is worse in the warm room, and so may be compared with *Nux Vomica* which has much stuffing of the nose at night and in the open air but a free and fluent discharge during the day and

in a warm room, though the Nux patient is chilly, and so averse to cold.

Though both Nux and Merc have the coryza from exposure to *dry* cold, yet Merc is sensitive to and disturbed by both hot and cold, and he likes a *medium* temperature, and his coryza is specially provoked by *damp* chilly weather and the *damp* cool evening air. Nux has always a *chilly* feeling, Merc has a *hot* feeling, during the coryza ; Merc is also worse at night by the heat of the bed and has profuse sweat but it aggravates Merc and ameliorates Nux. Nux wants covering and warmth unlike Merc. Lastly, Merc has salivation and inability to lie to the right.

But, be it stated that these remedies or a few others of this group, are only of *acute* nature and cannot meet the cases where there is a *susceptibility* to cold and coryza, and that *susceptibility* is wanted to be cured. A different group of deeper remedies ought to be compared and one of them to be selected in accordance with the constitutional totality of the patient. Those remedies are.—*Sulph, Hep. sulph, Calc. carb, Tuberculinum, &c.*

Now, after this long digression, though a useful one, let us come to the remedy under review, viz Cepa.

Otalgia,—Cepa may often be needed as a remedy for the pains in the ears, if they are associated with coryza. People generally give *Puls* in these cases, and they succeed only when the symptoms indicate namely, tearfulness and hot feeling of the patient, worse at night, in the warm room, better in open air and during a slow motion. *Chamomilla* also has a

similar condition, but its temper is awfully sensitive, impatient and snappish ; pains aggravated by heat, better from being carried ; the child is frantic with the pains. Oversensitive to open air and great aversion to wind during the pains. *Bell* may also be indicated.—if the pains appear in terrific shocks, coming in *suddenly* and going off *suddenly*. The child is sleepy but cannot sleep and startles up on entering into it. If the ear-symptoms are associated with nasal coryza, *Cepa* may be required, if other symptoms are there.

In **cough**, *Cepa* may be indicated by the following symptoms, viz, acute coryza of the nose with hoarseness and the patient wanting to suppress the fits of cough by clutching at the throat on account of soreness inside the throat, though he cannot suppress it for the itching and crawling there. *Phos* comes in after *Cepa*, if the latter cannot finish. *Phos* cough is also aggravated by cold and cold air, warm room and in the evening, as *Cepa*.

Potency,—I do not recommend this medicine lower than 30th, preferably 200th.

ALOE SOCOTRINA.

This remedy, though not included by the Master within his Antipsoric group, yet on account of its depth of action, it may be taken as an anti-psoric. It is allied to Sulphur and may fairly be used before or after Sulphur, if symptoms demand.

Modality,—*Aggravation*,—from early dawn, (say. 5 A.M.) up to 9 A.M., during hot days and hot

season, after eating and drinking, when standing or walking. *Amelioration*,—from cold, cold water, cold weather and discharge of stool or flatus.

Compare,—*Sulph, Nux vom., and Podo.*

Diarrhoea,—The central point where Aloe seems to act is the rectum, where it brings in a feeling of *insecurity*; in other words, the patient must have to put his mind or attention over the rectum, or else the stool will pass off involuntarily. The picture of Aloe diarrhoea must be clearly kept in mind. The abdomen feels heavy and full, and as soon as there is an urgency to stool, he has to hurry up, keeping his close attention on the rectum unless and until he can ease himself in the closet; the moment he takes away his attention from there, the stool will escape. The patient cannot rely on his rectum, so weak and unsafe it is. This point is to be made a bit clearer. There are muscles in the region of the rectum and anus, called *sphincters ani*, which, during healthy condition of man, do not allow the feces to escape unless he wishes to evacuate. Those sphincters are almost paralysed in Aloe, so that they cannot properly function, with the result that the patient cannot retain the stool, and it passes involuntarily as soon as the urgency comes. Little boys sometimes are found to pass even healthy stools involuntarily, and may not be able even to notice that they have done so. If they are diarrhoic, they pass every now and then a small quantity of feces in that way; even when they pass urine, the stool is found to slip down unnoticed. Aloe can cure them under such circumstances,

You will find another type of diarrhoea in Aloe. Patient has perhaps finished evacuation in a healthy way of his morning stool which also might have been quite healthy. After half an hour or so, he will commence passing hot winds every few minutes and then have an urgency for a liquid or semi-solid stool, and so must hurry up to the closet at once, otherwise the stool will escape. So long he does not place himself in a position to evacuate it, he must have to keep his mind over the rectum so that the stool may not pass involuntarily. Many children when passing winds and really intending to pass winds, involuntarily pass the feces. Aloe will set them right.

Dysentery,—Aloe has also dysenteric stools, and the peculiarity of Aloe in this connection is that the patient passes a mass of pure mucus as stools, aggravated by eating and drinking. Another peculiarity of Aloe is that a loud gurgling sound is felt in the abdomen when there are *mucous* stools but not when there are *fecal* stools. Before the urgency to stools, there is a griping in the abdomen in Aloe just as in *Nux vomica*,—the difference being that *Nux* is chilly and Aloe is hot ; moreover, Aloe has a hunger, along with the intestinal disorder, *Nux* has not.

Bleeding Piles,—Hæmorrhoids protrude like a bunch of grapes,—greenish in colour, with *itching*, *soreness* and *burning*, associated with back pains. The burning is relieved by cold water. The patient cannot sleep owing to itching in the anus. *Æsculus* has also back pains along with piles, but in *Æsculus* there is a

feeling of small sticks being lodged in the rectum, but Aloe has no such feeling.

Aloe is related to *Sulphur* having many symptoms common in them, viz, the sense of fulness in the abdomen, early morning aggravation, burning &c, but Aloe wants bath, Sulph does not.

Headache,—Frontal head pains, aggravated during hot days and in warmth, and relieved by cold, cold air and cold washing. The head pains are generally *associated* or *alternated* with constipation. The following case is in point.

Case Report,—Sreemati.....Debi,—aged 35 years, mother of two daughters and one son. The last delivery she had in her 27th year and no pregnancy since then. She had all along been suffering from bleeding piles and head-pains. Her father and mother both had bleeding piles and so the physicians, called in for her treatment, declared that there was hardly any cure for her. She came under my treatment in January, 1920. I recorded the following condition and symptoms.

The patient was dull, not at all inclined to work and had all along been suffering from an inveterate constipation associated with pains in the small of the back and frequent headaches. The headaches were most painful but the back pains did not give her so much trouble. Piles frequently appeared specially in summer and in the rains,—with aching, soreness, and burning in the anus. A troublesome nausea was all along an accompaniment with the constipation she had had from her babyhood. She had no urgency to stools except at two or three days

intervals. Sweat profuse and offensive. She would enjoy bath,—a free and cold water bath. At first I used *Sepia* 30th and 200th but to no effect. *Natrum mur.* was next thought of and given as a complementary, with no appreciable benefit. After much study and thought I fixed upon *Aloe* and a dose of 200th potency appeared to produce an impression. After the benefit from 200th wore off, 1000th potency of *Aloe* was administered towards the end of April. She was almost cured and most probably towards the end of June, another single dose of *Aloe* C. M. was given which completed the cure. (I reproduce this case from my memory and so exact dates of administering the doses could not be given).

Liver,—Though *Aloe* is not a very noted remedy for liver disorders, yet I know, if these symptoms are present, it can do wonderful work, viz, a sense of fulness or heaviness in the lower abdomen, a subdued form of tenderness in the liver region, constipation, external heat of the skin without rise of temperature, a longing for cold, cold bath and cold open air, burning all over and discomfort in a warm room with positive aggravation during hot days. *Aloe* has intense burning in the palms and soles and wants cool places to keep them, just like *Sulphur*. *Aloe* longs for bath, *Sulphur* is averse to it.

Comparison,—*Podo* and *Sulphur*,—Burning heat all over, specially in the palms and soles, for which the patient wants to keep them out of bed in cool places, 'driving out of bed urgency' to stool and aggravation in the early morning, are common to *Aloe* and *Sulphur*. The distinction lies in this that

Sulphur patient is ugly and always avoids bath and wants to remain ugly. *Aloe* invites cold bath and is never ugly like *Sulphur*. It is sometimes difficult to distinguish *Aloe* from *Podo*, because both the remedies have the sense of heaviness in the abdomen, exhaustion after evacuation, aggravation in the early morning, etc, but if you remember that *Aloe* has a peculiar hunger along with diarrhœa, whereas *Podo* has repletion and a nausea too; as also that *Podo* stools are highly offensive and profuse in quantity, you may not mistake in selection. Moreover, the 'driving out of bed urgency' is not so much characteristic in *Podo* as in *Sulphur* and *Aloe*.

Though *Natrum Sulph* does not belong to this group, yet there is a symptom, *viz*, a great desire for immediate stool but simply a passing of warm winds takes away the urgency and no stool is passed. This symptom is wonderfully alike in *Natrum Sulph* and *Aloe*. Moreover, the early morning aggravation of stools is also common to both. Here are the distinguishing points. *Aloe* is full of burning and has an aggravation in summer. *Natrum Sulph* is chilly and has an aggravation in rains. Moreover, though there is early morning aggravation of stool common to the remedies *viz*, *Natrum Sulph*, *Aloe* and *Sulphur*, yet 'driving out of bed urgency' is found in *Sulphur* and *Aloe*, whereas in *Natrum Sulph*, the urgency is not 'driving out of bed' character, nor does it come immediately after rising from bed, but, after some movements.

Skin.—*Aloe* has many skin symptoms which appear in winter, and *Psorin* is generally administered where *Aloe* should have been. The difference is not at all

difficult to make, because *Psorin* is intensely chilly and can not stand bath, whereas *Aloe* is hot-blooded and longs for cold bath.

Potency.—Any potency from 30th to C. M. equally beneficial, though 30th, 200th and 1000th are in general use.

Relation.—*Aloe* and *Sulphur* are complementaries. *Sulphur* generally comes in after *Aloe* to complete its action.

ALUMINA.

Deep }
Anti-psoric }

Alumina is a deep acting anti-psoric remedy and of great use. It has been called the "*Aconite* of chronic diseases." This means that as *Aconite* is used in acute cases, so *Alumina* is used in the beginning of chronic cases and chronic conditions, where there is at least a *prima facie* group of symptoms justifying its use and *Alumina* can in that case give a fair start in the process of cure. Of course, no routinism is advocated and the symptom-totality is everywhere needful. In many chronic cases, it is found that there is a confused condition of things on account of some suppressive or unhomœopathic treatment so long followed and if a *prima facie* picture of *Alumina* is obtained, it has been found that it can clear up the confusion, and if it is a clear case for *Alumina*, it can cure eventually by itself or makes room for, and points to, some other remedy, by clearly manifesting the totality of the latter.

It acts very *deeply* and *slowly* too. It is a pity that far other remedies are generally used where this remedy might have preferably been. *Alumina* has many-sided action and should be properly studied and understood.

It is the *chronic* of *Bryonia* in the sense that where a particular disease symptom comes every now and then with *Bryonia* symptoms and so cured every time by the use of *Bryonia*, in that case *Alumina* should be used to stop the relapse and iradicate the tendency. *Bryonia* has hardly any depth of action because it is a non-antipsoric. *Alumina* is deeper and so it can permanently cure where *Bryonia* can not. Of course sometimes *sulphur* or *Psorin* may have to be used, where *Alumina* does not fit in or proves insufficient for a permanent cure.

Modalities,—*Alumina* patients generally lack in animal heat and therefore cold air and winter aggravate. There is also an aggravation at the time of new moon and full moon. It is peculiar that *Alumina* patients are upset by eating potatoes. Medium climates are suitable for *Alumina* patients as also rains are soothing. Warmth of the bed aggravates, specially the skin symptoms; mental symptoms aggravate after waking up from sleep. Warm or hot drinks ameliorate.

The general **make-up and constitution** of all deep acting anti-psoric, anti-sycotic and anti-syphilitic remedies should be clearly understood. *Alumina* is essentially *sad* and *dejected*, rather *tearful*, even as *Pulsatila* and *Lachesis*. *Pulsatila* is hot-blooded, so you can not possibly confuse. In *Lachesis* the easy

tearfulness is not a *mental* symptom, it comes from *the weakness of the nerves*. *Lachesis* aggravation commences when *Alumina* aggravation ceases, because *Alumina* has the commencement of relief as soon as the spring time appears after cold winter, but spring is the special time for *Lachesis* aggravation. Of course all the three remedies have an aggravation after sleep. *Alumina* sometimes fears going mad and is unable to think over a matter in an orderly way. Sometimes real and actual events appear to him like a dream. He is generally constipated and the mental condition keeps pace with the degree of constipation.

Constipation,—It has an inveterate constipation. Little children are found to suffer much from this symptom and *Alumina* is more often used in their cases,—of course, because *Alumina* symptoms more often appear in their cases. You must not suppose that, because of the stiffness or hardness of the stool, they are hard to evacuate, for even the loose stools are constipated in *Alumina* (*Hep sulph*). The peculiarity of *Alumina* constipation is that the patient has no urgency to stool at all. When feces are accumulated within the intestines so that a sense of heaviness is felt in the abdomen, then there is an urgency to stool. The picture of *Alumina* constipation should be fairly retained in the mind. When the urgency comes, the poor patient goes to the privy and strains and strains and strains but finds no easy evacuation. Then, on leaning on a support or a wall of the privy, he goes on straining and straining and finds himself full of perspiration due to exertion. At last, after much straining he is somehow

able to evacuate a small stool, either soft or stiff and leaves the privy with a feeling that a good deal of fœces remains unpassed. This is the picture of *Alumina* constipation.

Now **compare** with *opium* and *Bryonia* which are liable to be confused with *Alumina*. In the case of *Bryonia*, there is a condition of *dryness*. The stool is dry and stiff, the intestines, rectum and anus are dry, no lubricating fluid, is there and hence the difficulty of evacuation. In *Alumina* there is no dryness and the real feature in *Alumina* is the absence of urgency due to want of natural irritation in the rectum. In *Opium* also there is no urgency, but in *Opium* it is due to local *paralysis* or *paresis* of the intestines and anus. Moreover, *Opium* has stools like small black balls and not a hard dried up or half-burnt thick mass, as in *Bryonia*.

* Constipation is not a disease *per se* and is only a *result* of the vital disorder and you can not select a medicine upon constipation alone. You are to take the patient's symptom-totality; and where the constipation is one in the totality, the medicine selected for the patient will cure the *patient* and necessarily remove the constipation. This is *true Homœopathy*. To try to remove the constipation only is a confusion and can not be attempted by a sincere Homœopath. To look to a particular symptom neglecting the patient is outside his duty.

Fever,—*Alumina* may be indicated in fevers specially of chronic nature and you will find in every *Alumina* case, that there is a history of frequent attacks of fever with *Bryonia* symptoms and *Bryonia* cured

everytime that it was given. *Bryonia* was too superficial in the case for a permanent cure,—and Alumina acts deeper and cures. What are the symptoms then? Inveterate constipation, dejected mood, thickly white-coated tongue, thirst at long intervals but for a profuse quantity of water, aching of the head, patient is not inclined to move, as movement badly aggravates, the fever paroxysm comes in at every full or new moon. You know Alumina is chilly and wants a medium climate.

Vertigo,—the remedy may be used in many types of disease and disease-symptom, in case its constitutional peculiarities are present in the patient. For instance, it may often be required in *vertigo*, if the totality of its main particulars are found, along with the local symptoms, viz, the patient cannot walk with the eyes closed, and the vertigo also aggravates on closure of the eyes. In vertigo, *Argentum nitricum*, *Puls* and *Gels* are also to be thought of; but *Arg-nit* and *Puls* both are hot-blooded and not chilly like Alumina. *Gels* is, of course, chilly like Alumina, but *Gels* has trembling of the tongue and profuse urination, indicative of nervous weakness which is a characteristic of the remedy.

Desires and Aversions,—There are some peculiarities of Alumina regarding desires and aversions. The patient desires to take things which are not generally eatable and not easily digestible. For example, he likes to eat charcoal, chalk, earth, &c, but has no desire for eating potatoes which aggravate his disease symptoms as well. There can hardly be found any

assignable reasons for this curious taste, but Alumina has it and can cure when found in a patient.

Female organs,—Alumina is highly important in the female sphere, specially in their Leucorrhœa. The Leucorrhœa is, highly excoriating and so burning and so, *profuse* in quantity that the discharge rolls even to the heels. There is another remedy which has also such a profuse Leucorrhœa, as *syphilinum*, a nosode. But there are a few differentiating points, viz, syphilinum has the discharge more in the night, and Alumina has it more in the day time. Moreover, syphilinum acts better in syphilitic patients and Alumina in psoric. Alumina discharge lessens during night and on bath.

Skin,—The special characteristic of Alumina skin is intense itching *without any eruption*. The patient itches, and itches, and goes on itching unless and until the spots bleed. No eruption, yet there is itching and bleeding. The itching of the skin aggravates in the warmth of the bed and during winter. Now, as soon as the bleeding dries up and crusts or clots are formed, the itching returns, and again the same thing happens, viz, intense and persistent itching and bleeding afterwards. This is the picture of Alumina skindisease. Itching without any previous eruption is also found in other two remedies, viz *Mezerium* and *Ars*; In *Mezerium*, thick crusts are formed within which pus collects and vermins breed below the crusts; *Mezerium* eruptions aggravate in the face and head. *Ars* has a speciality in its burning which is relieved from heat. Aggravation in winter is found in *Psorin*, *Petroleum* and *Mezerem*, and aggravation in

the warmth of the bed is found in *Mere* ; and *Mez.*, and other symptoms will decide as to which to choose in a particular case.

Alumina Picture,—constipation, chilliness, peculiar cravings leucorrhœa ; *aggravation* in winter, at the full and the new moon, and on eating potatoes. *Amelioration*—in medium climate and from warm drinks.

Potency.—30th, 200th, and upwards.

AMBRA GRISEA.

A Nosode.

Ambra belongs to the *Nosode* group of remedies. All *Nosodes* are deep-acting. You know what *Nosode* remedies are. They are remedies potentised from the disease-products ; but that is not all you should know of them. They must be *proved*, as other remedies of your *Materia Medica*, upon the healthy individuals, so that their characteristic symptoms may be known, upon which to base your prescription of them in your patients. There are lots of *Nosode* remedies and each one of them has been thoroughly proved, according to the rules of proving, as laid down by the Master, before it could be incorporated into your *Materia Medica*. So, the idea is that you should not use any *Nosode* in the case of the selfsame disease whereof it is a product, but on the general principle of *Homœopathy*, i.e. on the basis of "totality of symptoms" under the Law of Similars ; e.g., *Psorinum* must not be used simply because your patient has scabies or skin diseases, but because he has *Psorin* symptoms

as manifested in its proving. I think, I am quite clear on the point.

Ambra is not a medicine of wide range, but it acts deeply in its sphere. Ambra seems to act upon the nervous system in a satisfactory way. Its true sphere of action is mainly upon the nervous system; but this is not sufficient, because there are many remedies in our Materia Medica, which act on the nervous system. Ambra has its own individuality in that it removes the nervous weakness which comes rather *early*. If a young man shows symptoms of dotage, a sort of nervous break-down, which should come in his old age, Ambra removes it and strengthens the man and puts him under a natural condition.

Modality,—warm drinks, warm room, lying down, speaking, company of people and after sleep,—are the *aggravating* circumstances; *relief* comes in after eating, in cold open air and on sitting up from lying down or incumbent position.

Mind,—Mind is weak, memory impaired, the patient can retain nothing, memory and power of retention almost *nil*. There is vertigo, and trembling of the whole system, so that the patient feels he will tumble down; sensorium beclouded, cannot fix his attention, cannot concentrate,—the mind will be running and running from one subject to another kaleidoscopically. Then again, the previous unpleasant events force themselves upon the mind and the patient is compelled to brood over them and he is buried down under the thoughts; a dejected and sorrowful mood. This mental condition aggravates in the morning after rising up from bed.

Cough.—Ambra is not a frequently indicated remedy in cough, nor is it desirable that it should be so. It is a nervous cough and aggravates when any stranger enters the room. Cough is associated with eructations.

Sleep.—The sleep symptoms are peculiar,—feels badly sleepy before he goes to the bed, but sleep vanishes away as soon as the head touches the pillow.

Female organs.—The nervous females have leucorrhœa but the flow is only in the night and not during daytime. The discharge is excoriating and brings in an intense itching and ulceration in the canal. There are lots of remedies viz *Causticum*, *Merc.*, *Nitric acid*, *Alumina*, *Syphilinum*, etc, and the symptom totality will decide which to use in a particular case. *Causticum* is chilly, has melancholy mood and gets spurting of urine when coughing, sneezing or blowing the nose ; moreover, *Causticum* has menses only during the day, but the flow ceases on lying down. *Merc* and *Nitric acid* both excoriate,—*Merc* has profuse sweat which, far from giving relief to the patient, rather aggravates ; tongue,—large, flabby, and shows imprint of teeth, gets frequent ulceration there with profuse, fetid and tenacious saliva. Its leucorrhœa is acrid, burning, with intense itching and rawness ; flow always worse at night ; all aggravate at night and specially from warmth of bed. *Nitric acid* has strong smelling urine and the leucorrhœic flow is badly excoriating ; it is also nervous but it ameliorates when riding in a carriage. It has also ulcerations in the mouth and tongue with cracks in the lip-corners as well as in the urinary canal with

intense soreness and sharp splinter-like pains. *Alumina* has an inveterate constipation associated with acrid, and profuse leucorrhœa running down to the heels but the flow is worse during day-time. Further, the *Alumina* patient is ameliorated by cold bathing, though the patient himself is chilly. *Syphilinum* has also leucorrhœa which is, exactly like that of *Alumina*,—profuse and running down to the heels; but instead of day-time aggravation of *Alumina*, it has night aggravation. Lastly *Alumina* is mainly psoric, *Syphilinum* is syphilitic.

Menstrual flow is also profuse but it seems to be oozing all the time, and the flow drops down or oozes even at trifles, for instance, on an attempt to lift a moderately heavy thing or during efforts at stools, specially during walking.

Ambra females appear to be so much nervously weak that during their lying-in period, it is impossible for them to evacuate or urinate at any body's presence.

The **picture** of Ambra cannot better be made than in the memorable words of Dr. Farrington—"Hair turns gray and falls; the memory grows unreliable; comprehension is dull; hearing, smell and sight begin to fail; nervousness, anxiety, melancholy; aversion to company or indifference to family and the affairs of life are gradual steps in the path to senility. From defective assimilation, the tissues become impoverished; from weak circulation there is coldness of the extremities, numbness and vertigo. These signs of senile decrepitude may be found to a greater or

less extent in any stage of life and this is the sphere of Ambra."

Case Report,—Haripada Adhikary, aged 28 or 29, all times sad and dejected; in march, 1913, he got very anxious owing to the palpitation of his heart and called me. Much exhausted on walking even a short distance; vertigo; hardly any appetite for food; too much seminal loss might have been the cause behind all these. He has been suffering for the last four or five years from palpitation and though he used various medicines he could find no relief up to date and therefore he got much terrified. A physician had advised him to take *Gelsemium* and the remedy he used for several days in 30th and 200th, but to no relief. I thoroughly examined him but found no other symptoms to base my prescription upon. At first I gave him *Acid Phos* but found no appreciable benefit. At last I detected signs of early senility and thought of Ambra. I used the remedy from 200th to 1m and the man was cured in course of a few months. The man has since then been working in a big Printing Work at Calcutta.

You should remember that senility is a characteristic point in connection with Ambra and the picture drawn by Dr. Farrington in a few words given above should be borne in mind.

Potency,—This remedy being a nosode should always be used in a high potency. I never use it below 200, more often higher. Nosodes are never to be used low.

AMMON CARB.

Deep Antipsoric }
 &
 Antisyctic. }

Ammon carb is an important medicine and should be used more often than at present. Patients are partially cured with the help of other remedies, where *Ammon carb* should have preferably been used and a complete cure would have been the result.

The remedy is used in acute as well as chronic conditions, and sometimes under a serious predicament. The remedies that are required at a time when life trembles in the balance should be thoroughly understood and their pictures vividly retained in mind. Many cases of so-called *heart failures* may be averted under the timely use of this remedy.

Relations.—*Arnica* and *Camphor* are antidotes. *Lachesis* should never be used before or after *Ammon carb*, because they are inimical to each other.

Nature and adaptability.—I have already told you that it is a deep-acting antipsoric. It is a remedy of hæmorrhagic nature. It decreases the red corpuscles of the blood and makes it more watery so that the blood does not easily co-agulate and the flow continues on and on. Females, fat and corpulent and of sedentary habits; delicate women, always tired, of “do-nothing” type, are the special subjects of *Ammon Carb*. They have frequent headaches with a sensation of fulness, as if the forehead would burst; susceptible to cold and they readily catch it specially in winter. *Ammon carb* patients are not inclined to bathe, they are chilly, easily catch cold and whenever they catch

cold and coryza, the nose gets stuffed, so that they must have to breathe through the mouth.

Modalities,—*Aggravation*,—from cold, cold bath, towards the latter part of the night i. e. 3 to 5 A.M. (*Kali carb* and *Kali bi*) and during menses; and *Amelioration*,—in warmth, during warm days and on lying on the abdomen.

Heart,—The heart symptoms of Ammon carb are important; patient feels as if his breathing will be stopped, during sleep or on entering into it. *Lechesis* has this symptom also, but *Lachesis* has no stuffing of the nose. The heart palpitates on even the smallest exertion and on ascending a few steps and the patient feels a difficulty of breathing. When he feels all these difficulties, he cannot remain in a warm room but must hurry up to open air. If the heart is examined, it will be found that the organ is *nervously* weak. The patient is not inclined to move along for fear of all those difficulties spoken of above. *Palpitation associated with difficulty of breathing and a dry cough*,—must be kept in mind. The Ammon carb cough is due to the nervous weakness of the heart as in *Naja*. *Ammon carb* and *Naja* cannot lie to the left. But *Ammon carb* has bronchial cough as well which is dry and is aggravated towards the day-break.

The stuffing of the nostrils is a characteristic condition of *Ammon carb* which aggravates during night and the patient is compelled to breathe through the mouth. This symptom, if found during ordinary coryza or cough and cold or Diphtheria, should point our attention to this remedy. The breathing suffocates up as soon as the patients (specially little children)

enter into sleep. This may occur even *during* sleep. *Nux*, *Lyc*, *Sticta*, *Sambucus*, *Kali bi*, and a few others have also this symptom. *Nux* has generally ineffectual desire for stool and urine; *Lyc* has constipation, a desire for hot things and aggravation of its symptoms from 4 to 8 P. M. The child smothers during sleep and wakes with vehemently rubbing the nose; *Sticta* has a peculiar pain in the forehead, and a hard, dry and barking cough; its nasal secretions dry up so rapidly that they can not be discharged; *Nux* coryza is fluent by day and dry at night. *Sambucus* has the peculiarity of having dry skin during sleep and sweating skin on waking and during waking hours; lastly *Kali bi* has a stuffing but the long thread-like and sticky secretion from the nose is characteristic.

Nose-bleed,—*Ammon carb* has nosebleed, when washing the face and hands in the morning, specially from the left nostril. It has also blood-flow from the nose after meals; the blood is dark, blackish and watery.

Menses,—The menstrual symptoms are peculiar inasmuch as cholera-like symptoms appear a few days before or just at the commencement of the menstrual flow. Let the pathologist divine up the pathological connection between the two events but let us carefully remember them as they occur. The flow is profuse and aggravates during nights and so much excoriating that the thighs get sore. Moreover the patient feels horrible pains in the abdomen before the flow starts.

* The ordinary use of *Ammon carb*,—for the stuffing of the nose, the choked up condition during sleep.

the ulcerations in the nostrils due to the excoriating nasal secretions or the nose-bleed,—is not much difficult, but the remedy may come into use during some dangerous circumstances and it is very likely that the life of the patient suddenly snuffs out, without the timely administration of this remedy. Though this sort of death can easily be explained away by the allopathic brethren as being due to “heart failure”, but our duty demands that we should, if possible, save the life by the timely administration of *Ammon carb*, if symptoms correspond. This use of *Ammon carb* should be clearly retained in mind, so that we may properly use it under the dangerous predicament to be shortly described. Suppose, a bad type of measles or a scarlet rash or a small pox eruption has not properly come up due to exposure,—or, on account of the miasmatic condition of the patient, the eruptions are partially out or have sunk away, technically called “repercussed”,—at such a circumstance, *Ammon carb* may be needed, if the following symptoms are found, viz drowsy and comatose condition (the mother or the nurse may be under the impression that the child is sleeping), the whole body cold and bluish, pulse very slow and weak, heavy breathing, flapping of the nostrils, &c; these symptoms indicate that a fatal condition is already there and may shortly end in death if not averted by the timely administration of *Ammon carb*. This condition may be only a prodrome of on-coming meningitis or may end in sudden death from actual failure of the nervously weak heart. If instead of that, a slower course is taken up, inflammation of the

meninges, the covering portion of the brain, is likely to follow, technically called meningitis, and the characteristic symptom of *Ammon carb* at this condition will be found, which is sudden and frequent startling up during sleep, as if frightened. This symptom along with the drowsiness or coma, previously spoken of, will clearly indicate that a hard fight is coming on. But a clear comparison must have to be made amongst remedies which are likely to be indicated, as a mistake is very likely to occur, and if a wrong remedy is given instead of the right one, it will not be possible to rectify the mischief very easily. Therefore I would like to draw your pointed attention to the following remedies viz *Belladonna*, *Calcarea carb*, *Lycopodium*, *Apis* and *Lachesis*. *Antim tart*, *Carbo veg* and *Arsenicum album* may also come into use,—but of them, later on. Now to compare,—

The sudden startling up during sleep of *Ammon carb* is generally due to the stuffing up of the nostrils, because the brain is not likely to be actually involved, up till now. *Bell* has throbbing carotids, red and suffused face and the brain apparently involved,—at least a good deal of congestion is there. *Lachesis* has a general aggravation during sleep, or just on entering into sleep, but in *Lachesis*, the left side is generally affected first and then the disease symptoms may extend up to the right, whereas in *Ammon carb* the right side is affected first. *Apis* has drowsiness or somnolence, exactly like *Ammon carb*, but *Apis* is intensely hot and has relief in open air and from cold washing and general cold, which aggravate

Ammon carb; moreover, Apis has urine much diminished or suppressed, and there must be the characteristic sudden crying up, technically called the "brain cry" or the "cephalic cry", owing to stitching or stinging pains felt in the meninges,—the unerring indication of meningitis; moreover, Apis has the rolling of the head over the pillow. (Increase of the quantity of urine, after the administration of Apis indicates improvement of the patient.) *Calcarea carb* is also chilly and startles up with seeing terrible visions on just closing of eyes,—(a symptom which is also found in *Belladonna*)—and wonders not to find the apparitions that were just visible; moreover, it has sour stools, profuse sweat on the forehead, specially during sleep, &c. *Lyc* has the characteristic aggravation from 4 to 8 p.m., tympany in the abdomen, and the flapping of the nostrils. The above symptoms are enough for the purpose of a differentiating between them, though there are many more minor points of distinction.

Heart,—Ammon carb is mostly indicated in those cases where the heart, due to the intensely nervous weakness of the organ, is threatening so as to suddenly fail, and has generally the following symptoms for its indication, viz, somnolence, rattling noise in the chest, owing to accumulation of mucus there, though nothing can be raised with the help of constant coughing, face and lips deep blue, due to want of proper circulation and to the lack of oxygen, trying with the hands to get at the floccs in the air, difficulty of breathing, blood-flow from the nostrils, flapping of the *alae nasi*, &c, &c. These symptoms of Ammon carb may be associated with many disease symptoms, as pneumonia, bronchitis,

uremia after cholera, scarlet fever or measles &c.—no use of *names* of the so-called diseases but the symptom totality, as given, is what is necessary. The so-called disease-symptoms, as pneumonia, bronchitis, &c. are not diseases proper, but they are really the *results* of disease which means the disturbed vitality, the wrong dynamis, the distuned life-force, and so the main and true guidance is to be sought in the symptom-totality which only is the language of Nature, her voice, asking for the physician's help for a cure. Now, at such a circumstance as noted above, Ammon carb is to be given, and even if it cannot cure, it may bring in a healthy re-action and point to some other remedy of its group that will cure. Such remedies are,—*Ant. tart*, *Carbo veg* and *Ars*.

Ant. tart has a white-coated tongue, rattling in the chest, hardly any cough (partial paralytic condition of the chest) and even if any cough is there, nothing comes up, though it seems, as if mouthfuls of mucus would be raised, profuse cold sweat on the forehead, and a nausea which is only relieved by lying to the right. *Carbo veg* has also many of the above symptoms as in *Ant. tart*, but *Carbo* piteously asks for fanning, hard fanning, and lies down as more dead than alive, without any reaction, and externally as cold as death. *Ars. alb*, has a restlessness, fear of death, and a mental inquietude not to be allayed by any means whatever, the characteristic thirst, frequently calling for cold water though he takes a sip only each time, and intense chilliness.

* Just imagine the serious predicament in which the above remedies may be indicated and required, and

it is incumbent upon you to keep each of them just at the finger's ends, so that you may see at a glance which one of those remedies is demanded in a particular case. There is hardly any time to think upon or to patiently study over cases like this,—you must have vivid, rather glowing, pictures of the remedies that are likely to be requisitioned at the junctures like this. The pathology or the names of the so-called diseases should not divert your attention, and they should be altogether left for others that require them. Your duty is to cure your patient,—not through any surmises, conjectures, opinions or authoritative injunctions, but absolutely under the benignant guidance of Nature,—the totality of symptoms which is her language for obtaining your help; and if you are to help properly, and truly to your sacred calling, just understand, study, rather assimilate the requisite remedies under the circumstances, so that you may be able to select at the very first sight of your patient. Nay a mere look at him should point your attention to the remedy, and that is what is wanted of you.

Chronic use,—Lastly Ammon carb has a splendid use in the case of patients who are perfectly healthy in all other respects, except that their heart is weak, *nervously* weak, with no organic defect in that organ. Of course, a man of nervously weak heart can live for a pretty long time, but it is not properly “living”,—it is rather “dragging” the tired, jaded, exhausted life, which may sniff out at any moment, on happening of some serious ordeal incidental to our earthly existence. These persons should live a very careful life and their physicians also must have to be much careful during their

ailments of even ordinary gravity like Typhoid fever, Pneumonia, &c. They must have to always be on the alert, lest their heart may not yield; and so it is prudent to strengthen in time the nerve supply of the heart. As a guidance or as an indication, you may have nothing except the general features of Ammon carb associated with easy exhaustion, being always tired even with trifling exertions, specially on ascending a few steps, the chilliness, aggravation from cold bath, predisposition to frequent colds in the nose with stuffing of the nostrils, discomfort regarding breathing just after waking up from sleep, &c, &c. In these patients, Ammon carb can do wonders in course of a year or so,—occasional doses of high potency of the remedy. Our illustrious physician, Dr. Kent, gave us a hint in his admirable treatise of *Materia Medica*, and I for myself verified his valuable dictum in more than ten cases during my practice. I can assure you with strong confidence that you can tone up and save dying men who are dying *chronically* and suffering a good deal owing to their weak hearts. By your efforts their life will be enjoyable.

Relationship,—You cannot think of using Lachesis before or after Ammon carb, because they are inimical to each other.

Potency,—From 30th to 1000th generally used. Higher may also be used in cases where all-round similarity makes it a *similimum*.

AMMON MURATE.

This remedy is of not a very frequent use. It is akin to *Ammon carb* in most of the symptoms but

being a *murate*, it has hard crumbling stools requiring great effort in expelling them. It has an obstinate constipation with stools crumbling at the anus and accompanied with much flatulence.

Adaptability,—*Ammon murate* patients are fat, slow and sluggish; has a disproportionate build, the upper body being large and fat but the legs disproportionately thin and stick-like.

Sciatica,—There is a peculiar sciatic pain in this remedy, appearing in the left leg with a feeling as if the muscles and the ligaments of the leg have been shortened; the pains are aggravated on sitting up, a bit relieved by walking but perfectly disappearing on lying.

Female organs,—Diarrhœa and vomiting before or at the commencement of the menses; even bloody discharge from the bowels during the menses; flow more profuse at night and associated with neuralgic pains in the feet. The remedy has leucorrhœa too; the leucorrhœa flow starts after every urination; the flow is like the white of an egg and preceded by griping pains in the navel.

Limbs,—offensive sweating of the feet as in *Alumina*, *Psorin*, *Sanicula*, *Silicea* etc.

Hæmorrhoids,—sore and burning with stinging pains in the rectum felt for hours together after stool. *Æsculus* and *Nitric acid* have it, but *Æsculus* has the horrible back-pains and *Nitric acid* is generally indicated in syco-syphilitic patients.

Other symptoms and conditions are like the *Carbonate*, so need not be repeated.

Potency,—the same as *Carbonate*.

ANACARDIUM ORIENTALE.

Anti-psoric. }

Anacardium has been included within the group of anti-psoric remedies, though its action is not much deep. It is generally indicated in mental diseases, old dyspepsia, constipation, colic pains, etc. *Nuxvomica*, *Lyc*, *Stramonium*, and a few others have many symptoms in common and a comparison between them will be necessary.

Modalities,—*Aggravation* from the application of hot water ; *amelioration* from eating, when lying on sides and from rubbing.

Characteristic Symptoms,—(1) *Mental*,—*sudden loss* of memory, everything forgotten, real events seem like dreams. Patient feels some body always following him, therefore he is always suspicious and looks round him with a suspicious mind, cannot rely on any body or any event. Mental condition is peculiar,—laughs on grave matters and is serious on trifles ; curses and uses violent language ; always forgetful and absent-minded, with lack of confidence in others, even in himself. Bent upon wickedness, malicious. He feels he hears voices far away and from people long dead and gone, full of hallucinations. The most peculiar condition of the mind is that the patient feels to be constantly under the control of two persons or two wills opposite to each other and so very often vacillates, is unable to decide a particular course of action ; mind waves like a pendulum and cannot come to a decision, right or wrong. It has been seen that it is sometimes very difficult, if not

impossible, to make a case-record of Anacardium patients on account of their vacillating condition of mind. It seems as if they are not sure of what they feel ; symptoms are given which seem contradictory.

(2) **Constipation**,—Frequent urgency to stools but on an attempt, the urgency or the desire vanishes away ; the patient feels as if the rectum has been plugged up or as if it is powerless to evacuate. This *plug-like sensation* is felt anywhere and everywhere ; feels as if some portions of his body have been tightly bound up.

(3) **Pains**,—Colic pains or head-aches, mostly of a neuralgic character,—all ameliorated by eating.

(4) Symptoms appear in the right side of the body and extend to the left.

Other symptoms of Anacardium may be found in various remedies but its mental symptoms are wholly unique and peculiar. I have been able to cure many cases of dementia by this remedy, having been guided mainly by the mental characteristics ; though in a few of them, I had had to use other anti-psoric remedies for a perfect cure, but it cannot be denied that in every case it was Anacardium that brought about a real change and set in the truly curative process. I would like to state here, in brief, about a patient.

Case report,—Sreejut.....Banerji, aged 30 or 32, was an employee of a Jute Mill at Calcutta. He had his aged parents and the recently married wife aged 15 or 16 at home. That there was some disorder in his mental sphere since October, 1918, was

first detected by his mother and it was she that gave me the following descriptions. As I was at home then for the Puja-holidays, the good mother came up to me and said thus,—“Dear Doctor, through the grace of God I have got a very nice daughter-in-law,—as amiable and beautiful as well-trained in the household works, but I am unable to ascertain the reason why my son, her husband, has always been on bad terms with her,—suspicious, full of irritations and at every step ready for a quarrel with her. But, Doctor, as she is perfectly innocent and amiable, perfectly obedient to him as well as to us, his aged parents, we are generally compelled to take her side and simply for that we have also been a cause of displeasure to him, who, to speak the truth, had all along been perfectly obedient to us and of sincere and amiable nature. Is it possible that he has been poisoned by somebody? Well, Doctor, it would be very nice if you would kindly see as to where may be the disorder. We are all laymen and so are not expected to understand if it is a case of mental disorder in my son; in any case, you will be the fittest man to find out the real plague-spot”. They were all inhabitants of a village named Mirzapore, only three miles off from my place and I had been there to see the patient, within a week or so. Now what I observed are put here. “Patient,—dejected and highly reserved; found him in a lying position sometimes laughing, sometimes weeping, sometimes sighing deep sighs; lying still and then all on a sudden he rose up anxiously looking hither and thither and then again lay down,—sometimes got up and peeped into the garden close by

through the window. Then again he suddenly turned behind him as if apprehending the presence of somebody behind. The patient not much inclined to speak except at meal-times, when he would ask for a few items of food according to his liking. The peculiar point that I noticed was that he constantly looked behind him when going somewhere as if he felt somebody pursuing behind him. Aimlessly going hither and thither and when asked about the reason, he would speak nothing. Nothing more I could observe." The above lines I quote from my diary. I made a comparison between *Hyoscyamus*, *Bell*, *Stramo* and *Anacardium* and though I strongly was in favour of the last remedy, I gave him a few doses of *Hyoscyamus* in 200th potency. After a week or so the report was not favourable, and I prescribed *Anacardium* 200 in five graduated doses, daily morning a dose. A pause was given after the fifth dose and on the following day, a sharp aggravation was noticed, so much so, that a neighbouring Homœopathic physician was strongly bent upon giving *Belladonna*, so furious was the scene. I saw the patient once again but as the original picture was just like that of *Anacardium*, specially, the mentals, I fixed upon *Anacardium*. The worthy Physician suggested to me that we should better wait for a few days following, so that the unusual aggravation might cease or abate. But as the aggravation was constant and the violent symptoms were quite horrible we put our brains together and administered a few doses of *Anacardium* 1000 in a graduated way. After the third dose, a spell of good and quiet sleep for about 18 hours

followed, and a clear mental calm appeared in the wake. After a week of the last dose of *Anacardium* 1M. the patient's mind was so much cleared that he asked his friends to write to his Proprietor for a further leave. This was the first time that he could realise his whereabouts and that he was under a leave. Of course, it took me a long time to cure this patient, as a *patient*, with the help of constitutional treatment but it is a notable fact that his mind did never get muddy or hazy after this dose of *Anacardium*.

* Each and every well-proved remedy is found to have a *specialty* of its own and to have also a special *affinity* for a particular organ or a part of the human organism. For instance, *Digitalis*, *Naja* or *Spigelia* has its *central* action on the heart, *Stramo* on the brain, *Drosera* on the vocal organs and lungs, and so forth; each of those medicines has its primary or *central* action on the part or the organ, and only *secondary* action on some other parts or organs. All the deep acting medicines must have to be studied in that way. *Anacardium* has its primary and central action on the mind. Of course, every remedy must act, or rather, commence its action, on the mind, but here the question is regarding the *central* action or *special affinity* of the individual remedies.

Mind—The mental condition of *Anacardium* ought to be fairly studied. First, every thing or every event appears as a dream. As the visions that are experienced in a dream are enveloped in a veil of unreality, so every event appears to be airy, unreal or imaginary. *Secondly*, his memory is almost *nil*,

nothing is retained in mind. Even the very recent events, even those happening a few hours before, escape his memory; he cannot remember in the evening if he took his noon meal or what food he took in the morning,—so much unreliable his mind turns out to be. This sort of impairment may be the chronic and gradual development or may be all on a sudden, owing to some severe illness from which he might have lately suffered. *Thirdly*, the patient is unable to come to a fixed decision on a particular subject,—as he feels himself to be under the sway of two divergent wills, one directing him one way and other, just opposite way. The real position is this, that he has no strength of mind, no balance, no stamina,—has lost all confidence in his own self or in his own decision, so that he cannot make sure as to whether he should do this, or do that; such is the condition of his mind. Wavering and unsteady condition, balancing condition of the mind. *Fourthly*, the patient sometimes laughs at serious and grave matters, and turns grave on things exciting laughter and merriment. A queer condition of mind, quite unusual and curious. There is no order, no harmony, no co-ordination. If some of these features combine in a man, it is no wonder that he would be looked upon as one of unsound mind or a mad-cap, *Lastly*,—the Anacardium patient is full of suspicions. He feels as if some body is always following him, and so he frequently turns back, to see if he can find him. This torments him, specially whenever he goes from one place to another. He has to constantly dwell on that idea, that somebody is at his back,

following him, pursuing him, and he is rather anxious for it. This, you should know, is a sensorial disorder, a false perception, showing that he lives in a dreamy state of mind. He seems to have lost all control over himself,—neither can he rely on himself nor can he rely on others,—full of suspicions, full of apprehensions. Lack of confidence in himself as well as in others.

You may have to compare *Anacardium* with *Hyoscyamus* and with *Stramonium*, as sometimes, and at least, regarding some phases, all of them may look alike. But if you just remember one thing in their connection, no mistake is likely to occur, viz, that *Anacardium* has a perfect relief of his symptoms *on eating, even on commencing to eat*. This is quite peculiar, but very important in connection with *Anacardium*. This symptom is absent in the other two remedies, and you can hardly make any error in your choice between them, if you remember this important modality. Of course, *Hyoscyamus* is full of suspicions, but it is mixed with *fears*, which are on his own account, for example, he fears to take his meal or drink offered, as being suspicious of some plot against his life or well-being. In *Anacardium*, it is simply the want of mental stamina and there is hardly any suspicion of that nature in him. *Stramo* is so much violent that there is hardly any chance of confusion. Moreover, both *Hyos* and *Stramo* are perfectly delirious, whereas *Anacardium* has only a *passive* and dreamy condition of mind. If you just look to the totality of symptoms, you will find no difficulty in choosing between them.

Stomach and Intestines.—Anacardium has a chronic indigestion, commonly known as "Dyspepsia," which is only a name and denotes a variety of stomach and intestinal disorders. The patient feels an "all-gone" or fasting sensation, as if his stomach has been absolutely empty for a long time and he feels much uneasy for it. He longs for food and is ameliorated on commencing to eat and the amelioration continues so long as the stomach is not empty again. He feels quite well during all the time,—from the commencement of eating to the end of digestion. He feels relief *during the whole process of digestion*. He feels the uneasiness, the gone feeling or the fasting sensation, as soon as the stomach is empty and if there is a delay in getting the meal, he sometimes feels a positive pain,—a twisting pain, as with a plug just below the navel, in the intestines; and for a relief, he must eat again. This is the picture of Anacardium dyspepsia. But, I think, the picture is not complete unless you tie up with the above symptoms his stool symptoms. It is a peculiar constipation that he suffers from.

Constipation.—Now as soon as the stomach digestion is over and the substance courses down in the intestines, a peculiar urgency is felt for a stool,—peculiar because, on an attempt at evacuation, the urgency vanishes away and no stool is passed. The patient feels as if a plug is there in the anus which arrests natural evacuation. (This plug-like sensation is general in this remedy and is found also in other parts of the system.) A good desire for stool, but just with the effort, the desire passes away;

rectum seems paralyzed or powerless to evacuate, with a sensation as if it is plugged up. A sense of *local paralysis* and so no evacuation. Here you are to compare Anacardium with *Nux Vomica* which has also the same condition of ineffectual urgency to stool and there is every likelihood of misprescription of one in place of another of the two.

Let us **compare** ;—*Nux Vomica* has an *immediate* relief during and just after eating, but its inconvenience and distress commence as soon as the *process of digestion commences*, the greatest distress being felt *one or two hours after eating, i. e.* when the duodenal digestion commences ; the uneasiness or distress in *Nux* continues unless and until the digestion is fairly complete,—and that is the time when Anacardium distress commences to be felt and will continue unless and until the stomach is filled in again ; so that you should very carefully mark that Anacardium is at his *best* when *Nux vomica* is at his *worst*. Moreover, the inconvenience of *Nux* is owing to *fulness* for which he has to loosen the clothing, but the worst inconvenience of Anacardium is due to *emptiness* for which he has to fill in. Lastly, warm drinks relieve *Nux*, but aggravate Anacardium. These three points, if carefully remembered in connection with the digestion matters, you can hardly make any mistake in selection.

Of course, both the remedies have a peculiar *constipation*, and to a casual observer, both of them look alike, because both have frequent urgency to stools, mostly ineffectual too, but each has an individuality of its own. Anacardium has “plug like”

sensation in the rectum, with a feeling of local *paralysis*, whereas Nux Vomica has an *anti-peristalsis*. You may not understand what is meant by the term "peristalsis," and a few words on it will not, I think, be out of place here. As soon as anything is eaten, there commences a natural process, (in obedience to the natural influx of *in out*) by virtue of which the food-stuffs *course down and down* along with digestion and assimilation throughout the whole length of the alimentary canal from mouth to anus. So the food-stuffs are subjected to a double process, viz that of assimilation, and that of gradual down-throw, to the lower portion of the canal, as soon as the work of assimilation by the higher portion is finished. This process of gradual lowering down is technically called "peristalsis," and in Nux-vomica this onward down-throwing process is upset or reversed or disordered, for which the stool does not come down though the urgency to throw it off is there. Hence the reason behind the Nux constipation is the *disordered peristalsis* whereas in Anacardium it is the *paresis* of the rectal muscles. In Nux, there is no "plug-like" sensation which is felt in Anacardium.

Heart,—Anacardium has only a few heart symptoms. Its palpitation is only an associated symptom along with any and every disease condition calling for Anacardium. Stitching pains are also felt in the region, which generally come in pairs.

Skin,—The skin symptoms of Anacardium are akin to those of Rhus,—the remedies being of the same family.

Potency,—30, 200, 1m, and higher potencies may be used according to the chronicity and the nature of a case.

ANTHRACINUM.

A nosode. }

Anthracinum belongs to the *Nosode* group of our remedies which are all deep-acting. You know what are Nosodes,—they are the remedies prepared from the disease-products. That they are “disease-products” only gives you the idea of their origin or source, and that is all. They are never to be used in the *self-same diseases* of which they are the *products*. No, that is not the idea; the idea is that these remedies must have to be potentized and proved, as other remedies, coming from other sources, viz vegetable, animal, mineral, &c. and then to be used on the symptom-similarity. *Psorin* is never to be used in a case having skin diseases, *simply because* *Psorin* comes from the pustules, but if only the symptoms obtained from its proving are found to exist in the case. There are several sources from which our remedies have been taken, and the Nosodes have been taken from the disease ullimates; but as *Belledona*, *Nux-Vomica*, &c. must have to be proved and to be used according to the Law of Similars, so also these Nosodes must be proved to reveal the symptoms of each, so that they may be used on the totality of symptoms when found in a patient. You will know of them by and by.

Nosodes are all deep-acting agents, and many of them are needed when other ordinary remedies fail,

because the latter do not work so deep as the former. Of course, all the Nosodes are not equally useful, and a few only have produced in their provings important symptoms to warrant their use in cases of serious disorder. For a long time, these important class of remedies were rejected by many of our profession, simply on account of their filthy origin, but now they are convinced of their inestimable value.

Anthracium, the remedy under review, has been prepared from the Anthrax poison or the Anthrax products. This remedy has not a much wide range of usefulness. It is generally used in carbuncles or ulcerations, even new growths of malignant type, where *intolerable burning, sloughing and decomposing ulcerations* are found. Even if fever is also associated with the carbuncles and ulcerations, Anthracium will still be useful. The remedy should be compared with *Arsenicum alb, Lachesis, Secale, and Carbolic-acid.*

In *Ars. alb*, fever is generally associated with the case, having a general aggravation after midday and midnight ; the patient is chilly, and intensely restless and full of fears, specially of death. The burning of *Ars. alb*, you know well, is ameliorated by warm application and general warmth. The peculiar thirst is also there—anxiously calling for water but taking only in sips, as if simply to moisten the mouth. The mental inquietude must be present. A very *scanty* discharge but of awfully offensive smell is the nature with *Ars.* ; ulcers, with too much sensitiveness, of the bluish colour. *Lachesis* has a deep red, or a dark purple appearance, surrounding the carbuncle, intense soreness and sensitiveness and has a special

aggravation after sleep. In Lachesis, sensitiveness is prominent, but burning is not; though there is a burning,—it is only of a subdued type and is brought on by touch which fearfully aggravates. *Secale* has the peculiarity of having carbuncles of not bigger form, but they are far smaller than in other remedies,—but of horrible burning pains, ameliorated by cold applications. Its carbuncles or abscesses do not ripen easily but give the patient pains of atrocious type. The “core” in its boils and carbuncles is rather greenish. *Secale* patients also are much restless like *Ars. alb.*, but the former always wants cold air and cold application, and *Ars.* just opposite. *Secale* patient feels as if sparks of fire are falling upon him. *Carbolic-acid* pains come as suddenly they go away equally suddenly. There is one peculiarity in *Carbolic-acid* cases, that the patient gets an inveterate constipation, so much so that even the very breath of the patient gets offensive.

Anthracinum can cure the tendency of getting frequent boils, abscesses &c.

Potency.—I would not advise any body to use the Nosodes in lower than 200th., at least never below 30th. They should better be used much higher. You should know that the Nosodes are remedial agents after they are highly potentiated, and when crude or very low, they are rather disease-producing filthy agents. I never use it below 200th.

ANTIM CRUDE.

Anti-Psoric. }

Antim crude is one of the deep-acting anti-psoric remedies. It should be more extensively used.

The *central action* of Ant. cr. seems to be on the stomach and digestive organs, and so, in whatever disease-condition it may be indicated, there must be some stomach or intestinal symptoms present ; so that any condition indicating this remedy is likely to arise round the digestion and digestive organs of the human system.

Modality,—Aggravation,—after meals, on *bathing*, specially in *cold water*, on eating sour fruits, from *sunheat* and *fireheat*, **amelioration** in open air, rest, on bathing in tepid water.

Constitutional Peculiarities,—It being a deep-acting anti-psoric remedy, you should know its constitutional peculiarities. The nature and constitution of all polychrests and miasmatic remedies should be remembered.

Boys and adults who have a tendency to be fat, have an inclination to take sour things, who suffer from constipation and sometimes from diarrhœa, who are sad, very sad and dejected, are fit subjects for this remedy. The patient is so sad that he is always prone to see to the dark side of things, full of pessimism, and has hardly any desire to live. This loathing of life is also found in *Aurum meta*, as in Ant crude ; but in the former, it is an *insane* symptom, in the latter, there is no alteration of the brain condition, and the symptom has its origin in the dire

pessimism. In *Arsenicum alb* the condition is just the reverse, because *Ars. alb* fears death. Antim crude *children* are highly irritated and sensitive, so much so that they cannot tolerate touch even ; they will not allow you to feel their pulse and will resent even a look at them.

The desire and aversion with regard to heat and cold are quite peculiar. Ant crud patients cannot bear sun-heat or fire-heat, as he is much exhausted from working in the sun. He is unable to stand fire-heat as well, and gets a headache. But you should not suppose that because he is averse to heat, therefore he might invite cold bath ; no, far from it,—he may like open air, but never a cold bath which greatly aggravates. A child will not bathe,—he will weep disconsolately if you give him a cold bath or a cold wash. An adult person will get a severe headache from a cold bath, and females will get their menses stopped if they take a cold bath. The point you should remember is this,—not only their symptoms are aggravated from the cold bath, but they do not like it even.

Case-report.—When I was at Purulia, I was entrusted with the treatment of an elderly matron, aged 32 or 33 years. She had been ill of alternate constipation and diarrhoea for a long time and though all the so called methods of treatment were had recourse to, she had all along been getting worse and worse. It was in the year, 1917, that she came under my care. I enquired as to what were the troubles with her and her husband gave the following story. "Dear Sir, my wife is, as you see, a bit fatter than normal, and

therefore always feels exhausted. Her digestive organs do not appear to work well, because she has constant eructations." I found no symptoms to base my prescription upon and so asked about her capacity to perform the household functions as a matron in the family. The good husband said—"Dear Sir, she cannot even think of working near fire; in case she is some day compelled to prepare the food and so expose herself to fire heat, she is badly upset, and must have to lie down for a day or two with her head pains. So that I did not allow her to cook any food for the last 8 or 10 years. Sometimes, when my paid cook is absent on some plea, I have to cook for myself and the children, yet I do not think of sending her for the purpose." Now I got the clue and found out the picture of Antim-crude. After two doses of 200th and another dose of 1000th. her tendency to get head pains from working near fire got cured along with other discomforts. I should mention here that I had to use a single dose of *Sulph* 200 to complete the cure, which is, by the bye, complementary to Ant crud.

Headaches or head pains, or simply a feeling of heat in the head, aggravate from walking or working in the sun and near the fire, *i.e.* within the fire-glaze; so sensitive is the patient to heat, that even a look at the sun-rays or the fire-glaze brings in headache. This sensitiveness is more often found amongst the females. Yet where there are positive pains anywhere else, the application of heat relieves them.

Rheumatism.—There are rheumatic pains in this remedy, which are brought on or are *aggravated* from

cold bath, *damp* and rainy weather, and from damp winds ; and are *ameliorated* from rest, application of heat, and from bathing in tepid water.

Digestive Organs.—It has already been said that the central point of action is the digestive organs. The main characteristics which are manifested here are white-coated tongue, as if white-washed, milky white or clayey white coating ; want of thirst, sense of weight and fulness in the stomach. The patient feels as if he has eaten a great deal : feels as if a load is there in the stomach. Nausea, vomiting, a sense of fulness with aversion to food. Eructations almost constant, smelling of the food eaten sometime before. Sometimes constipation and sometimes diarrhœa. When the patient has loose stools, he finds that the first part of the stool is formed or lumpy, then thinner and thinner, at last much watery, or mucous stools come out with a good deal of tenesmus. All these conditions are brought on from eating sour fruits, indigestible things, during summer and rains, and from bathing in cold water. There may be ulcers in the tongue during diarrhœa.

Now to **compare**—*Ipec*, *Puls* and *Lyco* are the remedies which must be compared with *Ant. crud*, as a confusion is very likely to arise between them. *Ipec* has generally a clean tongue, and nausea is more characteristic than actual vomiting. *Ant. crud* has characteristically a white-coated tongue. Though *Lyco* has a few points of resemblance with *Ant. crud*, specially regarding fulness and repletion, but the constipation, four to eight P. M. aggravation, tympany in the abdomen and flapping of the nostrils, make the

two remedies wide apart, *Pulsatilla*, *Ipec* and *Ant. crud* are alike in the want of thirst in each, but *Puls* has a dry mouth, *Ipec* has it moist and full with saliva, whereas *Ant. crud* tongue is pasty with white and sometimes dirty coating and with a slimy mucus; moreover, the corners of the mouth are cracked, a symptom absent in all others of the group. *Puls* is characteristically dry-mouthed, she "licks the lips but would not drink." Mentally they differ widely enough for a distinction. *Antim crud* is more sad, but *Puls* is more tearful. *Ant. crud* child is fretful and sensitive, resenting a touch, nay, even a look at him; whereas *Puls* invites consolation. Lastly *Ant. crud* is averse to cold bath, but *Puls* is relieved thereby.

Skin,—The remedy has nodosity, horny excrescences, hard corns, e. t. c. The idea is a new growth, which hardens. They are tender and sore on pressure. Specially the soles are very tender when the patient has to walk upon hard uneven surfaces. Warts are also found upon the skin, moreover, the skin is liable to crack and so fissures form, specially in the nostrils, lips, cheeks, e. t. c.; the nails are also found to harden and to be very brittle.

Fever,—In fever, there is no thirst, but the thick white or dirty white coating must be there over the tongue. The mind is generally sad and dejected. The notable fact is that generally other remedies like *Pulsatilla*, *Sulphur*, etc. are used in fever, where this remedy ought to have been. But if the symptom totality as above is found, *Ant. crud* works most satisfactorily and the fever does not relapse. One point is to be remembered in connection with *Ant.*

crud fever, is that the digestive disorders must be at the base, and the fever comes in as a sympathetic manifestation.

Potencies,—6, 30, 200, are in general use. Higher and much higher potencies are used, where constitutional changes are intended to be brought about.

ANTIM TART.

Antim tart is one of the most useful remedies. It is not a polychrest and cannot act so deeply, yet it is requisitioned under many dangerous predicaments. Its picture is not at all difficult to make if the following points are carefully remembered.

The main characteristic is generally found in the chest. The chest is full of mucus and it appears that a cupful of mucus would be raised when the patient coughs, but, as a matter of fact, nothing comes out. There is a stertorous breathing and with every breath mucous sound is heard. Along with this, there is generally found the flapping of the *ala nasi* indicating much difficulty of breathing which the patient actually feels. There is a vomiting tendency and actual vomiting, somehow relieved when the patient lies to the right. The white coating in the tongue,—the great characteristic of Antimony, is also there, the borders of the tongue being reddish. Of course, crude Antimony has a thick paste-like coating but in this remedy it is rather thin.

Antim tart patient is more embarrassed for the difficulty of breathing and is pale in countenance. Much irritated; the children have a weeping mood

along with the irritative temper ; they will get vexed and weep if you want to feel their pulse.

If you remember the above estimate, it will not be at all difficult to use the remedy according to indications. You are to know the circumstance and the disease symptoms in which the remedy is likely to be indicated and the points of difference between this remedy and a few others with which there is a likelihood of confusion.

Fever with chest symptoms.—You may call it a bronchitis or a pneumonia or a broncho-pneumonia, which are only so many names, but if the following symptom-totality is present, no matter whatever be the pathological name, the remedy will cure the condition. Fever is generally associated with any of the above named diseases, or, sometimes it may not be there ; still if you find a condition from which it appears that the chest is full of mucus and also it appears that a good quantity of it is very likely to come up with every cough, but, as a matter of fact, nothing comes out, a good deal of difficulty of breathing as indicated from the flapping of the nostrils with cold sweat on the forehead, you may expect a good deal of benefit and eventual cure by this remedy. There is a comatose or drowsy condition of the patient. There is also a nausea and vomiting too, which is relieved by lying to the right. Generally absolute want of thirst ; tongue, white coated in the centre with red borders.

Capillary Bronchitis.—There is a condition most prevalent amongst the little children, which is called capillary bronchitis. You know, the little

children do not get pneumonia often as the adults do, but they get capillary bronchitis which is very dangerous, so much so that unless you are able to abort the whole thing at the very outset, most cases prove fatal even in one night. You may question—why? The reason is that their bronchial tubes are as slender as so many hairs and therefore the bronchitis is called capillary (a word which is a Latin adjective from hair) so that those tubes, very thin as they are, are likely to be very easily choked up if they are filled with mucus, and a child patient may die of suffocation. Hence the necessity of getting it aborted whenever there is a possibility of its on-coming. I tell you that in the majority of cases, you can do it with the help of Antim tart, because, as a matter of fact, that remedy is most likely to be indicated in very many cases of capillary bronchitis amongst children. But how do you apprehend or are you able to detect its on-coming? Here is the *prodromal picture*.

Perhaps the child was all right throughout the day, playing and frolicking and jumping with his playmates all day long and in the evening he got his usual meal and retired to bed for sleep. It is found that after two or three hours' sleep, he wakes up and appears to have a difficulty of breathing with flapping of the *alae nasi*. The child is found to be screaming and weeping and would not sleep. There is a harsh sound in the throat and chest, with hardly any cough or only one or two, if at all. There is every likelihood of a sort of paralysis of the air passages. This is rather the *prodrome* of the on-coming dangerous predicament and if you do not abort the condition

by administering *Antim Tart* 6 or 12 every hour or every two hours unless and until his breathing difficulty is calmed down and the child gets into a good and peaceful sleep, you will see that his life may be snuffed off before morning. Here if you can timely use this remedy as suggested above, the whole thing will be aborted and the child as well as his family will be relieved of the dangerous circumstances that were apprehended.

In this connection, I would ask you to remember the use of this remedy in altogether two different stages which apparently look so different. The use in the first or the dry stage has already been alluded to. The *patient's* symptoms are, of course, all the same in both the stages, viz flapping of the *alae nasi*, the vomiting, its relief on lying to the right, the somnolence, etc. are the same in one as in the other, —only the chest sound is rather dry in the former stage and very much humid in the latter stage. In the humid stage, the chest is full of mucus, so much so that when the patient coughs, it seems as if a "cupful" would be raised immediately, but as a matter of fact, nothing comes out. There is a tendency of the profession to look to this remedy more in the second stage than in the first. But I would impress upon your memory its use specially in the first stage, because the work of *aborting* the whole case can be expected from its use in that stage, and only the *curative* action, after the full development of the disease, can be had from its use in the second.

Comparison.—A few remedies should be compared

with Antim tart, so that there may not be any occasion for confusion. First of all, let us take up *Ipecac*. *Ipecac* has vomiting, nausea, difficulty in raising the mucus in spite of its plenty accumulation in the chest, but in *Ipecac* the chest sound is not of *rattling* nature but rather of *wheezing*; tongue is clean; and instead of somnolence of Antim tart, it has rather a bit of restlessness, and therefore has a tendency of its picture and condition being changed into those of *Arsenicum album*. Moreover, it has no relief of its vomiting or nausea on lying to the right. Of course, both are thirstless. Lastly, though the chest is full of mucus in both the remedies, Ant. tart has flapping of the *alae nasi*, whereas *Ipecac* is rather embarrassed due to difficulty of breathing. *Ipecac* is rather restless and has a special aversion to food. Next comes *Lycopodium*, which has no stertorous breathing as in Ant. tart, though both have flapping of the *alae nasi*. Instead of nausea and vomiting of Ant. Tart, *Lyco* has flatulence, constipation and the peculiar aggravation of almost all its symptoms from 4 to 8 P. M. The third remedy for comparison is *Phosphorus*. This remedy has also flapping of the *alae nasi* and the general relief from lying to the right but it has a great thirst for cold water which has the tendency of being thrown up as soon it gets warm in the stomach. Moreover Ant. tart is drowsy and *Phosphorous* is restless. Lastly, *Phosphorous* has a good appetite and a craving for food in order to relieve its characteristic goneness in the stomach, whereas Ant. tart resents the idea of food and has a nausea. Last of all, *Veratrum alb* may also come in for comparison, because in the

last stage of such serious diseases as Cholera, Cholera morbus, e. t. c., both the remedies may look alike on account of partial failure or rather intense weakness of the heart, turbulent vomiting and streaming of cold sweat from the forehead, as also, the stertorous breathing which is generally a fore-runner of death, being present in both the remedies. But if you remember only these points in this connection, there is hardly any chance of confusion, viz,—*Veratrum* has all its discharges characteristically *profuse* ; it has a great relief from, and a special desire for, a profuse quantity of cold water ; these are never found in Ant. tart. Moreover Ant. tart is drowsy, *Veratrum* is awfully restless.

In Ant. Tart, the patient can not raise the mucus. Why ? There is full accumulation in the chest, there is coughing as well, yet the mucus cannot be raised. Because the real condition is paralysis or rather paresis of the lungs. This paralytic condition is again due to weakness of the patient ; so that wherever Ant. Tart is needful, the patient must be weak. Every case of stertor should not be the basis upon which Ant. tart is to be selected, unless there is corresponding *weakness* as well ; e. g., suppose, a boy not so weak but apparently of robust and healthy constitution has got a stertorous breathing due to accumulation of profuse mucus in the chest ; here you can not think of Ant. Tart but of *Kali Sulph* or *Puls*,—because there must be a similarity on all sides. Then, suppose an old man of sixty years or seventy, apparently quite healthy but has dyspnoeal breathing and a stertor specially throughout the whole winter, would

you think of Antim Tart ? No. It may be sometimes *Ammon Carb*, *Natrum Sulph* or *Puls* or *Carbo Veg* or some other, because unless there is weakness and consequent paralytic condition of the lungs, you cannot think of Ant. Tart. Flapping of the *alae nasi*, difficulty of breathing, profuse cold sweat on the forehead, want of thirst, vomiting relieved only on lying to the right, all these, associated with weakness and somnolence—Ant. Tart. *Puls* is tearful, has bitter taste in the mouth and absolute want of thirst with dryness of the mouth; the mucus of *Ammon Carb* is yellowish, that of Ant. tart white. Only one remedy is there that has a characteristic weakness like Ant. Tart with paralysis of the bronchials and lungs, as also stertorous breathing, profuse sweat on the forehead and inability to raise the mucus,—which is *Carbo Veg*, but *Carbo* has a characteristic which is not present in any other remedy, viz,—it wants *hard fanning*. Moreover, *Carbo* has no vomiting and its extremities are cold specially from elbows and knees downwards.

Fever,—In all types of fever, viz. intermittent, remittent, synochal, etc. or in diarrhœa or in any disease of whatever name and denomination, this remedy may be used, if its totality is there. Temper irritable; the little children would not let you feel their pulse, they would even resent a look at them and would weep. Nauseatic feeling at the sight of food, even on the very mention of food items; absolute want of thirst and no inclination to drink water—not only for thirstlessness but also for fear of vomiting it may ensue. In order to allay the sense of vomiting or nausea, patient desires always to lie

to the right ; tongue white-coated with red borders and a constant somnolence. This *tout ensemble* if present would indicate Ant. tart. Always look for the weakness, the irritability of temper, somnolence and the embarrassed look for the vomiting and nausea. Ant. patients, specially Ant. children, would not drink milk and milk does not suit them. There is generally a strong desire for taking sour foods and sour fruits.

Small-pox cases are amply benefitted by this remedy if proper indications are obtained. Here two of such cases are reported.

Case Report No. 1.—A child aged four years, of Sreejut Amrita Lal Bose of Dhanbad, was down with a bad type of small-pox in 1922. I was called in at the last stage when all hopes were practically gone, in fact, the attending physicians declared in so many terms that the child would not survive. It was a confluent type of pox, of a very serious nature, the whole body was full of cracks and rhagades and a profuse quantity of white pus was issuing forth, rather streaming down, from them. There was a "death rattle" and the patient lying comatose, more like dead than alive, I had a desire to give Ant. tart in 200th. potency but I feared that it would be too high and the poor patient would not be able to stand it. I commenced with 6th. every two hours ; after the third dose, the stertor stopped and a good sweet sleep came in ; on the third day, I had to give 200th., as the somnolence appeared to return. Only two doses of 200th, morning and evening, put the child in a fair way towards recovery, though I had to use a few doses of *Hep. Sulph.* high (200) in order to minimise the quan-

tity of pus. They said it was a wonderful cure and that Homœopathy could bring to life practically a dead child.

Case Report No. 2.—The second case was that of my own son (now Dr. Ratan Chandra Ghatak) aged seventeen, fell ill, in 1929, of a horrible type of confluent small-pox, and all hopes were abandoned. The full details of the case are not in point here and will be given later on. Simply I want you to note what a wonderful benefit can be obtained from Ant. tart in these cases, if, of course, proper indications are had. The first onset of the fever was attended with severe cold and shivering, the heat rising up to 105.4° coming down to 103° next morning but to rise again to 104° which was rather constant. A peculiar tormenting symptom appeared, viz, uncontrollable thirst for a big quantity of water but a profuse vomiting, of the whole quantity of water drunk, just after drinking. A few minutes after, he must have to drink again only to vomit as previously.

This sort of peculiar thirst would not give the patient a full time rest, and therefore seemed to exhaust him very much. Condition,—high heat, suffused red eyes and there was a drowsiness but no sleep. We could not suspect from all these that it was a primary condition of small pox. On the third day I was given to understand that Ratan, only a few days back, had been invited to dine at a friend's place where a few cases of small pox had then been convalescing. Upon this I called in my dear colleagues Dr. G, Dirghangi and Dr. K. K. Roy and they advised to give Belladonna, which did not give out any the

least impression even on 30th or 200th. In fact that sort of peculiar thirst followed by almost immediate vomiting, rather misdirected our minds. It was a circumstance which can never be clothed in apt words and expressed with the help of language. I prayed to God at the bed-side of my dear and only son and with tearful eyes I craved for His unerring guidings. On the fourth night I could mark that my son would irresistibly lie to the right in order to relieve the vomiting. My attention was directed to Ant-tart though I much faltered to administer it on account of the thirst which was rather misleading. On the third day owing to suspicion of on-coming small-pox I had given *Variolinum* more as a routine remedy than a symptomatic. Now, on the fourth day, I gave Ant-tart 6, only two doses at two hours interval, which produced a healthy sleep for three hours. The usual thirst and vomiting now appeared again upon which I gave three graduated doses of the remedy in 200th potency. From the evening the fever commenced to lower down and towards the dawn it was found that my poor son was full of pocky eruptions, rather thick with them. I understood that a hard fight was coming on and if that serious type of small-pox would *develop*, there was hardly any chance of his life. But through the grace of God and through His eternal mercy to the humble, my son was saved. A full detail of the case will be given later on. So much so here only to give you an idea as to the valuable work of *manifestation*, which is, in fact, a *setting in of the process of cure* and thus helping the *influx* which is so essential for a true cure.

One word more in this connection and I have done. In the premonitory symptoms of small-pox attended with high fever, the presence of thirst need not direct your attention to any other remedy if other symptoms of Ant-tart be present. But you should note that Ant-tart has the peculiar efficacy of bringing out and developing the eruptions of pox but it can not abort. *Variolinum* and *Malandrinum* have certainly that power,—but you are helpless unless you get the symptom-totality of one of those two remedies. So that even the work of aborting rests with *Nature* and the physician is compelled to act according to her directions. Here also physician is absolutely dependent on *Nature*.

Ant-tart sometimes vomits or simply throws off without much effort a big quantity of mucus which looks thready. *Kali-bi* also has that, but the aggravation of the latter remedy is characteristically towards dawn. *Kali bi* is never drowsy.

Ant-tart can hardly to be thought of in miasmatic chronic diseases, because it can not act so deep.

Modality,—aggravation,—rains, during heat, in warm room and on lying upon any other side except right; **amelioration,**—in cold air, open air and lying to the right. General relief from raising the accumulated mucus. Children get their cough aggravated when angry.

Potency,—3, 6 and 200 are in general use; 1000 has also been used with nice effect. The indication of on-coming relief is generally a healthy sleep instead of somnolence or coma; and also when the stertor diminishes.

APIS MELLIFICA.

Anti-psoric }

It is a nice remedy having a very deep action. Though it has not been included within the anti-psoric group, yet I have repeatedly observed its anti-psoric action and I am strongly of opinion that it should be taken as a deep anti-psoric remedy.

Picture,—Unless an all-round picture of a remedy is retained in mind, a pure Homœopathic prescription cannot be expected from disconnected symptoms of a remedy. It is not much difficult to bear in mind the symptomatic picture of this remedy. *Burning, stitching, stinging* and *soreness* are the words that qualify almost all the conditions that can be brought in by this remedy. Stinging pains, as from the stings of bees and wasps, associated with a soreness, and a sensitiveness to touch—is the idea. Though so much burning is there, the remedy is *without thirst*. There may be œdematous swelling as is found after the stings of bees, which pits on pressure. It is a right-sided remedy and symptoms crop up more in the right side. Lastly, it has a drowsiness or somnolence as a characteristic. Along with all those you should also remember that the remedy has a diarrhœa in which the anus appears to remain open so that even on slight movemets the stools escape. Just add its mentals and its modalities, and you get the whole picture of Apis in a nut-shell.

Mind,—Tearful, mixed with irritation and sensitive-ness; sad, dejected, hopeless; the children are intensely fidgety, they cannot remain quiet, must be always on the “go”; moving and moving, nothing

appears to give satisfaction ; it is a *nervous* expression. During illness, averse to touch ; themselves restless but do not desire being moved or touched. Awkward, specially the little girls are so ; they will let things fall from their hands ; they cannot keep their fingers quiet,—a nervous restlessness technically called *fidgetiness* ; jealousy, enviously set specially against the companions. The remedy has a touch of *indifference* too. A few remedies are there, viz. *Phos*, *Zinc*, *Sepia*, etc. which have a shade in each in its mental sphere just like Apis and should be compared in a few words. *Phos* is fidgety in both hands and feet, but *Phos* is actually chilly though requiring cold in the head and in the stomach. Both may have involuntary diarrhoea, “as if anus is open,” but Apis has no thirst, *Phos* has it and for a profuse quantity of cold water. Moreover *Phos* has a goneness looking like hunger, Apis feels full. Lastly Apis is the hottest of the hot and requires cold bath even in the coldest of seasons. *Zincum* has also fidgetiness but specially in the lower extremities. *Zincum* is a nervous wreck,—trembling, and exhausted as if dying, but has profuse urination, whereas Apis has it very small, sometimes suppressed. *Sepia* is also indifferent and both act upon the uterine sphere,—Apis more in the ovaries and specially the right ovary and *Sepia* in the uterus. Though *Sepia* is sad and weeping and indifferent like Apis, yet they differ in this that *Sepia* acts more deeply than Apis. Lastly Apis can stand any amount of cold bath, in fact she invites it, *Sepia* requires bath but is a “washer woman’s remedy” and is even chilly because she lacks in vital heat.

Modality,—*aggravation*,—in heat, warm room, towards 3 P. M. and after sleep; *amelioration*,—in cold, cold water, cold bath, washing with cold water and cold and open air. Coughing aggravates on lying. Aggravation from touch is a notable fact with Apis.

The above **picture** of Apis must be remembered. You know, for the selection of a remedy that may cure, the totality of symptoms is the only thing required. But you must have to remember that this totality is not simply a *numerical* totality of the symptoms but such a totality as should give you a *living picture* of the remedy, so as to consist of the mentals, with desires and aversions, modalities, nature, constitution, etc. In fact, you are always to distinguish between two things viz, a *patient* of a particular remedy and a patient *with a few symptoms* of that remedy. There may be a perfect Apis patient or there may be a patient with Apis symptoms. An *Arsenicum* patient is quite a different thing from a patient with *Arsenicum* symptoms. I must set an example in order to clear up the position. I had to treat a case of Malarial intermittent fever with *Arsenicum* symptoms. The good worthy physician who had treated and apparently cured the case, got quite bewildered to see that the patient was getting relapses at an interval of a week or so, even though he had used *Arsenicum album* from 12th to 1m. It was a chronic case and the dear doctor was fully confident of his selection of the remedy. I carefully enquired into the case and investigated the reason why there were so many relapses even after the well-chosen remedy. I found that the patient had only a few *Arsenicum symptoms*.

The Arsenicum mind, specially its restlessness was not there and my brother physician thought that it was quite natural for a *chronic* Arsenicum case to be without it. In fact, it was found to have been a case of *Cadmium Sulph* which cured the man permanently. You may get easily confused between an Apis female and a *Pulsatilla* one and if you look only to the *mechanical* totality, you will hardly be able to distinguish. You must have to look to the *genius* of the remedy,—the *essential* feature, the *living picture*, so that you can rightly select.

Swelling, ascitis or anasarca,—Apis is a deep acting remedy and in course of a tedious and long protracted disease, viz fever, diarrhœa, etc, the above ultimate may appear towards the end, as an undesirable complication. What are the symptoms? You know the œdematous spot of Apis pits upon pressure with a tip of your finger. The limbs which swell feel heavy,—even pains may be there, viz, the characteristic stitching pains of the remedy. As an associated symptom and characteristic of Apis, the lower lids of the eyes appear to be like two small bags of water. Moreover the patient is characteristically without thirst, though he is dry internally in the mouth cavity as well as externally,—his body being perfectly dry, burning and without sweat. Urine, very scanty and strong, sometimes suppresses. The patient longs for cold bath and open air and if you keep him in the warm room he will smother.

Now, to **compare** the remedies likely to be used in this condition, viz *Kali Carb*, *Phos*, *Acetic acid*, *Arsenicum alb* and *Apocynum*. You know, *Kali Carb*

is chilly. Though stitching pains like Apis are there in Kali Carb but it has characteristically a swelling of the *upper* lids as an associated symptom. *Phosphorus* gets swelling of the whole face ; moreover, it has the characteristic thirst and as soon as the water drunk warms up within the stomach, it is thrown up. Lastly, Phos wants cold in the head and in the stomach but not an intensely hot remedy as Apis is. *Acetic acid* has a peculiarity that during *fever* it has no thirst, though in diarrhoea, dropsy, diabetes, etc, it has an intense thirst. Moreover, it has a profuse sweat. Though there are other points, I do not think that you require any more for a distinction. *Apocynum* also has a great thirst though water disagrees and is vomited. *Ars* is chilly, and mentally widely different from Apis, as *Ars* has a fear of death and Apis is indifferent ; *Ars* is restless and Apis is drowsy ; *Ars* has a mental inquietude not to be allayed, whereas Apis is rather fidgety ; lastly, *Ars* has a thirst with a peculiar characteristic that it wants water only for a sip each time, because water does not suit and excites nausea and vomiting.

Diarrhoea,—I have already given you an idea of its diarrhoea. It seems as if the anus is open ; in fact, the diarrhœic stool oozes involuntarily. Apis has a general aggravation towards the afternoon but it is peculiar that it has an aggravation of *stool* symptoms in the *morning*. Just remember the group,—absolute want of thirst, burning ameliorated by cold washing and cold bath, stool coming out involuntarily as if the anus remains open, and aggravation of *stool*

symptoms in the morning, though the patient has a general aggravation at 3 or 4 p.m.

Phosphorous has also the involuntary stool, but the following symptoms, viz, intense thirst for cold water and cold drinks which are generally vomited as soon as they get warm in the stomach, intense gone feeling, etc. are absent in *Apis*. *Arsenicum album* has also involuntary stool but *Ars* is an intensely chilly remedy, *Apis* is hot; *Arsenicum* has fear of death and a mental anxiety hardly to be allayed. Lastly, *Arsenicum* stools are scanty and horribly offensive. *Hyocyamus* has also the involuntary stool but it is attended with brain symptoms of a typhoid condition when urine and stool are both passed involuntarily.

Another peculiarity of *Apis* in connection with its diarrhoea, specially of a *chronic* nature, is that the patient startles up or winces if the abdomen is pressed with hand,—indicating intense soreness in the abdominal region.

* *Apis* and in fact all the polychrest remedies have such a wide range of action that it is almost impossible to enumerate all the disease symptoms in which they may be indicated. If the totality of symptoms, characteristic of any of those remedies is present, no matter whatever may be the pathological condition, it will cure. I will illustrate, as in the following, the above principle.

Case Report,—I was quite perplexed during treatment of a child afflicted with frequent fits of spasms and general convulsions. Four days passed yet I could not give him a moment's relief. I got

outwitted and the family abandoned all hopes of a cure. On the fourth day evening, the mother said—"Well, Doctor, the case being very serious, as also finding that you have been doing your best, yet no relief appearing up to now, I have all along been watching the condition of my child and I am almost sure that it has less number of fits whenever it is brought into open air; the whole child also gets better in open air." A few symptoms that were there with the above point directed my attention to Apis, though I had never treated, or rather I did not obtain, till then, a case like this, to be met by Apis. However, two doses of Apis 6 much relieved and another dose of 200 given after five or six hours brought in a complete cure.

Erysepelas—You will be quite struck with the work of Apis in a case of Erysepelas, provided of course, there is a corresponding picture of the remedy. Of all ultimates of acute nature, Erysepelas perhaps is the most horrible,—the disease-process being formidably rapid. It generally comes all on a sudden. A man is quite all right, suddenly he feels a small swelling over some inflammatory point,—by and by the swelling gets extended and continues extending rather rapidly, and on come all the associated symptoms, viz fever, redness, horrible swelling, burning, tenderness and so forth. If you cannot, with the help of the indicated remedy, stand against the onward rapid course of the disease, the sure chance is that the affected spot will decompose and the patient has to fight with a septic type of fever which is very hard to combat. The above symptoms are all *common*

of the *disease* and so never sufficient for a *homœopathic* prescription. It you find absence of thirst along with the fever, the swelling to be œdematous (i. e. pitting on pressure), drowsiness and relief from cold and open air, Apis is the remedy for the case. In a few cases it has been observed that though the whole patient wants cold, cold washing, cold and open air, yet the affected spot needs warmth, but still Apis must be the remedy. I would like to impress upon your mind one fact that you may meet with this discrepancy in very many cases of other remedies too, viz, whole patient wanting one thing but his parts or the disease manifesting spots or the painful portions of his body requiring just the opposite. Here *the general modality* will govern. In these cases of Apis Erysepe-las, urine is generally scanty or altogether suppressed. Whenever the curative impression is produced after the administration of Apis, you will find the very first indication is generally increase of urine. In advanced cases of Erysepe-las needing Apis, the abdomen is generally found to be tender, so much so that, if you press over it, the patient startles up.

Now, if in the above case, instead of drowsiness, the patient is restless, attended with a relief, *general and local*, from warmth and covering,—it is *Rhus tox.* Or, if instead of all the above pictures, you get the following totality, viz face and eyes suffused red, the affected spot is also red of scarlet type, throbbing pulse and carotids, high fever, inclination to sleep but inability to do so, because as soon as the patient closes his eyes he startles up, for he may see horrible visions,—it is *Belladonna* and *Belladonna* only.

Urticaria, Wheals, &c.—There is a skin disease, named Urticaria, that commences with itching and afterwards swelling over the spots, and after some time, the swelling vanishes away. This disease is much irritating to the skin as also annoying to the mind. Itching constantly and swelling over the parts,—this makes the patient quite restless. It is a form of *eruption*, though the swelling goes away after some time,—yet it is a kind of eruption, and if it is somehow *suppressed*, serious consequences may follow. Such is the case with other eruptions, viz, measles, pox, scarlet rashes, &c. Apis may be used in any of these eruptive diseases, if symptoms agree. The same *general* symptoms will be found in Apis cases, viz,—burning, aggravation from heat, relief from cold and open air, somnolence or drowsiness, absolute want of thirst, &c. There may also be fever associated with the Urticaria.

You will remember that though Apis does much good in *acute* cases of Urticaria, but in *chronic* ones, that is, in the case of those patients that have a frequent attack, or, have a *miasmatic tendency* to get the Urticaria every now and then, Apis can hardly do any good ; in which case, *Natrum mur*, and more often *Calc. carb* would be needful. *Natrum* is complementary to Apis, you know, and both of them are hot, whereas *Cal. carb* is chilly, fair, fat and plump. Every where the *patient's picture* is needful. *Rhus* may also be indicated, if the patient is chilly and violently restless with fever during the eruption.

Scarlet fever and other Eruptive diseases,—There is a general impression that there is no case of Scarlet

fever in our country, for the medical men so teach, hence the idea. But I would ask you to remember that a disease is not peculiar to any country or region, but to the *system* invaded. The measles which are generally found to abate in course of four to five days, may bring violent set of symptoms, even brain complications, if the patient happens to be badly *miasmatic*. Of course, it must be admitted that cases of Scarlet fever is rather few and far between in our country, but you must have to be ready with the remedies that are generally indicated in this dire disease, so that you may not be outwitted when any case actually comes to your hand ; moreover, a case may not be a *technical* Scarlet fever, but only a severe type of measles ; there also your remedies will do a great help. What is there in a *name*,—Measles or Scarlet fever, the symptoms are there, and I have seen cases of Measles which are none-the-less dreadful and fatal. It is found that little boys are the special subjects of the eruptive diseases.

But what is a Scarlet fever ?—You may ask. It is a type of serious eruptive fever, with this peculiarity that the eruptions are *not discrete or separate* but the whole body swells up into a red, rather scarlet, mass, with violent brain symptoms. The most dreadful Scarlet fever is called Sydenham fever,—a type as dreadful and fatal as full of violent symptoms and complications. The course of the disease is generally rapid, but in a few cases, it may be comparatively slow. In the Sydenham type, *Belladonna* is generally the remedy. In reality, in most cases of this type, indications of *Belladonna* are found. Be that as it may,

in ordinary cases, other remedies also are found to be suitable and curative.

In Scarlet fevers of ordinary type, the eruptions are found in most cases to be of discrete nature, and, in the rest, of a mixed type, i.e. discrete and confluent. In any case, a dreadful and red hue of the whole body and of the eruptions, attended with a high fever of congestive type is essential. The real danger comes from the *sparing* development of the eruptions, or non-development, or their re-percussion, due to the psoric taint in the system. The serious complications like brain-typhoid, Diphtheria, and more generally, meningitis may develop in these cases.

Apis may be indicated in the *initial* stages of fever and eruptions in any of those eruptive diseases, viz, Measles, Scarlet fever, etc., as also when, as a result of non-development or re-percussion, any of the complications mentioned above comes up; during the initial stages, the *general* symptoms of Apis may be found, viz, fidgety restlessness, mixed with somnolence, high fever rising to the highest at about 3 p.m., absolute want of thirst, dry and burning skin, relief from cold washing and in cold and open air, aggravation from covering and lying in the warm or closed room, etc, etc. In Apis cases, if the fever is allowed to run on, complications may arise in more ways than one. The throat may be involved and Diphtheria may come, and if so, inflammatory symptoms with stitching pains in the throat may ensue, after which a full-fledged Diphtheria may appear. It must be remembered that the *general* symptoms of Apis, the *constitutional* picture, is always to be looked to. Never rely upon

the so-called *pathological* matters. Now, if instead of Diphtheria, brain symptoms show forth, still, if the *Apis picture* continues, you will get ample benefit from *Apis*. In *Apis* cases, generally meninges are affected, and inflammation commences there. You know "meninges" are the covering portion of the brain, and when congestion and inflammation set in there owing to the continued high temperature, it is called Meningitis. The premonitory symptoms of Meningitis are *stitching pains* during Typhoid condition of the fever. In *Apis*, the patient commences to roll the head over the pillow and to cry a sudden shrill cry, called 'the cephalic' cry or 'the brain-cry' at certain intervals, from which you are to know that meninges have been involved; for the latter, I mean, the sudden shrill cry is a *necessary* indication of the on-coming meningitis. In addition to the said cry, and the rolling of the head, you must have to look for other symptoms of *Apis*, viz. œdematous condition of the whole body, bag-like swelling of the lower lids of the eyes, tenderness of the abdomen, drowsiness, scantiness of urine or total suppression, relief from cold and open air, etc, etc. You also know, that if after the administration of *Apis*, urine increases, it is a sure indication of the good action of the medicine.

Now, let us compare—*Bell*, *Bry*, *Helleborus*, *Ars*, *Zincum meta*, *Sulph*, *Cuprum meta*, *Glonoine* and *Rhus tox*, each of which has a similar condition.

Bell,—High fever, sweat on covered parts, red and suffused eyes, body crimson red, throbbing carotids; *Apis* has much excitement instead of exhaustion, with nervous fidgetiness; *Apis* is drowsy but *Bell*, though

inclined to sleep, startles up as soon as it enters into it; Apis is pale and never red like Belladona. The whole aspect of Belladona patient is scarlet red and full of congestion but never pale œdematous like Apis. Regarding *modality*, Bell aggravation commences just at and after midday and midnight, whereas Apis has characteristic 3 P. M. aggravation. Regarding *pains*, both have burning but in Apis the burning is associated with stinging, in Bell with throbbing. Lastly, Bell wants warmth and covering, and has sweat on covered parts, whereas Apis is badly hot and dry and wants uncovering, washing with cold water, being relieved from cold and open air.

Bryonia,—Intense thirst, and for a profuse quantity of water at long intervals, whereas Apis is characteristically thirstless; Bry is aggravated from movements, Apis is fidgety and restless though it appears drowsy; the painful spots of Bry are relieved by pressure but those of Apis are sensitive. Of course, Bry wants cold but not characteristically as Apis does; at the first onset of brain symptoms, Bry patient appears as if chewing something, Apis commences to roll the head. After the period of excitement and congestion Bell cases may run into *Bry*, *Apis* or *Helleborus*. If there is a history of non-development of eruptions or of re-percussion after they were out, any of the remedies, viz.,—*Bry*, *Apis*, *Helleborus*, *Cuprum*, *Zinc. met*, *Sulphur*, etc. may be indicated. We have finished with Bell, Apis and Bry. Let us come to the others of the group.

Helleborus,—If after the excitement of Belladona or the nervous restlessness of Apis, brain symptoms

deepen with non-reaction and deep lethargy, Helleborus may come in, if the following symptoms also appear. Total loss of consciousness, want of reaction, corrugated forehead with cold sweat, lower jaw fallen and the patient appears as if chewing something like Bry, as also moving involuntarily one hand and one foot. Helleborus has deep unconsciousness, far deeper than Bry or Apis. Apis is thirstless, Helleborus appears to have great thirst, and though he can not ask for water, yet strongly bites the spoon with which water is given; Helleborus patient is chilly and wants warm room and covering,—both of which Apis resents. Moreover, Apis has a tenderness in the abdomen, Helleborus *can not feel* at all. Lastly, the sooty nostrils, a characteristic point in Helleborus, are never found in Apis. The main point, which will differentiate at once, is the *sensitiveness* of Apis and *absolute want of feeling* in Helleborus.

It is unfortunate that, though Helleborus so full of typhoid symptoms, has no depth of action and so cannot be expected to bring in a perfect cure. But it has the power of producing a reaction when some deeper remedy may be indicated which cures.

The *sequence* or the *order* in which the above remedies may be indicated should be remembered. *Bell* has *more excitement* but *less typhoid* symptoms. Just after excitement passes away and in place of the rapid course and violent nature, a slower course and a less violent condition creep in, generally Bry comes to the scene—with constipation, a thick dirty coated tongue, thirst for a profuse quantity of water at long intervals, with aggravation of all symptoms

from motion, etc. After Bry, either *Apis* or *Helleborus* may come in, in case the disease process continues and has not already been stopped by any of the indicated remedies; it is *Helleborus*, when there are the "chewing something", the intense thirst but with deeper typhoid-symptoms i.e. loss of consciousness more pronounced; and it is *Apis*, if there is absolute want of thirst and a sudden shrill cry technically called the *cephalic cry* is there; of course the rolling of the head is present in both. At this stage, if, instead of re-action, it appears that the patient is getting spasms, specially where there is a history of non-development or repercussion, *Cuprum metallicum* may come in. But you should always remember that both *Helleborus* and *Cuprum* are more cold than with high temperature; you should also remember that *Cuprum* spasms begin in the extremities and run towards the centre (opposite *Cicuta virosa*), that thumbs are clenched, vomitings set in, the whole body turns blue, and the eyes roll from side to side.

But when there is an absolute want of reaction and a tendency of the patient is found to lie on the cemented floor with a desire for cool open air with apparent aggravation from moistening with water, you may think of *Sulphur*.

Glonoine,—This remedy is in a line with *Belladonna*. Excitement and congestion, being on a par with that remedy with a very few brain symptoms, the patient feels as if his head is growing larger and larger. There are other symptoms as in *Belladonna*. A vomiting is generally found in *Belladonna* and more in *Glonoine* which is technically called 'brain vomiting',

because it is never a stomach symptom there but a reflex symptom due to brain complication. In Glonoine when brain is involved, the cephalic cry ensues as in Apis.

Rhus-tox,—*Apis* and *Rhus-tox* are inimical, and if one is really indicated and the other has actually been given, the mistake can not easily be rectified. There is a chance of confusion between them, only due to the fact that *Apis* sometimes appears, restless like *Rhus*, though *Apis* is only *fidgety*, and *Rhus* is really *restless*. Now, you should look to other symptoms for a distinction. *Rhus* is chilly, *Apis* is hot; *Rhus* wants warm room and covering, whereas *Apis* resents both of them. Moreover, *Apis* is drowsy along with the nervous fidgetiness, *Rhus* is never so.

Ars. alb.,—These two remedies, viz, *Apis* and *Ars*, are really two poles asunder. *Apis* is drowsy and sometimes fidgety restless, *Ars* is never drowsy but always restless; *Ars* has intense fear of death, *Apis* is indifferent. Of course, *Apis* has a faint aspect of fear of death but it is of no consideration being only a nervous manifestation,—*Ars* has it in a characteristic form. Moreover, the mental condition of *Ars* is most deplorable because no consolation can allay its mental anxiety. *Apis* is characteristically thirstless, *Ars* has a violent thirst but can take only in sips because water fearfully aggravates the nausea; *Ars* is the chilliest of the chilly, whereas *Apis* is the hottest of the hot.

Zincum meta,—The condition of this remedy is horribly low, consequently unconsciousness and zymotic condition are deepest of all the medicines

in this group. Of course, during the course of typhoid fever or meningitis, there is a stage when symptoms of excitement, howitly faintly expressed, are found, viz., rolling of the head like Apis; but the sudden starting up during sleep and condition of being terribly frightened just when the sleep breaks up, specially *involuntary movements of the lower limbs* are never found in Apis. But, as a matter of fact, when *reflex* symptoms are no more, the sphere of Zincum meta, really begins. Moreover, shaking of the limbs, a special characteristic of Zinc is not to be found in Apis. Of course, the non-development of eruptions or their re-percussion may be the cause of all disorders in many of the remedies, as in Zincum too. The real picture of Zinc or its full particulars being not necessary here, the points of distinction are only given here. Lastly, Zincum is chilly, whereas Apis is hot.

During the work of comparison many of our deep-acting remedies have been brought here side by side, but you should remember that whether the immediate *cause* be non-development of eruptions or the re-percussion or any other, and the resulting disorder be named zymotic fever or typhoid fever or meningitis or hydrocephalus, etc., the one thing which should solely direct your attention is *the totality of symptoms* which can only give you *the picture* of the vital disorder which is *the real disease*. Neither the exciting cause nor the names of the manifested so-called disease are of any value for a Homœopathic prescription.

Diphtheria.—Apis is indicated in that terrible disease called Diphtheria, There is a considerable

swelling in the throat, the uvula appears like a small bag full of water. There may be blebs on the sides of the tongue and associated with all these, there must be stinging pains, burning, and intense soreness. The patient can not swallow warm things which aggravate but cold things he can swallow which ameliorate. Apis patient, you know, is relieved from cold and cold air and can not stand covering. If you cover an Apis patient or keep him within a warm room he will smother. A drowsy condition is also there, scantiness of urine or it is entirely suppressed. Apis has a right-sidedness, so that all its disease-symptoms prefer the right side. Diphtheria also generally attacks the right side of the throat. You also know that Apis is aggravated after sleep, in heat of fire or sun-rays, and is ameliorated by open air, cold, cold air, etc. You should also remember that in spite of high fever it has no thirst.

Let us compare *Lachesis*, *Lyc*, *Baptisia* and *Lac. can.* *Lachesis* diphtheria first invades the left side and then may extend to the right; *Lycopodium* first attacks the right side and then the inflammation may extend to the left. But *Lac. Can.* does not confine to one side only. The very nature of *Lac. Can.* is to commence in one side (generally the left) and after a few hours or few days change to the other. Then again it returns to the original side. This may continue and different sides are invaded at different times. But *Apis* confines only to the right side. In *Lachesis* diphtheria, cold water is as soothing as in *Apis* and aggravation from swallowing warm water and after sleep more prominent in *Lachesis* than in *Apis*. More

over, Lachesis patient finds much difficulty in swallowing liquid things though is ameliorated by swallowing solid things. Lac. Can. has also sensitiveness as in Apis and Lachesis, specially in the outer side, but Lac. Can. feels special difficulty in *empty* swallowing, and curiously enough it has a special inclination for empty swallowing. *Baptisia* has a characteristic offensive smell and finds relief in swallowing liquids but finds difficulty from swallowing solids, so that on this point *Baptisia* is just opposite to Lachesis. Of course, Apis, Lachesis and Lyco, all the three are aggravated after sleep. Though Lyco has the right side first affected as also aggravation after sleep and a special aggravation in the after-noon like Apis, yet they differ greatly in one point, viz., Lyco wants warm things to swallow, Apis cold things.

Urinary organs.—Apis acts very nicely in the urinary spheres, and the central action of Apis in that sphere is to decrease the urine or to altogether suppress it. Apart from that, in the urethral canal there is felt a violent burning, constant urgency to urinate, yet ineffectual almost every time, and after much effort a few drops of urine pass which burn the passage vehemently; sometimes bloody urine or pure blood comes out. The main point is *violent burning* and associated with it, *a constant urgency but ineffectual*. Of course, *Cantharis* has burning of greater intensity, but Apis has also some other considerable pains. In *Cantharis* burning predominates, in Apis the stinging pains predominate; *Cantharis* fits acute conditions, Apis both acute and chronic. The intensity and violence of *Cantharis* differentiate it from Apis.

Moreover, Apis is thirstless, Cantharis has violent thirst, though water aggravates the urinary symptoms. Cantharis is restless, whereas Apis is drowsy, though nervously fidgety. Lastly, the chordee of Cantharis is absent in Apis.

Female organs.—Apis has a special affinity for the diseases of the right ovary, where it manifests stinging pains, soreness, and inflammation. In the beginning there may be an accentuated desire for coition but by and by, as tenderness of the organ increases, coition becomes impossible. Even tumors have been formed in the right ovary; we know, if at the commencement of youthful periods, the menstruation stops and tumors are formed with the above symptoms, local and general, Apis will cure. Apis girls are generally fidgety and awkward, so that things fall off from their hands.

* You know tumors or any new growths like warts, condylomatas, epitheliomas, goitres etc., are *not diseases* but they are the *results of disease*. The vital force is always towards the formation of growths; if there is no disorder in her, she will develop the human system in a healthy way, but if there is a disorder in her (which is called *disease*) she will form but will *mal-form*, will grow but will *mal-grow*. So that, whenever you will be asked to cure a tumor or any mal-growth, your point is to cure *the vital disorder*, so that growth will continue in a healthy way and the mal-growths will die away from *inanition*.

Intermittent fever.—Apis has intermittent type of fever but in acute form it does not take the intermittent form but rather the remittent. Let us first come to the picture of intermittent type of Apis fever and

then the other types. Apis intermittent generally commences at 3 p. m. with a cold stage when the patient drinks only once or twice. The characteristic point in connection with the cold stage is that notwithstanding cold and chill, the patient cannot tolerate warmth, warm room, or covering. If you keep him within a closed room he will smother. There is thirst in no other stages, but the patient desires cold, cold air and open air. In the hot stage, he has some head pains. From beginning to end the patient has a difficulty of breathing, a drowsy mood with fidgety restlessness and dry skin. The heat is rather prolonged and after some time it leaves off. The patient has generally an inordinate desire for sleep.

Remittent fever.—The characteristic point in connection with this type are somnolence and total absence of thirst. In some cases, there may be thirst and where there is, it is of *Bryonia* variety, i. e., for profuse quantity of water but at long intervals. Be that as it may, there is characteristic inability to remain in a closed room or to cover the body; a constant desire for cold and open air. *Bryonia* should be compared with. *Bry* has intense head-pains ameliorated from pressure; obstinate constipation and aggravation from motion,—all these are absent in Apis. Moreover, Apis has dry skin, *Bryonia* has sweat, even on small exertions. *Bry* pains are ameliorated from pressure, Apis pains have a sensitiveness. Moreover, Apis aggravates at 3 p. m.,—*Bryonia*, rather in the morning. Lastly, *Bry* has irresistible thirst, Apis is characteristically thirstless and if there is a thirst in Apis, it is only an exception.

Typhoid fever.—The typhoid fever picture of Apis has already been given. Sometimes in the course of a remittent fever, typhoid symptoms come in and meningitis may develop. Perhaps *Bell*, *Bry* or some other indicated medicine has been given but still fever has not abated and meningitis has developed. In such a case, Apis may be indicated, and its symptoms have already been given when describing scarlet fever symptoms and a comparison with kindred remedies has also been appended.

Heart.—Apis can affect the heart as well. In an Apis heart case, the patient cries out,—“how would it be possible for me to take another breath”, so much difficulty of breathing the patient feels. There are stinging pains in the heart-region along with palpitation, restlessness, anxiety, etc. You are to compare here this condition of Apis with *Lachesis*, *Ars*, *Kali-Carb*, *Spigelia*, *Digitalis*, *Apocynum*, etc. The comparison shall be given by and by, later on, in course of other remedies.

Eye.—There are various diseases of the eye in which Apis may be useful. You need not look to the *names* but the totality of symptoms is only important. In Apis eye cases, you will generally find the lower lids swollen, the orbits also swollen, the inner portion of the eyes red, and hot tears coming forth from the eyes associated with itching, burning and stinging pains; all inconveniences are ameliorated by cold, cold water and open air and aggravated generally from heat and at 3 or 4 p. m. Just remember only three things in connection with Apis eye cases.

The stinging pains suddenly felt, œdematous swelling, and violent burning ameliorated from cold.

If the above symptoms are present, you should always think of Apis, whatever may be the *name* of the disease,—no matter. There is a chance of confusion between this remedy and two others, viz., *Rhus tox* and *Arsenicum alb.* *Rhus* has violent restlessness, tendency to suppurate, the pains are aching and drawing which are aggravated by cold and damp weather, and the time of aggravation is generally after midnight. *Ars* has restlessness, mental anxiety, aggravation from cold, relief from heat and covering, and aggravation after midday and midnight. The tendency to suppuration is least in Apis, even almost absent; *Rhus* has a greater tendency to suppurate and *Ars* has the greatest and you know *Ars* discharges are excoriating, so that *Ars* generally produces ulceration in the eyes.

Abortion,—I forgot to tell you that our illustrious Dr. Hering made a note that Apis *in lower potencies* has a peculiar tendency to *abort*. It is a most valuable hint, so as to be able to cure the abortive tendency of the females with the help of Apis. It has been observed that Apis is specially useful to cure that tendency if the abortion takes place during the earlier months of pregnancy, say, up to the third or fourth months. There are many other remedies in our *Materia Medica* which can abort and therefore can cure the tendency. For example *Sepia*, if it occurs from the fifth to seventh months. *Sabina*, *Secale* and *Crocus*,—towards the latter period of pregnancy; *Aconite* and *opium* as a

result of seeing dreadful visions. Apis,—in the second, third or fourth months. Of course, in every case, there must be *symptom-similarity*.

Acute Rheumatism,—Apis has many times been found to be indicated in acute Rheumatism if the following symptoms are present viz. œdematous swelling on the affected spot which pits upon pressure ; intense sensitiveness, burning, and the characteristic stinging pains of Apis ; aggravation from hot application and on movement. Technically, you may call it Rheumatism or Synovitis or anything as you may like,—the symptoms are there and if they correspond, no matter whatever may be the name of the disease-results, there must be a cure.

The above disease conditions are generally found to come under the curative control of Apis, and if the above picture and symptom-totality of Apis be found in a particular case, it will cure. It is not possible for any body to enumerate all the disease-symptoms where Apis may cure.

* One word regarding *prescription*. After recording all the symptoms of a particular patient, if it is found that there is only *one* remedy in our Materia Medica which corresponds with the constitutional totality, mental and physical ; but unfortunately it is also found that the remedy *has not*, in any of the up-to-date provings, produced the particular so-called disease or *has never been able to cure* it so far it is known ; what should be done under such a predicament ? You should know that the above remedy *will* cure. A case is in point.

Case Report,—Sreejut.....Adhikary, M. A., a Head master of a High School in the district of Manbhum, came under my treatment in August, 1917. He got *fistula in ano* from which he had been suffering for the last 13 or 14 years with recurrent inflammation, intense tenderness, suppuration and finally healing up after discharge of pus. Many of his friends had advised him operation but as he was a highly educated man and had been somewhat initiated into the Homœopathic philosophy, he did not agree to the proposal. He had himself used *Calc-Phos*, *Nitric acid*, etc., many times and in various potencies but they did no good. He was rather discouraged and placed himself under my care and treatment. I just quote the following from his case records.

“In 1901, I had an attack of a protracted blood dysentery and having had no benefit from the Allopathic treatment, I came to Purulia and placed myself under the treatment of a famous and able Kabiraj, who saved me that time. Six or eight months later I found that I was suffering from a particular symptom which was rather highly inconveniencing for me. It was *not painful* at all but gave me a sort of *discomfort* only. It was this that I began to lose control over my stool, I could not retain it, and as soon as there was an urgency, the stool would slip out. I commenced to tie up a rag upon the rectum, so that the stool might not come out. After a few months I found that there was felt a sudden pain starting up in the rectum and running upwards. The pain was sharp and sudden but curiously enough it was found that the

stool did not escape and I stopped using the rag. The sudden on-coming and the sudden going-off nature of the pain directed my attention to *Belladonna* which gave me no benefit though I used it in different potencies. In march 1903, I had to suffer from a violent remittent fever lasting for a week or so, and the pain above referred to was rather intensified along with the course of the fever. By and by, it was found that it was an *inflammatory* fever, the anal region becoming more and more tender, then inflamed and a big abscess was formed there. The above pain commenced to appear every ten or fifteen minutes, which used to squeeze out my life, as it were. An Allopathic physician was called in, who declared it to have been the initial stage of *rectal fistula*. However, in course of a week or ten days more, the abscess broke and healing commenced. The healing was complete within a fort-night but a feeling that there was something like a ball in the anus remained all along. After two months or so, the inflammation repeated but the above pain after having appeared for a few times was no more. Healing in the second time was also complete within 8 or 10 days ; but this scene of inflammation and formation of a small abscess, now used to be enacted at an interval of every two months or so. (I observed that the hands of this gentleman were very much fidgety and he persisted in moving and playing with several things that were on my table). I had to ask many questions in order to elicit a few symptoms in connection with the case ; I need not repeat those questions, and his replies only are given as in the following.

"Soreness and burning almost constant and of a violent character. The stitching pains also appear, during which I desire to go altogether naked, and as a matter of fact during the night I cannot wear clothes. During the aggravation of rectal inflammation,—fanning, sprinkling of cold water, in fact, in any way, cooling the affected spot, much relieve. Further, I have noticed that during the inflammation, quantity of urine is much reduced and it gets stronger.

"I am fond of bath, cold bath and I enjoy it even twice or thrice a day. I have hardly any sweat and I feel that if there is any, I shall get much relief. There is no peace in my mind, it is restless,—I want to go here, there and everywhere in order to find some relief. Loneliness I want, perhaps due to the dejection of my mind. When there is a violent burning in the crown of my head, I get quite indifferent. Generally good sleep, but I am remarkably worse after it breaks up".

No further symptoms I could obtain. After much study and thought, I fixed upon *Fluoric acid* which was given in 200th. and 1000th,—but no relief was forthcoming in course of 3 or 4 months. From the mental and constitutional symptoms I was thinking of Apis but the local symptoms were absolutely wanting in it. But I could not find any similarity with any of the other remedies and so, though reluctantly, I gave Apis 1m. Relief was obtained within a few days and by and by the patient progressed very well. At last after a few months I had to give a single dose of Apis 10m. It brought in a sharp aggravation but an all-round amelioration and finally a perfect cure followed.

Relationship.—*Apis*, in fact, all the polychrest remedies are inter-related. Our worthy doctor *E. B. Nash* has kept for us a hint,—“I do not understand the relationship between remedies and whenever there is a symptom-totality I must give that remedy though it maybe inimical to the one previously used.” Dr. Nash was a very high class Hahnemannian Homœopath and we have not any pretention to gain-say what he has said. It is purely a Homœopathic principle to follow the symptom-similarity everywhere and under all circumstances. But we have observed that, as a matter of fact, inimical remedies *do not* come in at all for being indicated. If for argument’s sake they come, it is better to avoid them ; because where the close observers have clearly found a particular relation between remedies, we should be careful not to disobey them.

Rhus stands inimical to *Apis*. It has also been seen that the animal remedies like *Lachesis*, *Naja*, *Crotalus*, etc. which have an aggravation after sleep, do not follow well after *Apis*. Moreover animal medicines themselves do not follow well one after another. I give you this as my own experience and you may take it for its worth. I have seen that *Lachesis*, when used after *Apis*, brings in a confusion and does not result in a happy cure.

Complementaries.—*Natrum mur*, *Sulph* and *Ars*. *Natrum mur* has been found to be goodly indicated before and after *Apis*, specially in intermittent fevers. *Sulph* complements many of the medicines of our *Materia Medica* and complements *Apis* specially in cases of burning, scantiness of urine, etc. *Arsenicum*

is a chilly remedy and *Apis* is hot, but still they are complementary to each other. In intermittent fever, typhoid fever, erysipelas and in many chronic cases, it has been found that an *Apis* picture all on a sudden turns into an *Arsenicum* one. Moreover, it is seen that *Apis* cases go over to *Ars* oftener than *Arsenicum* cases go over to *Apis*. Lastly, this change is in relation to *symptom-picture* only, but there is hardly any transformation in relation to the *constitutional* aggregate. *Apis* may come in and actually does so, after *Bell* and *Bry*.

Potency,—From 6th. to c.m. equally efficacious.

APOCYNUM.

The remedy is not very deep-acting, yet it is unique in its sphere. It looks like *Apis* because it is generally useful in the self-same disease-symptoms, viz. swelling, **dropsy**, etc., in which *Apis* is. There are people who have not understood *the law of cure* and go on prescribing for so-called *diseases*, e.g., in a case of dropsy they go on prescribing *Apis*, *Apocynum*, *Acetic acid*, *Arsenicum alb.*, etc., one after another, on that erroneous principle. This is no *Homœopathy*.

Apocynum and *Apis* may look exactly equal, because the swelling, the scantiness of urine, the difficulty of breathing, etc. are alike in both, but, as a matter of fact, *Homœopathically* they are widely different remedies. *Apis* has the absolute want of thirst, intense desire for cold, cold air and cold bath; whereas, *Apocynum* is just the opposite, having much thirst,

intense chilliness and aggravation of all its symptoms from cold. Moreover, the stomach of the Apocynum patient is much irritated, so that, vomiting, nausea, loss of appetite, etc. are prominent in the remedy,—the patient, for his relief, wants a profuse quantity of water.

In some cases of dropsy and general anasarca, Apocynum looks like *Ars*, specially owing to the symptoms of stomach irritation present in both, viz. nausea, vomiting, want of appetite; but *Ars* has a restlessness and a fear of death which are wholly absent in the other remedy; moreover, though both the remedies have thirst, yet *Ars* has it of a peculiar type, viz. it calls for water frequently but takes a sip each time only to moisten the mouth, because water does not suit it nor does it like water. Apocynum wants water in a profuse quantity and as a whole patient, he is relieved thereby though his symptoms are aggravated. Something more on this point. You should know that actually there is a war between the Apocynum patient and his desires. He wants water and obtains much relief *as a patient*, but the swellings are badly aggravated; the nausea, the vomiting and the stomach pains as well, are badly aggravated. The real point is that Apocynum wants water but it does not suit; there is a phase in *Apis* during which he wants water and it suits himself and his symptoms. Lastly, you know, Apocynum has hardly any desire for food, *Apis* has no characteristic on that point.

Then again, there is a chance of confusion between Apocynum and *Digitalis*. But if you look to the slow action of *Digitalis* heart and its fear, its

goneness, its want of thirst, etc, you will hardly mistake it for the other remedy. Digitalis has a fear that if he moves, his heart will stop, so that he keeps perfectly quiet. You know Digitalis has a characteristically slow pulse, even, sometimes intermittent.

Acetic acid which generally comes in after Digitalis in these disease symptoms, has much thirst. It has a peculiar characteristic that it has thirst in all other diseases except fever. Moreover, water does not suit the patient. Acetic acid generally lies over the abdomen and cannot lie on back.

Hydrocephalus,—Which is only a form of dropsy, the accumulation of water being in the brain. *Apis* is in most cases indicated in this disease where somnolence predominates. After a continued fever suffered for a long time, the child may get fidgetiness, rolling of the head, etc., and along with these, the head becomes bigger and bigger; a constant sleepy mood is found to associate where *Apis* may be needed. In this condition *Apis*, *Calc. carb.*, *Helleborus*, *Sulphur*, *Zinc*, etc. may be looked to. *Apis* and *Apocynum* both have somnolence,—*Apis* wants cold but is thirstless; *Apocynum* wants warmth and has thirst though water does not suit. In hydrocephalus, there is also a predominance of "brain-cry" in *Apis*. One thing you should learn that almost all diseases involving brain, stool and urine are generally diminished and if they increase after administration of a remedy, it is a sure indication that a favourable impression has already been made by the remedy administered.

The general action of *Apocynum* is that it diminishes almost all the discharges of the human

body and increases the swelling ; even the menstrual discharges of the females, the stools, the urine and even the sweat are diminished. In a few cases it is also seen that a general anasarca comes in after profuse discharges of some kind, a condition in which *China* is generally administered ; but remember that *Apocynum* is sometimes needed, because indicated. You have got the *Apocynum* symptoms as above. *China* has generally a sense of fullness and tympany in the abdomen and profuse sweat. Of course, both the remedies are chilly.

Hydrothorax.—You will take a warning from me before attempting to treat this disease. In Hydrothorax there are a few symptoms, viz. difficulty of breathing, inability to lie down, a sort of anxiety, etc., which are only *common* to the *disease* and so they have hardly any value for a Homœopathic *prescription*. Your attention may be directed to *Apocynum* in Hydrothorax, if you find a thirst for a profuse quantity of water, though the water does not suit at all, associated with somnolence, chilliness etc. Just remember,—the patient does not want anything save and except water and his swelling increases in proportion to the quantity of water drunk.

Case Report.—Wife of Sj. Bansi Badan Karmakar, aged 26 or 27, mother of 3 children, last child having been delivered two years back and since then the menstrual difficulties of various forms arose. Nine months after delivery, there was a small show of the menses and it was seen that dropsical symptoms appeared. During the first few months, some relief was given by Allopathic medicines but during the last

three months it was found that from the head to the chest a uniform swelling appeared by and by, associated with a difficulty of breathing, so much so, that the poor patient was unable to lie. For the whole day and night "she drinks and dozes", she was chilly and having had thirst of that type. Apocynum was given in 30th, 200th, up to 1000th, and she was cured in course of 4 to 5 months. Her menses re-appeared when 200th. was given. A single dose only of 1000th, was necessary.

It is unfortunate that this remedy is not deep enough to cure its patient permanently. But I think it necessary that a general picture of the Apocynum patient should be remembered. A *tout ensemble* is given below. Heavy feeling in the head, a sort of confusion in the brain, comprehension difficult as if a correct and a vivid impression is not made upon his mind by the outer things however interesting; as if the functions of the whole system have been weakened or slowed down; a sort of drowsy condition, yet there is hardly any sound sleep during the night, it being restless and full of dreams; there is no refreshed feeling after the sleep breaks up, rather the patient feels discomforted. Work of the kidneys full of disorders,—urine scanty, strong, hardly profuse and normal; stools semi-solid yet no satisfactory evacuation,—as if there is a condition of paresis in the rectum so that when there is no diarrhoea the stools do not easily come out, but when the patient is diarrhoeic they seem to suddenly come out like a shot and the evacuation is involuntary and cannot be retained; heart is also full of disorders,

the pulse being slow, sometimes rapid, a beat or two may be omitted, an uncomfortable feeling of fullness even after scanty meals and the heart beating correspondingly faster.

After evacuation of stool, the patient feels weak and exhausted and has a gone feeling in the stomach regions. *Aloe* has also involuntary evacuation and feels exhausted after stools, but *Aloe* is hot, whereas *Apocynum* is chilly. Moreover in *Aloe* there is a predominance of mucus in the stools, in *Apocynum* there is none; in *Gambogia* also, stools come out involuntarily but *Gambogia* patient rather feels much comforted after the evacuation.

Hæmorrhoids,—*Apocynum* has a peculiar feeling in the anus as if some body is hammering there over a peg. *Anacardium* has also that sort of feeling in that region but the distinctive feature is that *Anacardium* has much relief after food, whereas *Apocynum* has a good deal of discomfort and a feeling of fullness after meals.

Potency,—6 to 200 in general use. I had no occasion to use it higher than 1000.

ARANEA DIADEMA

Antipsoric }
&
Antisycotic }

Aranea belongs to the *spider* group of medicines. There are lots of remedies in our *Materia Medica* which belong to that group, viz., *Aranea Diadema*, *Mygale Lasiodora*, *Tarentula His*, *Tarentula cub*. All spider remedies characteristically act upon our nervous system.

Before attempting to draw up the picture of *Aranea diadema*, I would ask you to remember that *Aranea* is one of the remedies which can act in a special way upon the *Hydrogenoid* constitution. Now, what do you mean by "Hydrogenoid constitution?" A system which is specially affected by the *wet weather, damp weather and damp days*, is called Hydrogenoid. We can generally call this type of constitution as *Sycotic*, though all sycotics may not be Hydrogenoid. For example, *Calc. c.*, *Natr. sul.*, *Rhus tox.*, *Thuja*, are the remedies which are specially affected by damp weather and you know they are all Sycotic. But *Medorrhinum* is better in damp weather and rains, though it is a deep acting sycotic nosode. However, just remember that *Aranea diadema* acts beneficially upon the Hydrogenoid constitution.

Picture,—The following points are to be remembered in connection with this remedy, viz., (1) *Intermittent* appearance of its symptoms, e. g., its fever is never continuous but comes in frequently at intervals. All its symptoms have a peculiar tendency to appear *at intervals*. (2) Intense *chilliness*. *Aranea* patient is the chilliest of the chilly. He feels cold up to his very bone,—as it were, to the innermost marrow, e. g., the fever paroxysms of *Aranea* have the characteristic of having neither heat nor sweat,—they consist of *chills only* and as the chill passes off, the patient feels "he is all-right." Not only that,—there is another characteristic of the chill. It is very peculiar in that it is never ameliorated by external warmth or covering. (3) I have already told you that it belongs to the Hydrogenoid group and so can not tolerate

rains or damp cold. Damp cold, damp air, bath, living in damp places, even, near water, are intolerable. All its disease symptoms are aggravated during rains. Generally these three things will give you a good make-up of the remedy.

*The physicians that treat fevers by *name* only and are very anxious to *suppress* the manifestations, cannot *cure*, and the *individual* characteristics of the patients and of the counterpart remedies are absolutely unmeaning for them. "Because the patient has got fever with a chill, hence he is to be stamped a *malaria* patient and must be met by a large dose of quinine",—is the only thing they know and they think that the man is "cured". It is impossible to convince them by argument. But those that are anxious for really *curing* their patients, must have to meet each case on its *individual* characteristic. You might have seen many cases of malarial fever which commence during the depth of rains; again, another type of cases which commences towards the end of the rains, or rather just when the humidity of the soil begins to dry up. Out of these two classes, the former type is Hydrogenoid and a typical peculiarity of this type of patients is that they easily get *spleen enlargements*. You should know that the enlargement of spleen is a *sycotic* complication and a special characteristic of the Hydrogenoid group.

Aranea malarial patients get their spleens badly enlarged. Every year the organ gets a bit enlarged during the fever season, and as the fever passes off for the year, the enlargement lessens down a bit and

that is all. Again, in the next year, it gets a bit more enlarged,—and thus, by and by, the spleen gets continually enlarged, so that the patient is termed “spleen enlarged.”

Now, what to do under this circumstance? You are to commence the *Antipsoric constitutional* treatment of the Aranea spleen patient, just after the termination of the fever season for the year, so that he may be permanently cured and the *susceptibility* to get spleen enlargements and to be affected with fever during the rains is removed. When the patient is thus permanently cured, it will be *impossible* for him to be attacked with fever and the resulting enlargement of the organ will be *necessarily* nowhere.

Case Report,—Sreeman Hridaya Ranjan Ganguly, aged seventeen or eighteen, has been suffering from malarial fevers for the last six or seven years. He fell ill of fever every rains and according to the usual course and habit of our people it was suppressed with quinine. In this way the fever used to come and go away frequently up to the commencement of winter and then the fever paroxysms would cease for the year, but the spleen would get more and more enlarged every year. At the time when the patient came to me for treatment, his system was pretty good broken down, a deathly pallor was found upon his body and face, a peculiar out-of-sorts feeling was felt by him, and he said that every night during his sleep his gum used to bleed, so much so, that the pillow used to get painted with blood, and a good area of it would turn red. It was in 1914 that the treatment was commenced when I was a pleader as well at

Purulia. A peculiar type of fever, the predominant character of which was a hard chill, with a very slight heat, at an interval of eight, ten or twelve days. There was a stitching pain felt over the left abdomen, obviously on the spleen, that was very troublesome and he complained much of it. After examining the case and from the history, I thought, many symptoms might have been suppressed and so I first gave him *Sulphur* 1 m. I waited for two months but the patient was no better nor did any suppressed symptom reappear. Upon re-study I fixed upon *Aranea diadema* which commenced its curative action at once. I gave only a few doses of 30 and 200 administered at the end of every fever paroxysm. The pain in the spleen region first disappeared and the fever did not return, after three or four paroxysms more. Moreover, the spleen came to its normal condition by and by. Anti-psoric treatment was needful for the case but it could not be taken up as the father of the patient was away from the place.

* Where there are no tangible ultimates, in form of enlargements of organs and yet the fever paroxysms appear at intervals,—“Fever comes up on the very day that I bathe”, it is *Sulphur*; in a few cases it may be *Psorin*, where bath aggravates as well as there is a constant hunger. But in connection with *Aranea*, just remember a few things like these, viz, simple chill and no subsequent heat or sweat, aggravation in the rains, enlargement of and sticking pains in the spleen, and bleeding from the gums during sleep.

Potency.—*Aranea* should never be used *low*. at least, below 6. It is better to commence with 30th

as the lowest. I have used 200 and 1000 with best success.

ARGENTUM META.

Anti-psoric }
 &
 Anti-sycotic }

Argentum meta,—Metallic silver is one of our deep remedies,—both *anti-psoric* as well as *anti-sycotic*. You know the deep remedies are slow as well, and *Argentum meta* acts as deeply as slowly. Both *metallicum* and *nitricum* are deep-acting and have a special action upon the mind, though *nitricum* acts more deeply in the *mental* sphere.

Human mind consists of *knowing*, *feeling* and *willing*, in other words, Intellect, Sensation and Volition. There is another faculty of the mind, viz, Memory. The memory gives us a power to retain, and then to recollect whenever any necessity arises. *Argentum meta* affects more or less all the functions of the mind. A tradesman, a teacher or a person engaged in any avocation of life which requires at every step a power of sifting, a power of differentiating or separating good things from bad ones ; in other words, he wants a full power of his intellect, but unfortunately, in course of time, he finds that he is becoming by and by quite unfit for the work. He finds that he cannot reason very far or to the point, or he finds that he cannot recollect or can get only a hazy picture in his mind of previous important events. By and by, he becomes dulled, his mental faculties slowed down and he grows rather idiotic. Here, it is obvious that he is diseased

in mind and some of these patients may fit in with *Argentum meta* or *nitricum*, in the light of symptom-totality given for each, later on.

Argentum meta has a special action on the nervous system, specially, the nerves that control the lower limbs. From the small of the back downwards he feels weak and painful. But in spite of that, it is peculiar to find that *rest aggravates and, any exertion specially, the movement of the lower limbs, ameliorates*. Aggravation during rest is a peculiar general feature of this remedy. The mental symptoms that are reasonably expected to be allayed after sleep, are, on the contrary, found to aggravate in *Argentum meta*. So that, in the morning, in fact, after sleep at any time, mind is dull, exhausted and not inclined to act or exert at all. The nervous symptoms also aggravate during rest and after sleep,—the only relief being from walking and exertion. Even during the diseased condition, the patient of *Argentum* must exert and walk about.

Argentum Meta is an intensely *chilly* remedy, so that, the patient wants to live in warmth; specially in cases of neuralgic pains, rheumatism and headache, he has a special desire for warmth to be applied to the painful spots and the patient himself desires for covering. During headache, warmth, tying with pressure and covering are relieving. Of course *Argentum Nitricum* headache is also relieved by bandaging, but heat or warmth cannot be tolerated and the patient wants cold water and cold air over the head. *Magnesia Mur* has also relief from pressure and bandaging, but the constipation and the

evacuation of stool with much effort is peculiar. Mag Mur wants wrapping up the head warmly though no relief comes from it. Next, *Silicea* also desires pressure and covering during the head pains, but the actual relief of *Silicea* headache comes from profuse urination.

The headache is only a particular symptom and if it is intensely acute, then only it needs special treatment, otherwise the patient himself must have to be treated with the help of totality of symptoms, the headache being one of them.

The **sleep** symptoms of Arg. Meta are peculiar. The mental condition rather aggravates after sleep. There are other symptoms which also appear upon entering into sleep or during it,—namely, a sudden jerk, a sort of tremor is commenced to be felt in different parts of the body and by and by it becomes general, so that the patient has to rise up from the bed and actually to walk about for a relief. The restlessness is not like that of *Ars.* or *Rhus*,—this is like aggravation during rest and sleep and amelioration from walking about; *Ars.* or *Rhus* is never relieved by its restlessness. Moreover, *Ars* and *Rhus* have hardly any sleep at all, but if they have, they are very much relieved.

Heart,—The heart symptoms of this remedy are important. Palpitation, with throbbing and tremor, is felt in the heart region, but no pains are felt there. The patient feels as if his heart would stop beating, and curiously enough, his heart works faster just after. You should specially remember, *hurried beating or palpitation and tremor* of the heart, as also, that all the

heart symptoms are aggravated on lying on the back, this is peculiar. The palpitation also increases during rest, during night, during pregnancy and after sleep. Palpitation with headache ; palpitation with vertigo. As soon as the patient enters his room after a good deal of walking, his head would reel and heart will palpitate. You must remember very carefully, that all the symptoms aggravate during rest, and ameliorate during walking and exertion. In this connection, you may also note that the *nitricum* patient must lie to the *left* in order to relieve his heart symptoms, and he cannot lie to the right.

Vocal organs and air passages,—Argentum has a very important action upon there. Those that are habitual public speakers or are musicians, get generally a type of hoarseness to be met by either Arg. meta or Arg. nit. Before dwelling on this subject, I would like to give you a Case on the point.

Case-Report,—Sriman Satis Chandra Sain, of Lakhmipore, Bankura, Bengal, came under my treatment for his hoarseness in November, 1912. He was then a student of the 1st Class in the Rajgram A. S. School where I was the Head Master. His age was within teens,—say, 19 years, apparently, quite a healthy man of energetic habit and cheerful temperament. When I asked him as to the probable cause of his disease, he said, with a deep sigh, "Sir, myself have spoilt my case. You know, I am a poor man, and with an intent to secure the first grade scholarship in the ensuing Matriculation Examination, I have all along been keeping up to the very late hours

of the night, and in order to scare away my sleep, I have been reading much aloud for the last 5 or 6 months at a stretch ; now I find that I have been, by and by, getting hoarse, so much so that I have lost my voice altogether for the last 20 or 25 days. Then again, not only I cannot speak, but I find, over and above, that on the slightest attempt to speak, I must have to cough and cough, for the simple purpose of allaying the itching or crawling within the throat. This is much troublesome, Sir. I think, I have got a sore within there, and I feel a sort of discomfort in my throat." There was no desire in him for cold, nor was there anything to suppose that he wanted cold for even local relief ; moreover, on the supposition that the whole trouble started from and due to his study with a loud voice for a pretty good long time, I fixed upon *Arg. meta*—200, and with the help of a later dose of 1000 of the same remedy, I was successful in curing him for the time. For two long years he was all right, and he went to Jharia, in the district of Manbhum, with a job in the Colliery. Unfortunately, owing to his own fault and misconduct, he got a relapse. Naturally he should have repaired to me, as then, I was practising as a pleader in the Purulia District Court, but he did not think of doing so, and took to Allopathic treatment under a very renowned physician of the place, with the ostensible object of obtaining a *speedy* relief (as he said afterwards). He got, of course, a ready relief from the *local* means advised to be adopted by the Doctor. But, poor thing ! he did not or could not conceive, nor did the Old School physician, of the relentless Tubercular

taint working within him, the seat of its manifestation having been on the throat and that was all. Another relapse still, in 1917, and upon no means adopted having been fruitful this time, as a last resort he had been to me at Purulia ; I found unmistakable signs of T. B. in him,—the persistent nature of the disease-symptom, the high grade of his susceptibility to cold, the onward course of emaciation, said to have been started three years since, the total absence of *individual* and *prescriptive* symptoms, save and except a few *common* ones, pointed my attention to the fatal end staring in the face, and I advised him to go home with my medicine. I had a look into his throat which was full of phagedenic ulcers too deep for the Arg. meta. Arg. meta could not even give him any relief this time, as he was running headlong at the time towards the sure termination. Even *Tuberculinum bovinum* could not produce any the least impression, nor could it allay the slow hectic type of fever. He met his doom after a month and a half he saw me last. Later on, it was brought to my notice that one of his uncles had died of T. B. a few years back.

The **Consumption** of Arg. meta or nitricum, or the T. B. ultimate, appears generally first in the throat and manifests there in the form of *hoarseness*. Of course Arg. is not so deep as to bring in consumptive symptoms and there must remain in the patient a *tubercular* heredity. In any case, all types of hoarseness should be carefully dealt with, because this may be a premonitory symptom or a harbinger of future consumption. It is a pity that people do not take it in that light and

they are inclined to imitate the Allopathic physicians and treat the symptom by local means, and thus lose the most opportune period of time for treating the patient *miasmatically* and thus saving him from the possibility of the oncoming misfortune. To be sure, if *emaciation* once commences in this type of cases, it is with a good deal of difficulty that the patient can be saved. Before commencing treatment of these cases, a sifting enquiry should always be made, as to whether there is any history of tuberculosis of any form in the ancestors, either of the paternal or the maternal side. However, in a case of hoarseness where loud study, or giving of public speeches or loudly singing songs, &c, stands as the exciting cause and where coughing ensues on the slightest use of the vocal organs, that is, talking, laughing, etc. and the patient is chilly, *Argentum* must do good. But if there is a tubercular diathesis lying dormant in the system, in that case *Stannum meta*, *Stannum iod*, *Tuberculinum bovinum*, or some other, may be needful, in accordance with the totality.

All diseases relating to the breathing organs are likely to commence with hoarseness in *Argentum Meta*. Be that as it may, in all such diseases; the chest of the patient feels very weak, esp, in the left side; the patient has to constantly *hem and hawk* during talking and reading, and on the slightest effort, a good deal of white, sticky and lumpy mucus is raised. Voices of different tones are also found to evolve. *Stannum* also has this, esp., the intense weakness in the chest regions is highly characteristic in *Stannum*; the difference is that the

Stannum patient feels a good deal of difficulty when *descending* and not when ascending. Moreover Stannum patient cannot lie to the right,—these two symptoms are not found in Argentum. *Antim tart* has also weakness of the chest, but be it remembered that in *Antim tart* it is a *real* weakness there, so that, there may be actual paralysis of the breathing apparatus, but in Stannum or Argentum, it is more *a sense of weakness* than a real one. Besides that, *Antim tart.* is generally required in acute cases, whereas the other two are useful in chronic ones.

Sexual Organs—A curious action is found of this remedy over the genitals. It acts more on the *right* scrotum but with regard to the females, the *left* ovary is more influenced by it. This is quite peculiar, and a very few of our remedies have such a selective affinity. Right scrotum gets painful and indurated. It swells, aches and burns. The right scrotum is full of pains and tender too. The left ovary is affected so much that even a tumor is formed there,—by and by, it gets painful, hard and tender.

Gonorrhœa.—There might have been a Gonorrhœal attack, perhaps very recently ; the pains and aches are no more, the violent burnings have all ceased, yet the discharge continues,—slowly oozing, the colour being greenish or yellowish, but thick in consistency. If the remedy is otherwise symptomatic, it will cure the *disease* as well as the *miasm*.

The **Prolapsus** of the uterus, ulcerations there, even the condition verging on uterine cancer, may be cured by this remedy, if the *constitutional* symptoms call for it. It has also offensive leucorrhœa,—very

much fetid and the discharge aggravates on motion and exertion. Just remember,—the uterus and the ovaries, specially towards the *left* are much painful and tender.

Penis gets relaxed as a result of long practised masturbation. The patient gets discharge of semen during sleep, without erection.

Potency,—30th to 1000th generally used and there is no reason why the higher potencies will not act.

ARGENTUM NITRICUM.

Anti-psoric,
Anti-sycotic
and
Tubercular.

Argentum nitricum is a deep acting medicine. It is not very easy to get a correct picture of the remedy on account of its various symptoms and conditions that are peculiar. It is full of *mental* symptoms. The *sensorium* principally is deranged.

Our **Mind** is divided into,—Knowing, Feeling and Willing, or technically,—*Intellect, Sensation and Volition*. In Argentum Nitricum, the sensorium is beclouded. Of course, if one portion of the mind gets deranged, the other portions are, by and by and slowly, affected. In Argentum meta, though the sensorium is first of all deranged, but in course of time, the Intellect and the Will are necessarily affected. The mind is weak, tottering; it has no depth, extremely visionary. The mind always

trembles in the balance, apprehensive, full of fears specially for the future. There is no strength in the mind. The patient cannot come to a definite decision after having rightly considered and duly weighed the the *pro's* and *con's*, the *for* and *against* of a particular matter. He is full of *apprehensions*. He qualifies every event, possible or impossible, with the word, *if*,—"if this thing happens, if this event happens, what would be my fate in that case? If the train whistles off before I reach the station, what would I do? In that case, I must lose my case." Of course, even in ordinary healthy minds, there are apprehensions, but only in cases where there is a cause and a justification for them; but the *Argentum nitricum* patient will be unreasonably anxious, even where there is not the least cause for his anxiety. Suppose, he has to go to a place 4 or 5 miles off, and he has started at 2 p. m. on foot. Even a slow snail would be able to reach the place before evening, if it starts the journey at that time, but *Argentum nit.* patient will most anxiously think—"If it gets dark before I reach the place, what would happen to me then?" This thought and anxiety only make him walk faster and faster until he reaches the place. The provers manifested a peculiar urgency to stool and urine, before undertaking a journey or preparing for a meeting or an ordeal. The *idea* is the same—"If this happens, what would be my position?" It is a type of anxiety or a restless mood, on account of the weakness of mind; a sort of "nervousness", a mental fidgetiness. The post-peon has just delivered a letter,—the *Argentum Nitricum* patient is much

anxious. Just on receiving the letter, he will go through it most cursorily at first, and then read by the lines; because he must have first to see that it contains nothing dreadful. Full of misgivings and of anxious apprehensions,—fear, dread and anxiety.

I have already told you that it is very difficult to clearly comprehend the nature of this deep antipsoric. You are to always remember the mental condition, viz. the extreme anxiety and apprehension for the future. The second important feature of this remedy,—a general and continued *emaciation*, a general *drying up* of the body, continuing from year to year;—and these two features are the most important points to be remembered. As an associated feature with this thinning away of the patient, there is another notable fact, to be remembered as well, and that is, that *the lower limbs get more weak and more emaciated*. The patient is thin and withered,—*progressively* thinning and emaciating, though more visible in the lower extremities. You will see that all *acid* remedies, as *Nitric acid*, *Picric acid*, *Phosphoric acid*, &c. are weak in their lower limbs, but except one or two of them, they are all chilly,—whereas Arg. nit., as a patient, decidedly wants cold. There may be many *local* things ameliorated by warmth, but, as a whole *patient*, he must have cold. Another notable characteristic of Argentum Nitricum is found in this,—that the patient is affected and his symptoms are also aggravated, from the *very things that are desired for* by the patient. This is curious. He wants something which will upset. “There is a war between his *inner and outer*.” This is a Tubercular

point, that is, this peculiarity comes from and indicates Tubercular taint in the system. This should have to be explained.

*What do you mean by the "Tubercular taint," alluded to in the above? I am sorry, there is an erroneous impression about the term among the members in our profession, and they do not distinguish between the *taint* and the *developed* condition of that miasm. In fact, by so doing they make a dangerous confusion between the *cause and its effect*. What is meant by the Tubercular taint? It is the *miasm*, the *susceptibility*, the *predisposition* lurking in the organism, and but not the *ultimate* condition, named *Tuberculosis*. Tuberculosis is the *final fruit*, the *ultimate product* of the Tubercular taint or the Tubercular miasm, which is the *cause*. In fact, the susceptibility is the cause or the seed, lying withing the system, and waiting for some *exciting* cause for the tangible development. You will find very many people with that taint within them, yet reaching a good long age of, say, 80 or 90 years, because they had not had any *exciting* circumstances for the development of *Tuberculosis*. The *developed* Tuberculosis is quite a different thing altogether and so must always be distinguished from the Tubercular *miasm*.

*Whenever a sufficient exciting circumstance brings in the developed Tuberculosis, the *seat* of manifestation or development may be anywhere, and a different *name* is only given to it, according to the seat or spot or region where it is manifested. If it occurs in the lungs, it is called, "Phthisis"; in case,

it is developed in the intestines, it is called "Intestinal T. B."; if it selects the brain for the manifestation, it is named "Insanity"; where the seat is the bone tissue, it goes by the name of "Necrosis"; but, suppose, the patient gets a general emaciation and finally dies of slow fever and inanition, it is termed "Consumption", &c. &c. The real thing is there,—it is *decay* and *final death* of the part affected or the whole organism. The point is, that there is no *repair*. The taint has the slow but sure tendency leading to that final condition of non-repair, decay and ultimate death, unless cured, so that the tendency is no more, the tubercular current is dried up and stopped then and there.

*Now, what are the *indications* from which it can be ascertained that the Tubercular tendency is there in the organism of a particular individual? Of course, there are many, but one thing out of the many, viz, the aggravation from the very things desired for by him, is the surest of all. A Tubercular patient is upset with those very things that are wanted,—hence the oft-repeated saying—"There is a war between his inner and outer." More on this by and by.

*The Argentum nitricum patient is also aggravated from and by things which are desired. It is a *curious* thing,—to be upset by a thing a man is fond of. You should know, before I enter into the details of the T. B. taint, in some of my future discourses, that a Tubercular patient is so much unfortunate that besides getting *no* response from those he loves best, over and above, it is found, that he gets an *injury* in

return. Why? Because he has, by his own actions against Nature and Man, alienated all, even those he happens to like best. This extremely awkward predicament he has himself brought about on him by his *wrong* deeds and *wrong* thoughts. He has committed against all and so can never expect good from them.

*You will also get another positive symptom or a clear-cut indication of the Tubercular taint in a man. It is—"He eats well, but steadily and continually emaciates or loses flesh." Just see, he has a voracious appetite, that is, a great deal of love towards "eatables", but what does he get in return? It is,—far from gaining flesh, he has *to lose it*. There is still another characteristic, viz, the man takes cold very frequently,—"how and where", he does not know.

*Well, what should be the *cause* standing at the back of this Tubercular miasm? The cause is a *co-mingling of Psora and Syphilis*. It is not a simple mixture of the two miasms that can bring a Tubercular taint. It must be a *perfect mingling through heredity* which only can give rise to the terrible miasm. The acquired Syphilis through its co-mixture with Psora may give rise to many terrible consequences but in order to obtain the formidable foe, he must have to *inherit in a mingled form* the above pair of miasms. You know every one is Psoric, and so *Tubercularity means,—Syphilis in the father*. There are other causes which can bring in the dire susceptibility, but the hereditary Syphilis is the chief cause. There are many things to be said in this connection and I want to deal with them and give you all the details, by and by.

Headache.—The Arg. nit. headache must have to be dealt with. A sense of weight or fulness is felt, specially a sensation is there as if the head is getting larger and larger. The pains may manifest in a half of the head only but the characteristic sensation is there. Tying up with pressure, simple pressure, open air and cold air are the relieving circumstances. It aggravates on mental labour. The associated symptoms are,—vertigo, nausea and vomiting of biles. The nature of the headache is throbbing and stinging. Often the bilious vomiting relieves. (Comparisons have been given in the Lecture on *Arg. Meta.*)

Eye Symptoms.—In eye diseases, the characteristic condition is that the surrounding parts of the eyes swell up and, associated with this, there is a *thick* discharge (*Nat. mur.* has *watery* discharge.). The eyes get red and in case of infants and children, the cornea may be ulcerated and pus comes out. In eye disease of *Nat. mur.*, the closed room and fire heat are aggravating; cold, cold room, cold air and washing off with cold water relieve. There is much photophobia,—the patient cannot look towards the light, he keeps himself in cold room and in dark. Just compare here with *Apis* which has more swelling in the lower lids, though the whole face appears doughy swollen; *Apis* has also relief from cold and aggravation from heat, so, it is not a very easy task to distinguish it from *Argentum nitricum*. But if you just remember these points, there is hardly any chance of confusion, viz.,—*Apis* has intense burning and stinging pains in the eyes which *Argentum* has not;

moreover Apis discharge is thin, whereas Argentum has it thick.

Throat.—There are a few symptoms in the throat, viz.,—Stick-like or splinter-like pains and those pains are felt when swallowing. This sort of sticking pains are also felt by patients of a few remedies more, for example,—*Dolichos*, *Hep.sulph.*, *Nitric acid.*, *Silicea*, etc. Argentum patient is relieved, by swallowing cold water, from cold air and from living in cold rooms. But in *Hep*, it is exactly the opposite, because a Hepar patient always wants warmth, warm drinks and warm rooms ; even for a moment, in cold days, if he uncovers, his throat symptoms aggravate. In *Nitric acid* there is a pungent smell in urine, though either Hepar or Nitric acid may be needed in syphilitic and mercurialised systems. *Dolichos* has the peculiarity of a constant itching sensation over the skin *without* any eruption at all. *Silicea* has the peculiar constipation and sweats in the extremities. Just mark,—Nitric acid, Hepar and Argentum, all have the “fish bone” sensation in the throat.

Vocal Organs.—Argentum Nitricum is useful in *hoarseness* if it originates and continues as a chronic symptom in those that use their vocal organs constantly, as the musicians, public speakers, professors and others ; if they speak in a bit high tone, they must have to cough.

Digestive Organs.—Before writing anything regarding the symptoms of Argentum Nitricum in the digestive organs, I want to draw your attention to the ulcerating property of this remedy in various

portions in the mucus membranes. It can produce ulceration in any organ after mucus is raised for some time. There may be ulcerations in the throat, in the stomach, in the intestines and various other places. I want first to put in a case from which it will be easy to understand its ulcer-making capacity.

Case Report—Sj.....Kumar Roy, an educated and rich man of Calcutta. Realisation of rents and supervision of building of new houses were the only works he had to be concerned in, and the rest of the time he used to spend in easy conversations with his friends and reading daily news-papers. The present age in Feb. 1929 was 38 or 39 years.

Since when he was 22 or 23, he used to observe that whatever he took, turned, as it were, into a gas, so that, a few minutes after eating, his eructations commenced and this would continue unless and until the digestion finished. He never felt acidity, yet could not digest anything. Acid risings were very few and far between. He would like sweet things most of all and he used to take them, rather, in a good quantity. A physician once on a time warned him against his taking so much sweets as that might bring in diabetes, but still he could not desist from doing so. When he was 29 or 30, he felt that nothing suited him, anything taken in would turn immediately into a gas and *loud* eructations and *loudly* passing winds during the stools were the main complaints. A good deal of tympany was there in his abdomen. That time since, it was found that he was emaciating and emaciating and losing his flesh and energy all the time. A feeling of dull pain, sometimes acute, was also felt on

and off during this time. He was all along timid and of suspicious nature and therefore besides his family physicians he frequently used to get advices from many other physicians and used various patent medicines but having had derived no benefit therefrom, and more specially his emaciation having all along been continued, he thought of Ayurvedic treatment and placed himself under two or three highly educated and renowned Kavirajas of the town. Continued treatment under them for three long years and changes to various places as advised by them, he found no benefit and at last again at his 37th year took to Allopathic treatment for a period of six or eight months. During this treatment, repeated X' Ray photos were taken and it was ascertained that he had patches of ulcers in his intestines. The patient now understood the reason why he had all along been getting pains there. However, having tried the best physicians of Calcutta and Patna and having had a final declaration from them that his condition was incurable, he determined to give a final trial to Homœopathy as the last resort. At first, he placed himself under the treatment of one of our Colleagues for 4 or 5 months and having had no benefit, he approached me for treatment. On the 3rd Feb., 1929, I made his case records as in the following:—

“Pains are there in my intestines all the while and there is hardly any relief ; food aggravates but I am compelled to take food ; cold drinks also aggravate but I cannot do without them. You see, Doctor, I am wasting away. There is a good appetite but nothing suits, except barley water and sago water, but how

long can a man take and live upon them ? Now-a-days even fruit juices aggravate. One peculiar fact is that I cannot rest for sometime quietly at a place, neither can I live alone nor can I tolerate a crowd. A fear is there constantly in my mind. The other day when there was a bit of earthquake, what a terrible torment I had ! I had a fear in my mind that all the houses of calcutta might at any time collapse and fall upon myself. Cold things I like. I feel that wasting and emaciation have long commenced in me, but I find no way out. Lots of treatment with a good deal of expenses I took to but to no effect".

On cross examination I got,—“I cannot lie on any other side except to the left ; there is hardly any sound sleep and if it is there there is hardly any relief. My heart always palpitates and that is the reason why it is not possible for me to lie to the right, and if I do lie to the right I feel frequent jerkings of my whole body which forces me to turn to the left. Varieties of pains I have to feel in the intestines for example, stitching, stinging, drawing, contracting and sometimes simply aching. There is no knowing when the pains will come up nor is there that can bring me any relief at the time. The only relief that I unmistakably feel is from loud eructations. I am regularly upset after my meals, however scanty or light, because the pains will invariably come up after meals. A bit of relief is also felt after vomiting, and then, long after the pains wear off".

Save and except those, I could obtain nothing from him and I could mark that he was constantly repeating and harping upon the point of wasting away or

emaciation. In fact I found that he was an withered patient, even the skin I found to have been folded and extremely dried up. There was hardly any glow over his face or any brightness of his eyes as is expected of a living human being. However on a deep study of his case and after a net of comparison of various remedies I pitched upon Arg. nit. and administered it in 500th. A few days after a horrible aggravation came in almost to tear down the patient which made myself also a bit nervous but as I conceived within myself that the aggravation was only an indication of the curative process set in by virtue of the medium potency of my deep acting medicine, I did not waver but gave placebo doses *ad libitum*. After a period of 3 weeks the pains ceased, only to return two months after, when the same remedy in 1000th was given in four graduated doses. After this dose the pains ceased altogether never to return. It was found that a natural glow began to appear over his face, and 4 or 5 months after the 2nd dose he was found to be almost healthy though two other doses of the remedy had to be administered at longer intervals. About two years were required for a complete cure and *Tuberculinum Bov.* 1m. was the final dose as if for a finishing touch.

Appetite,—there is hardly any appetite and even if it is there, there is no relief after meals, rather there is an aggravation; tympany comes in and loud eructations are many. If there is any ulceration in the stomach or intestines, in that case, pains commence just after eating and they do not cease unless and until everything is thrown up by vomiting. But

in case, where there is no ulceration, the pains may not be there but heaviness, tympany and loud eructations are only found. These eructations are not always relieving. The point to be remembered is,—aggravation after meals, whether there is any appetite or none. Then, again, where there are pains after meals, Argentum nitricum patients must have to walk about and cannot think of resting or lying. But after the food stuffs are vomited up, the patient may have rest. He has a fondness for sweets but they aggravate. There are various remedies which have a desire for sweets, viz, *Antim-crude*, *Ammon-carb*, *Cina*, *Kali-carb*, *Lyc*, *Medorrhin*, *Sulphur*, *Zinc*, etc. of which Ant. Crude, Lyc, Medorrhin and Zinc may have some aggravation though not as much as Argentum nit. has, and the rest can tolerate.

There may or may not be any relief from the eructations of Argentum nit. but one thing to be remembered is the loud eructations after meals which might have been continued for years together. *Carbo-veg.* has much relief from eructation. In *Lycopodium* there is hardly any relief but in *China* far from having any the least amelioration from eructations, there is rather a great aggravation. These distinctions are very much worth remembering. The condition of Argentum nit. is this that the patient feels the tympany up to the point of bursting and is much restless during the time and then at last loud eructations begin to come up with, in some cases, a bit of relief and in the rest none.

Diarrhoea,—there is a good deal of diarrhoea in Argentum nit. but it is mostly to be found in children. The stool is like chopped spinach in flakes, green mucus or yellow but turning green after remaining for some time; the characteristic point is that the stool is evacuated rather expelled forcibly with much spluttering and loud sound. There is an aggravation of the stool symptoms after eating and drinking and due to eating sweets. In other words, children that are very fond of eating sweets or candies get Argentum nitricum diarrhoea. The child gets emaciated and dry and has more evacuations towards mid-night. There may be nausea and vomiting too and the child is a bit restless.

Adult persons have diarrhoea generally with **ulcerations in the stomach**. You should remember that the patients that are Tubercular and are of Argentum nitricum type have generally the Tubercular manifestation in the form of ulcerations in the stomach or intestines. But specially you should note that in Argentum nitricum the manifestations of that miasm are generally in stomach or intestines. The indications are,—pains in the intestines along with the diarrhoea, the stools being full of mucus and evacuated with loud winds, absolute want of appetite, continued loss of energy and strength and onward emaciation. I want to warn you against one thing. I have seen in many cases of Argentum nitricum Tubercular condition that the *local* symptoms have been attended to and forcibly removed and the result was that the Tubercular process has been accelerated and the patients have met their ultimate doom

earlier. The proper course should be to look to the patient so that the local symptoms may go away as the result of the cure of the patient. To attend to the local symptoms is like putting the cart before the horse. It is a management dangerous to the extreme. It simply accelerates the on-coming of the fatal termination.

Heart,—the heart symptoms of Argentum nitricum will give you one characteristic which you ought to carefully remember. It is an inability to lie to the right, the patients of Argentum nit. heart *must lie to the left*, for as soon as he lies to the right various pains like throbbing, drawing, tremor, palpitation and restlessness appear when the patient is compelled to turn to the left. Sometimes he has to get up from the bed and move along slowly to relieve the pains. The patient says that he gets a tremor and a pulsation throughout the whole system whenever he lies to the right. There are other two remedies which are ameliorated in their heart symptoms on lying to the left viz *Alumen* and *Spongia*; *Alumen* has relief of heart symptoms on lying to the left but of head symptoms, specially, vertigo on lying to the right. *Spongia* gets the aggravation on lying, and specially to the right. There are various remedies which have amelioration of heart symptoms on lying to the right which is rather usual.

The nature of Argentum nit. is very peculiar and sometimes confusing. There are various *Materia Medica*s in which contradictory statements have been given so that the young readers get rather confused. Some body has said Arg. nit. wants, like *Puls*, cold

air, cold water, ice-cream, etc. and again some other has said that those are the things that bring in aggravation. But both the statements are true. The real thing is that the patient *himself* wants those things but *his disease symptoms* aggravate thereby. Unfortunately this peculiarity of Arg. nit. has not been clearly stated in so many terms in most of the books. Arg. nit. exactly like Puls. wants those things, and Puls. is relieved therefrom, but Arg. symptoms are aggravated. He is much fond of sweet things but they aggravate his disease symptoms. Then there is a good deal of confusion felt by young physicians when they try to differentiate Arg. from Phos.; and I tell you, it is quite natural because both the remedies want cold in the head and in the stomach. Then, wherein lies the difference? Arg. nit. has relief of head symptoms from cold but besides that, though he wants cold, his disease symptoms are aggravated, whereas Phos. has a positive relief. Moreover, Arg. n. wants to lie to the left specially in heart cases, but it is impossible for Phos. to lie on any other side except the right. Lastly, Phos. has goneness in many regions in his system, whereas Arg. n. has rather fulness, so that he feels the organ as if growing larger and larger. These will be sufficient for purposes of differentiation.

Then, again, you can not dismiss by only saying that Arg. nit. feels relief in open air. No. There are many *qualifications*, e. g. he wants blowing of winds over his face but not upon the whole body because in that case he feels chilly. Then again, he feels a discomfort on covering his body,—he actually

smothers. So that the point is that in open air, if he uncovers he feels chilly and if covers he will smother. Hence, there is hardly any *relief*. But, there is one clear-cut indication that Arg. nit. *must have bath*. He can not omit it.

The lower limbs are extremely weak. *Alumina* also has it but the inveterate constipation of the latter will differentiate.

Generative Organs,—The male organ is extremely weak, almost impotent, so that as soon as coition is commenced the organ fails. There are symptoms as well in the female organs, viz, coition is extremely painful and after it there is a good deal of bleeding from the vagina.

If you can have a good deal of similarity, in relation to the mind and body with this remedy you can expect to cure many more disease symptoms not included. Arg. is related with *Natrum. mur* in this that if Arg. has been misused, Nat. can correct and cure the patient. The following case is in point.

Case-Report,—Sreejut Debnath Bhandari, an inhabitant of Bhajanpur, Darbhanga, has been suffering from a painful sensation in the throat as if a fish bone has stuck there ; during first few years the above sensation was occasional, by and by, it was more frequent, when in the Darbhanga hospital the spot was burnt with crude Silver Nitrate and he felt alright for the time being. But it was found that after three or four months the system commenced to break down. The whole body began to emaciate and specially there appeared a headache which used to commence in the morning, reach its climex in the

noon and wear off towards the evening ; gradually he found himself to have been quite unfit for his usual works. He came to me for treatment, I got that history and as a symptom-totality I found there was an inveterate constipation, sense of dryness, emaciation of the system, profuse sweat, much thirst and the above type of headache. Upon all those I prescribed *Nat. mur.* 200 and then 1000. Of course, the patient was cured but I had no information whether the throat symptoms returned or not.

In case of ulceration in the throat or in the uterus of the females or in any other regions, the Allopathic physicians are generally fond of cauterization. It need not be dilated what a great amount of mischief is done thereby and in most cases the result is that the Tubercular course of the system is only accelerated so that a great push is given to the patient death-wards. You will see that the ulceration is only a manifested indication of the Tubercular miasm lying dormant in the system and if you put the cart before the horse, i.e. you do away with the indication and keep the miasm behind untouched, you do a great deal of injury to your patient as alluded to above. It is a pity that this sort of unscientific treatment is encouraged or rather helped by the state. Of course, the people are becoming wiser day by day.

Arg. n. is greatly similar to *Puls* ; after *Arg.* may come in *Lyc.*, *Verat. alb.* etc.

Potency,—from 30th to 1000, is in daily use and there is no reason why the higher potencies will not be equally efficacious when duly selected.

ARNICA MONTANA.

It is a very useful remedy and though it is not an antipsoric, yet it is often necessary and curative too in varieties of disease symptoms and therefore it is called a polychrest. It acts fairly deep and you will wonder why our Master has not included it as an antipsoric. It is because it is not so deep as to act satisfactorily in *psoric* cases.

Mind,—The main peculiarity of Arnica is an intense fear of any touch by anybody, on account of the fearfully bruised feeling or soreness in the whole system. Mind is weak, dejected but he wants to remain alone so that no body may come to him and disturb him. Not only there is a touchiness regarding his body but also that same feeling, the same fear there is, in relation to his mind as well. A constant fear that somebody may come and touch his physic and mind. Intense touchiness and a desire to remain alone on that account run through the remedy. Besides, Arnica patient many times thinks and dreams terrible things, fears that his heart is weak and diseased or that his brain is vacant—dreams terrible things, of dacoits, murders and of being beset on all sides with ferocious animals. There is a constant fear within his mind during sleep as well as in waking hours. There are remedies, viz, *Ars alb*, *Kali carb*, *Phos*, *Puls*, etc. which cannot remain alone and must have company. Sometimes Arnica has an indifferent mood as *Apis* or *Acid Phos*. *Nat Mur*. also wants to remain alone and far from getting any benefit from company and consol-

tion, Nat. abhors them. He would rather silently weep alone yet he would not allow anybody to come to him and to console him. *Lyc* is very peculiar because neither does he want company nor can he remain alone; exactly what he wants is that somebody should remain in the neighbouring rooms but not exactly by his side. So you see different remedies have different peculiarities.

It is a remedy for curing all the disease symptoms that are due to *trauma*. Of course, the acute conditions arising out of a blow, a fall or a concussion and as a result, where blood stagnates with a black and blue hue associated with a bruised condition, local or general, Arnica must do good. But even in cases where the trauma happened long long before, and even where there are no symptoms of Arnica but simply the history of trauma is got, there you must use Arnica, and if it fails, in that case only, you can think of other remedy. You should always remember this point in connection with Arnica. I am going to relate a case in point.

Case-Report,—Sreejut Bhagwan das Marwari, a big and rich merchant of Purulia came to me in 1916 and placed his treatment under me for the wrong sight he was suffering from. At the time the worthy Civil surgeon of Purulia. Rai Barada knta Rai Bahadur was a renowned eye physician. Before coming to me Sj. Bhagwandas had been under his treatment for about a year without much benefit. The worthy Doctor finally declared that he would gain no benefit from Allopathy. However, on 11th March 1916 he came to me and I prescribed the

following records. I desired his Anti-psoric treatment and so prepared the most careful records as in the following. But I may observe here that no such treatment was needed in the case yet a copy of the records so carefully taken is given below in order to show that there was no Arnica symptoms rather there were many contradictory symptoms so as to rule out the remedy but as a matter of fact that remedy cured.

11th March 1916,—Sj. Bhagwandas Marwari, Vaishya by caste, aged 39 or 40. "My right eyes all right but for the last four or five years I have been getting a misty sight in the left. Now-a-days I can not see at all during the night through the left eye, and during the day the sight through that eye is rather hazy. Besides that, in the evening many more lights are reflected from only one light, e. g. if one match stick burns, I see at least eight or ten in its place. There is no trouble, no burning nor pain, no watering, nothing of the kind. My system is all right in other respects.

"I must have a cold bath daily and I cannot omit it even for a day. Generally, I lie on my back with my hand raised over the head. I perspire too much and there is a peculiar smell in my sweat, thirst also is more than ordinary, I am more fond of bitter and salty things, I never take fish, meat, eggs, onions or garlies. I always feel heated and so there must be a fan in my hands. I am rather constipated. I feel dejected due to my eye disease, yet I want to remain alone and I am not inclined to mix with people and enjoy the company, I have no fear of

ghosts nor any fear at all. My father died of *fistula in ano* and I am the only son of my father. My mother died in my infancy and I do not know of what, my wife is healthy."

Upon the totality of symptoms as enumerated above, I thought of giving *Nat-mur* and in 1000th potency, but as I omitted to take the history of the development and treatment of the case, I requested him to come over to me and give me the details of the previous illnesses or accidents, if any. He came and informed me that he did not suffer from any serious illness but he only had had a severe fall from the Pareshnath hills in September 1903 ; when he was ascending the hills he suddenly slipped and fell down to the right. The right elbow joint was severely hurt and he got a severe blow over the orbit of the right eye. He had to be confined to bed in the hospital for two months. He showed me the right hand and I saw that the elbow joint was permanently dislocated, though at present the spot was painless. Upon that history of the accident, I was a bit perplexed on account of the contradictory nature of the patient's symptoms but still I thought of *Arnica*. I administered the remedy on the 14th March in 1000th in three graduated doses. A month or so after a report came to say that his eye-sight was much clearer than before. It is needless to say that he required no other dose.

Thus you should note that in the above patient there was no totality of *Arnica* rather many contradictory symptoms were present, and yet he was cured. In this way I have been able to cure many cases on

the strength of that specific history of a fall or a blow and the disease condition having commenced therefrom. I make a mention of the above case, it being a typical one of the type.

By the bye, there are various remedies which should be thought of as being required under similar circumstances ; but before I bring them up for the purpose of comparison, I must give you a few words in connection with Arnica. Suppose, there is a hard blow or a fall or a sprain or a concussion and in any way the patient has been severely hurt on some portion of his body, Arnica should instantly be thought of, on condition there is a feeling of *sore, lame and bruised feeling* either on the spot or in the whole system. You must mark the *feeling* or the *sensation*, whatever may be the nature of the injury, and if that sensation is present, you need not make any delay in administering the remedy. It is a sore and bruised feeling which you are to note. Sometimes after the blow or fall, there is a local congestion of blood, making the spot "black and blue" getting sore and bruised and then swelling comes on. There also Arnica must be used. There are many who would advise you to make an external use of Arnica on the affected spot but we are not in favour of it because whatever may be the painful sensations and experiences over the spot, it must be the manifestations brought about there by the co-operation of the Vital force. So potentiated Arnica should more reasonably be used. If disease symptoms are manifested far elsewhere than the affected spot and where there cannot be found any ostensible

connection between the blow and the manifested disease symptoms, still Arnica should be the first remedy to be thought of.

Suppose, in such a case as described above, Arnica has been given and a sufficient time has also been waited for, Arnica has also commenced a curative action but it is found that it could not complete the cure. Suppose, a "trace hangs fire" and continues on and on ; the patient gets restless, a damp weather aggravates ; moreover, the first movements are distressing and the distress goes off after continued movements,—it is *Rhus-tox* and *Rhus-tox* only.

Then, suppose, the case turns more chronic and the aggravation comes not so frequently but every year during the rains and *Rhus tox* could not complete the case due to the Psoric or Syco-psoric miasm lurking in the system, in that case *Calc. carb.* may be required.

But, suppose, the case does not come within the ranges of any of the above three remedies, because the above three remedies are generally required where *muscle, bone and blood* tissues are affected. Suppose, the *nerve* tissue has been affected, e.g. a nerve has been torn, pricked, sprained or cut or pressed by a thing like a hammer, and as a result, a good deal of inflammation in the affected nerve has come about, even the pains are felt to be running in all directions in the course of the nerves, like aching, pricking, stinging, stitching or benumbing etc. and there is every apprehension of on-coming convulsion or suppose, it has already commenced, you should see that all the above remedies are altogether out of

place and a different class of remedy is to be requisitioned viz. *Hypericum* or *Ledum*. The details of these remedies and a few others, viz, *Staphysagria*, *Ruta*, *Calendula*, *Cicuta Tirosa*, *Conium*, etc., shall be given later on. For the present, all these are written only to show the sphere and suitability of Arnica.

Rheumatism,—Arnica may be indicated in rheumatism of either acute or chronic form. If you can remember a few words about it, you can successfully treat the cases in which this medicine may be useful. *Intense sensitiveness* in the painful spots associated with a fear in the patient's mind lest somebody may hurt the spots. Suppose, the patient is lying down when somebody is approaching him ; the patient will at once cry aloud and will accost,—“Well, take care, don't hurt me, don't touch me”. Whenever there is a rheumatism of Arnica, you should mark that there must be a touchiness and a corresponding terror that somebody may touch and thereby aggravate his case. *Bry* case is just opposite, because *Bry* wants pressure in the affected spots.

Intermittent fever,—Arnica has an intermittent type of fever ; no time is fixed for the on-coming of the fever paroxysm, as it may come in the morning at 8 or 8-30 or in the afternoon. In the prodromme, the thirst commences and continues up to the hot stage, though the greatest thirst is found during the chill. The characteristic feature in the Arnica fever is the *sore, lame and bruised feeling throughout the whole system*. During the chill, the head and face are hot and red, accompanied with a shivering of the whole body and coldness of the hands. The heat becomes

distributed by and by throughout the body. When the chill goes off and the heat comes in, the patient gets stupefied and indifferent. During heat, the slightest lifting of bed clothes or even a slight movement makes him chilly. The heat becomes intolerable but if he uncovers, he feels chilly and takes up the cover again. There is a great internal heat with coldness of hands and feet. All the limbs are painful and the patient is restless. When asked as to why he is so much restless, he says "the bed feels too hard". After a few hours, scanty, sour and fetid sweat comes up and the heat goes away gradually. This is the picture of Arnica intermittent fever.

You may confuse Arnica with *Eupat. Perf.* Because both of them have pains and restlessness; but Eupatorium has a serious type of headache, of which the peculiarity is that in proportion the fever comes down, the headache increases. Moreover, the pains of Eupatorium are deep, very deep, hence they are called *bone-pains*, in fact, they are felt in the bones. Lastly, between chill and heat, the bitter vomiting of Eupatorium is highly characteristic which is not found in Arnica.

Regarding restlessness you may have to compare *Eupatorium*, *Rhus tox*, *Ars Alb* with Arnica. In Eupatorium the restlessness is due to intense bone-pains and the maddening headache; in *Rhus tox*, the patient can not do without being restless even if the symptoms are not such as to make him restless; in *Ars Alb.*, the restlessness is more mental than physical but in *Rhus* it is mostly physical; moreover, in *Ars*, there is a fear of death which is tormenting,—a condition of

mind which is not to be found in Arnica or Eupatorium or Rhus, in fact, in any other remedy in the *Materia Medica*. Arnica restlessness does not belong to any of these types but is due to the bed being felt too hard, even if the bed is actually as soft as down. The reason for Arnica restlessness is that the side lain on gets easily tired and benumbed and so he is bound to change sides and be restless.

It has been seen that Arnica is not able to bring in a complete cure, probably due to its superficial nature and then *Sulphur* or *Psorinum* may have to be given as a complementary, to make the cure complete and stop the paroxysms once for all.

Typhoid,—You must have to be conversant with the Typhoid condition of Arnica, but you can not expect that it will have a typhoid condition of the fever from the very beginning,—the condition comes by and by. Whether there be a history of trauma or not, there must be a continued or a remittent type of fever indicating Arnica by the following symptoms,—face of red complexion, the whole body feeling bruised and an intense touchiness ; the patient can not lie permanently in one position but must have to change sides on account of a feeling in him that the bed is too hard. The fever continues on and on and by and by the brain is involved. Deliriums come in, the weakness increases by and by and the patient commences to be drowsy in the midst of talking or hearing ; a sort of indifference also supervenes as if unconscious of all that goes on in the surrounding and becomes a bit restless ; stool and urine pass involuntarily, the mouth

gets offensive and a long black streak is found in middle of the tongue, the sides being reddish; red spots also appear on the skin which are technically called *echymoses*. Face becomes red and hot and the limbs comparatively cold,

Under such circumstances, four remedies appear to be vying with each other, viz *Rhus tox*, *Baptisia*, *Phos. ac*, and *Arnica*. *Arnica* symptoms have been given above. The other remedies should be compared. *Rhus tox* tongue is at the beginning whitish with a triangular red tip and gets blackish by and by. The restlessness of *Rhus tox* is characteristic but the reason behind the restlessness of *Rhus tox* is different from that of *Arnica*. In *Rhus tox*, there is no bruised feeling or soreness or touchiness but all the limbs ache and this aching is a bit ameliorated by being restless. Moreover, the bed does not feel hard like *Arnica*. Of course, both are chilly and are aggravated from cold. *Baptisia* has also restlessness but in this remedy, decomposition is far advanced and that is the reason why all the discharges of this remedy are highly offensive rather fetid. Of course the facial appearance is reddish as in *Arnica*. *Phos. ac* is not at all restless, but is rather indifferent—"as if a log of wood is lying". In this way the patient lies down without any the least heed to all that goes on in the outside world. *Arnica* indifference is of far lower grade. Of course, both *Arnica* and *Phos. ac* have a sort of tympany but in the acid, there is a fermentation and a loud sound in all abdomen, but in *Arnica* there is none. *Phos. ac* patient lies still on his back; the stools are whitish

but have no smell. Lastly, Phos. ac. tongue has no streak in the middle as Arnica tongue has. Mentally, they widely differ,

Appendicitis,—Arnica is many times goodly indicated in the disease of above name. There is *soreness* or *tenderness* in the appendix region and a general sense of *being bruised* is also present. Fever is not a necessary symptom in this disease but sometimes fever is also found. But if the above bruised feeling and local soreness are there, as well as the touchiness which is a great characteristic of the remedy is present, you may expect a good effect from Arnica. *Bell* is also indicated in Appendicitis, but in *Bell*, over and above the local soreness, a pain is generally found which comes up in the region as *suddenly* as it goes away. Other symptoms of *Bell* should also be present. If suppuration comes in, *Hep. s.* may also be indicated. In *Hepar* there is intense sensitiveness but abnormal sweat, mental irritation and specially mercurial system must have to be expected in *Hepar*. *Lachesis* has also very much sensitiveness, so much so, that the patient must have to raise up the right leg and cannot extend it, because any attempt to extend the leg would cause a tensivity of the abdominal skin which aggravates the sensitiveness. Moreover, *Lachesis* has aggravation after sleep and amelioration on discharges.

*Appendicitis is not a disease *per se* but a *result* of the disease. Therefore it is seen in many patients that many times they were attacked with Appendicitis and every time operation was submitted to, yet they are found to be attacked again and

again. The reason is that unless the *predisposition* is cured, i. e., the internal *dynamic susceptibility* is removed, you cannot do anything. With the help of operation, you only remove the *result* but not the disease which is the dynamic susceptibility lurking in the system. If Appendicitis patients come over to you for treatment, you need not think of antiphlogistics, fomentations, hot compresses or operations, because all those vagaries can never touch the internal spring of disorder; but you should look to the patient and treat him on the symptom-totality and the individual characteristics manifested in him. Here is a case in point.

Case Report,—Sreejut Anil Baran Roy, an expert in the treatment of Small-pox fell ill of Appendicitis during the rains in 1913 and placed himself under my treatment. He had been suffering for a long time and had submitted to the most painful operations thrice before this and so was strongly impressed that operation was of no avail in curing his tendency to be frequently attacked by the dire disease. I took up his case and recorded the following symptoms,—“acidity is my life companion, there is a tympany and fulness in the abdomen and inveterate constipation, the acidity and the fulness aggravating in the afternoon. There is a good appetite but a small quantity of food fills me up; I lie to the right and must take hot food etc. etc.” On this totality I fixed upon *Lycopodium*. As the disease conditions were far advanced I gave him Lyco. in 200th potency and the Appendicitis was aborted in that stage. Three months after, I gave him a dose of 1000th and one

year after another dose of 10 M. He was perfectly cured and Appendicitis did not return.

You should clearly know and remember for all times in future that operation or the removal of the appendix is not a treatment but a barbarity of the blackest type. It is a wonder that it passes for a treatment even in this age of science !

Heart.—In heart cases Arnica may sometimes be indicated where due to lifting of anything heavy or due to heavy physical exertions, the heart, as an organ, is hypertrophied and palpitations come in. In this circumstance, you should think of *Arnica* and *Rhus tox.* What are the symptoms that will indicate Arnica ? A sort of soreness in the heart region so that even the touch of soft clothes aggravates ; specially, if the patient walks for some time with his hands hanging on, he will see that his fingers get red and tense, and a bit swollen. What are the symptoms that will indicate Rhus ? A sort of aching or benumbing pain from the left shoulder down to the left hand and a type of restlessness is also associated with the pains. You should know that so long heart cases are symptomatic of these two remedies, the case is not at all serious, because the cause is only superficial, due to viz., unusual exertion and that is all ; you can very easily restore order and bring the organ into its natural condition by the use of any of the two remedies that will be found to be indicated. I have seen that Arnica or Rhus needs to be used under this circumstance in doses few and far between but persistently for a few months. If, interpolation is found necessary, occasional dose of *Sulph 30* is sufficient. Never mind,

I give you this rather in a routine way. In case, you find interpolation of any other remedy necessary, you can very well use it. I only give you a hint and chalk out a path but you must guide yourself in accordance with the necessity of each individual case.

Congestion of blood.—Arnica has a beautiful efficacy in stopping the congestion or effusion of blood during meningitis or Apoplexy and thereby relieving the brain and aborting the disease at the very commencement but here you should have to use it as early as possible. The thing is that curable cases will generally manifest Arnica totality in the very beginning. Face, red and hot, the patient feeling bruised and tender throughout the whole system before he gets unconscious, a bit of restlessness, passing stool and urine involuntarily, the upper part of the body hot and the lower part and extremities rather cold,—this is Arnica totality.

Digestive organs.—You know already that whatever may be the disease symptoms from which Arnica patients suffer, there must be a bruised sensation and a fear of touch. In diarrhoea he will have a similar feeling. The abdomen gets distended, the patient frequently passes offensive winds and has eructations of bitter, sour and of offensive smell as if there are rotten eggs in the stomach; even the breath is also offensive; feels a bad taste and mouth also gets offensive. There is thirst but the patient has no taste for water. Slimy, mucous, bloody and offensive stools are passed. Moreover, there are varieties of discomforts in the stomach and abdomen but you will find that Arnica diarrhoea is not generally met with, unless

associated with other disease symptoms. If there is a history of blows, falls, concussions and injuries of any type Arnica should be first thought of.

Hæmorrhage.—In hæmorrhage Arnica is oftentimes indicated if the mental and bodily characteristics of the remedy appear. Otherwise, simple hæmorrhage should never call for Arnica and you should never use any remedy on a mere name. Arnica hæmorrhage may be found along with mucus, stools, urine, or with any other discharges,—it is red in colour and the flow is passive. Arnica hæmorrhage may contain very small clots or may be fluid but of cozing nature.

Arnica may be useful in various other disease symptoms too numerous to mention. There is nothing in a name but you should always look to the symptom totality and if that is found in a particular case in hand, then I tell you, whatever may be the name of the disease, no matter. You should confidently use it and then you will be able to successfully cure the disorder.

Labor pains.—I forgot to mention that during the labor pains also, the females get a tender and bruised feeling. But it is frequently used after delivery when that feeling predominates, specially, where the labor pains exhaust the female. Moreover, it can arrest the persistent profuse hæmorrhage that sometimes occurs after delivery and various disorders regarding urination. It may also be indicated in puerperal fever. Look to the symptom totality and nothing else.

Potency.—I have used the remedy from 30th to C. M. according to the necessity of the cases with excellent results, the external injuries may call for lower potencies but I am not much in their favour.

ARSENICUM ALBUM.

Anti-psoric }
 &
Anti-sycotic }

* *Arsenicum Album* is a curious remedy,—its symptoms and conditions are so extensive that I am really unable to understand where to begin and where to end. Its action is sometimes very deep and sometimes very superficial again,—its course is somewhere very slow and somewhere very swift again,—all its features are peculiar. In fact, it is sometimes impossible to realise its true value. But, I tell you in all sincerity that more injuries have been done in the past and are daily being done by its use than good. I know that out of curiosity it has been and is liable to be misused in such a way that even many diseased individuals actually succumbed for its mis-use. Of course, at the present times, the physicians have become and are becoming more and more careful. Therefore at the very outset I want to impress upon your mind one fact that unless you are quite sure of its selection, you should never use it high or low. Then, there is another thing to be specially remembered in this connection and that is, that you can very well antidote the misuse or over-action of other

remedies but I tell you frankly that I myself do not know of any antidote of this remedy or of the serpent poisons. Under this circumstance, you should be very careful in the use of these remedies.

*There is a wide gap of difference between an "Arsenicum patient" and a patient having "Arsenicum symptoms." An Arsenicum patient is one thing and a patient with Arsenicum symptoms may be quite a different thing altogether. An Arsenicum patient means a patient having Arsenicum mind, Arsenicum peculiarities, Arsenicum bodily symptoms,—in fact a perfect picture of the remedy. But, sometimes it is found that an individual, during some disease symptoms, manifests a few symptoms of Arsenic. You will meet with several *Natrum muriaticum* or *Pulsatilla* or *Iodine* patients having had a particular acute disease, like acute fever or acute diarrhoea and so forth, showing Arsenicum restlessness, its peculiar thirst and a fear of death. At such a circumstance, the permanent soil is fit for Nat. Mur. or *Pulsatilla* or *Iodine*, as the case may be, and upon that permanent soil, a few weeds have recently grown calling for Arsenicum alb. Here, you should be careful only to use the lower potencies of Arsenicum, say 3x, 6, 12 or at the highest 30, simply to remove the transitory Arsenicum colouring with the result that the patient will get rid of the acute disease he may be at present suffering from. Here, the permanent soil i. e. the real patient, will not be touched, simply the outer foamings, the "transitory outburst of latent Psora" will be gone. In other words, only the symptoms of the acute manifestation will be removed but the

permanent and chronic disorder of the patient will be there as ever.

I would not have dwelt on the above point had there not been so many occasions for me to meet with cases where Arsenicum alb was used in 50 M, and C. M. potencies under circumstances in which 6th or 12th would have been sufficient. I recall a case which I give below for your enlightenment. It is a pity that the question of potency is not decided, in very many cases, on the individual merits and conditions of the patients or in accordance with the true Homœopathic principles, which should be carefully followed by the Master's true followers. It appears that the use of potencies depends upon personal whims and as if the high potentists are to be lauded as so many best prescribers. I need not dilate any more but simply to impress upon your mind what a tremendous injury may be done to the patients by the thoughtless use of potencies specially of a medicine like Arsenicum Album. So I want to give you the following case.

Case report.—Sree.....Hazra, an inhabitant of Patrasair, Dist. Bankura, was brought to me in December, 1911, for treatment. He had been suffering off and on for very many years from Malarial fever. Allopathic medicines and quinine were used *ad libitum* but the fever could not be suppressed. Upon this the relatives of the patient had placed him under the treatment of the then noteworthy Homœopath of Vishenpur. The worthy physician got a few symptoms of Arsenicum Album and "conscientiously" finished his work by administering Ars. Alb. C. M. to the patient! Had the august gentleman been a bit

prudent in using the remedy in a single dose, we might have not much to complain about. Wonder of wonders, he directed the use—two doses a week without any limit or stoppage. But, it so happened that after three weeks' use in this way the condition of the patient took a peculiar turn so much so that various symptoms and a good deal of confusion appeared, and the father appealed to the physician who consoled him by saying that it was only a medicinal aggravation and asked him to wait for a period of two or three weeks more. Accordingly, the medicine was stopped but the patient's condition having turned more terrifying, he approached me with the patient to the Rajagram A. S. School Boarding where I was the Head Master and a resident boarder. At the first sight the patient appeared to me to have been a regular *maniac* but after having heard the details I could conclude that it was clearly a proving from a misuse of *Ars. Alb.* and of its very high potency.

The predominant feature of the patient was a terrible fear,—as if some body was coming to beat him, to arrest him and so forth and as soon as the fear arose in his mind, instantly he would try to hide himself behind something and if the place was quite open, he would instantly close his eyes with his hands; he would constantly weep, would anxiously cry aloud that he would not live long,—in one word, full of anxiety, restlessness, fear of death, fear of being arrested or beaten. Absolutely no appetite but a nauseating feeling, though there was hardly any actual vomit. All these clearly indicated that a *proving* of

Arsenic was continuing. There were lots of other symptoms but an element of constant fear was interwoven with them. Daily rise of 100° to $102^{\circ}5$ was found towards the evening lasting up to midnight, but the fever had no *Arsenicum* symptoms,—for it was a simple fever, no thirst, no anxiety, no restlessness.

Now, in order to bring the patient into order, a long time was required, a full history of which is not required here, because the point is to show what a great amount of mischief is done by the administration of unnecessarily high potencies, specially where there is no symptom picture calling for the remedy. *Arg. nit.* came to my rescue, though it has never been mentioned in your texts as an antidote to *Arsenicum*. Of course, later on, *Phos* and *Sulph* were used according to the necessities and symptoms that appeared by and by. A pause for a long time was given and it was found that several patches of ringworms were there upon the skin specially in the back and both sides of the perineum. I had to use a single dose of *Bacillinum* high which completed the cure.

Picture of *Ars. Alb.*—Great prostration, intense weakness and rapid sinking of the vital force; anxiety, fear, and restless mood; highly irritable and absolutely dissatisfied; anxiety mixed with fear of death—all these, rather a combination of all these, will give you a picture of the *Arsenicum* mind. Anxiety with a dread of death, mixed with a sure conviction that no medicine will help him, because he is sure of his death which is very near. In one sentence, *fear, anxiety* and *restlessness* or a *disquietude* of mind which no consolation can allay; *sadness,*

prostration, chilliness, dread and highest pitch of *impatience* will give you an Arsenicum make-up. If you want to pick up Arsenicum patients, you are to look to his interior, for, at times, the externals may mislead you, e. g, he is full of restlessness and anxiety but is too weak to move and so lies motionless,—still he is an Arsenicum patient. Then again, he is full of thirst but does not take water, for it fearfully aggravates, yet he is an Arsenicum patient. In this way, sometimes the externals cannot give you a clean idea unless you look deeply into his mental condition. One important characteristic of an Arsenicum patient is the rapid course of the process of his sinking,—this sinking or loss of strength is *not proportional* to the disease symptoms but he will be rapidly sinking, rapidly approaching the door of death, and the very look which is cadaverous and without a natural glow most surely indicates the deathward course.

The picture of an Arsenicum patient of *acute* disorders looks different from that of Arsenicum *chronic* ailments. The restlessness which is a great characteristic of an Arsenicum acute case is not to be found during his chronic disorders. You should always look to the Arsenicum mind essentially. The physical restlessness which is only the outward manifestation of the mental restlessness may be wanting when the patient is too weak to move. This is of course in relation to his acute condition. But, as a matter of fact, in Arsenicum chronic cases, the physical restlessness is not generally to be found. Then again, during acute disorders, an

Arsenicum patient has a burning thirst but it takes water only in sips because by drinking, he himself feels chilly and his stomach is upset. In chronic disorders an Arsenicum patient has no thirst and he does not want water to drink because it does not suit him. So that, when taking up a chronic Arsenicum case, you are to be a bit cautious because he will say that he has no thirst and the acute form of restlessness you will not find in him at the time.

A few words regarding his **desires** and **aversions**. The patient is intensely chilly so that cold air, specially cold winds, he cannot at all tolerate (*China*). As a *patient*, though he cannot tolerate cold, yet in some *parts* of his body he wants cold and cannot tolerate heat, e. g, he wants cold in the head though during neuralgia and in ulcers he wants heat. But during internal diseases of the head, i. e. in brain disorders he wants cold there. Suppose, a man is quite tired with intellectual labours for a long time, with the result that he has got a painful headache,—here, he must wash the head with cold water. With this exception he wants warmth in the rest of his body.

Now, with **comparisons**. *Phosphorus* is a remedy which is also chilly, but Phos. wants cold in the head and stomach and wants covering and warmth in all other parts of the body. A Phos. patient must have water very cold, even iced, and must wash the head with cold water. You should remember that Arsenic wants cold in the head only and Phos. in the head as well as in the stomach. If you look deeper, you will mark that Ars, like Phos, also wants cold water for a

drink but he cannot tolerate it, because it produces nausea and vomiting and he feels that the water drunk remains in the stomach as a load and he feels a shivering as well. Then again, Phos. is fond of, and much relieved by, cold water, but as soon as the water warms up in the stomach, it is thrown up. You will see that *Lyc.* is also a chilly remedy, but he wants cold in the head and desires warm things even hot things for his throat and stomach (*Chelidonium*). Then, again, *Psorinum* and *Silica* are also chilly and they want warmth even in the head,—*Psorin* being fond of covering the head even during the hottest of summer. There are various peculiarities and individualities of different medicines, so that you should carefully differentiate between them.

One or two words relating to *the nature* of the thirst. Phosphorus and Ars—both are highly thirsty but there is a difference between them in that Ars frequently calls for water but takes it in sips, because as a patient he is aggravated thereby, the water producing nausea, chilliness and a feeling of weight in the stomach; Phos. takes a big quantity of water each time and as a patient he is much relieved by it though his stomach throws it up after it gets warm there.

Let us now dwell on the other symptoms of Arsenicum. **Restlessness, prostration and anxiety,**—are the features of Arsenic; in fact, it is a peculiar combination of the three things. There many not be any the least reason for his being anxious, in as much as the disease symptoms from which the patient may be suffering are only trifles and the same

symptoms, even graver and more serious, may be found in other persons,—but it is a wonder that they will not be restless and anxious at all and the Arsenicum patient must be full of anxiety, restlessness and prostration even with trifles. Why? The reason is in the *mental* plane;—even there may not be any grave symptoms for which he should be anxious, but what of that? It is the mind which makes him anxious and restless. The restlessness is very peculiar. He cannot rest,—sometimes he will be lying, then sitting up, changing the bed, changing the room, changing his position but never satisfied with, or finding peace in, any of them. I tell you, I have seen patients of Arsenic who are too weak to move, yet restlessness was clearly evident even in shape of groaning, moaning etc. The prostration is just in proportion to the anxiety and by and by the patient gets a cadaverous look. Then again, the degree of prostration is not proportionate to the amount of the discharges or the intensity of symptoms. The prostration or the loss of strength is very much rapid. You will see patients having fever of perhaps 99° with one or two evacuations during a whole day of twenty-four hours but if they are Arsenicum patients you will observe that they will be rapidly losing strength and are full of restlessness, anxiety, fear of death and so forth. You will remember the above combination being a predominant feature in an Arsenicum patient.

On the point of *restlessness*, you may compare *Acon*, *Rhus*, *Arg. n.* and *Iodin*. Before doing so, you should note that the peculiar combination of extreme

weakness and exhaustion with the restlessness, as is found in *Ars. alb.*, is never to be expected in any other remedy of our *Materia Medica*. *Aconite* has a high grade of restlessness but the patient retains a good amount of strength, for *Acon.* picture generally comes in at the first onset of a man's disease, if it comes at all,—as if a sudden tempest comes up with a great violence. The patient is suddenly affected violently, and that is the reason why he has so much restlessness, fear of death, etc., but he has a sufficient strength to withstand the violence and he is not shattered and exhausted like an *Arsenicum* patient. *Acon.* has a suddenness, *Ars.* has a protractedness. Moreover, the two remedies differ regarding their *thirst*,—both of them frequently call for water but *Acon.* patient takes a good deal of it every time, as he feels relieved thereby, whereas *Ars.* takes it only in sips, because he is upset thereby as he feels chilly and nauseating. Then again, dry cold may be the cause of illness in both the remedies, yet when the disease is on, *Arsenicum* is chilly, but *Acon.* wants cold and cold air. *Ars.* can not remain alone and he fears loneliness, *Acon.* does not like company. *Acon.* comes into use in acute cases only and should never be thought of, as *Ars.* should be, in chronic disorders. Lastly, *Acon.* has no decomposition and consequently no offensive discharges which *Ars.* has in a prominent degree. Under the circumstances, the so-called resemblance between the remedies specially on the point of restlessness is only an appearance, because the two remedies differ in vital points.

The restlessness of *Rhus* and that of *Ars.* are not

of the same type. Ars. restlessness and anxiety are predominantly *mental*, in Rhus, they are mainly *physical*. Then again, Rhus expects and even obtains a bit of relief from being restless, but in Ars, not only there is no relief but rather the exhaustion increases. Rhus has no fear of death, which is a characteristic point in Ars. Lastly, regarding exhaustion and decomposition too, the two remedies differ,—both of which are of high grade in Ars, but Rhus has practically none of them. Ars discharges are scanty and highly offensive,—those of Rhus are profuse and have practically no smell. Of course, both the remedies are chilly.

Arg. nit. restlessness is altogether of a different type, being *nervous*. *Arg.* restlessness, fear of remaining alone and his apprehension are all of *nervous* type. Moreover, he has a fear mostly for the future and not for the present, and all his apprehensions are qualified with "If"—'if this happens, if that happens, what will be my fate?' etc. Moreover, there is a wide gap of difference between the two remedies which is so glaring and prominent that I need not dwell on it at all.

Iodine is also restless but for different reasons; he wants open air, and unless he gets it he is restless and anxious. Moreover, rest aggravates all the conditions of Iodine. Then, Iodine restlessness or its anxiety relates to the present and not at all to the future; you know *Arg. nit.* is just opposite. Lastly, Iodine always wants cold, cold air, cold bath which are all grateful to him; *Arsenicum* condition is just opposite, because he is chilly.

Fear,—Arsenicum is full of fears,—fear of being alone, fear of death and fear of something terrible which, he thinks, may happen at any time. To get an amelioration or a relief from the fearful state of mind, he wants company ; Arsenicum patient cannot remain without somebody at his elbow, so that he can somehow or other ward off his fearful state. Anxiety, fear, anguish, restlessness, etc., make his life intolerable. The central string of all these mental conditions is fear of death,—he is sure that his condition is incurable and all remedies are useless and he is going to die. *Aconite* fear of death is of an altogether different type because *Aconite* is not full of fears like *Ars*. *Acon*. has also fear of death but it is a matter of fore-seeing, because you know, *Aconite* is full of nervous irritation due to which a picture of future events is presented before his eyes and that is why he predicts the hour of death. *Aconite* is full of *irritation* whereas *Ars* of *exhaustion*. In fact, there is no remedy having so much fear as *Ars*.

Kali carb,—it has also fears, can not remain alone,—fear of ghosts, fear of thieves and dacoits, fear of death and fear of something terrible happening in future, etc., are there but of a far lesser degree than in *Ars*. An *Ars* patient can never remain alone but *Kali carb* feels a sort of uneasiness, a discomfort, something like fear when going to bed, though at other times he can remain alone. The greatest amount of fear in *Kali carb* is for catching cold and he is careful enough to stop even the small apertures of doors and windows before going to bed. A *Kali carb* patient is rather fat and fleshy, whereas an *Arsenicum*

patient is thin and emaciated. Moreover, *Arsenicum* restlessness and anxiety are wanting in *Kali carb* though the element of sensitiveness is present in both.

Burning,—*Arsenicum alb.* is full of burning which is violent,—burning over the whole body, in the stomach, in its ulcers, in short, burning within and without, but there is a peculiarity that qualifies the burning which is that it is relieved by covering and warm application. Just see, what a wonderful condition,—*burning relieved by heat*. There is burning in the stomach which not only is not relieved by cold water but cold water excites nausea as well, and in fact, the cold water drunk is thrown up by vomiting; if warm water is taken in, it is retained and the burning is relieved. In the piles also, the patient feels a horrible burning relieved by warm application. Just remember, horrible burning relieved by warmth, warm application and covering. The *Arsenicum* patient wants covering and warmth in his whole body but wants to wash off the head only with cold water. There are various medicines which have burning but the peculiar amelioration from warmth as in *Ars* is not much characteristically found in any of them. *Apis*, *Secale*, *Puls* etc. have burning but relief comes from cold.

Fever,—*Arsenicum* has various types of fever e. g. *intermittent* (so-called *malarial*), *remittent*, fever with *typhoid condition*, *typical typhoid*, *slow fever*, *chronic fever*, fever as an *associated* symptom of some other named diseases, etc. You need not look to the names but only to the patient and his individuality pointing to *Ars*. It is found that many allopaths

coming to our rank generally labour under an impression that any fever, simply because it is a fever, must be met with Arsenicum alb. or some of the Arsenicum preparations. Our illustrious Dr. Nash of America has also noticed, as we also find, that our Allo-Homœo brethren are very fond of pushing on Ars in every case of typhoid fever. This is unfortunate. Our Materia Medica is rich with fever remedies which can successfully meet almost any case of fever, provided selection is carefully made in the line of true symptom similarity. Arsenic can only help in those cases which manifest its own totality and none other.

Intermittent fever,—This type of fever is generally named "Malaria". The fever or the type of fever which has characteristically chill, heat, sweat and apyrexia is called 'malarial fever' by the physicians of the dominant School. The treatment of intermittent fevers is not very easy and only a master can successfully cure intermittent fever cases. The nervous Homœopaths generally confuse the cases by giving frequent remedies not truly Homœopathic. Of course, they are not solely to blame. The lay public do not differentiate between a suppression and a cure and so they want immediate results which they get from Allopathic hands in the form of the senseless suppression with big doses of quinine. The removal of the manifested symptoms with the help of strong drugging is not a cure but the public have been so taught, of course, wrongly. You should remember a broad principle that you can not successfully treat any case of fever on the first or second day of its invasion. Why? Because the symptomatic picture,

as a matter of fact, cannot be expected before the fourth or fifth day. Of course, there are cases which may turn very serious, even fatal, on the first or second day, but these are rare. The point is that you should never attempt at prescribing a remedy unless you get a true picture calling for it. If you get the picture earlier, well and good, but if you do not, what can you do but wait and watch ?

In the treatment of all Intermittent fevers the symptoms of all the four stages enumerated above should be carefully remembered. In Arsenicum Intermittent the following important points should be remembered viz, (1) Arsenicum has hardly any chilly stage (it is said that only one stage is wanting in a general way in Ars, but as a matter of fact, it is found that the chilly stage is absent); if there is a chilly stage in Ars, there is no thirst during the chill and if there is any thirst during that stage it must be for tepid warm water. It is a notable fact that an Arsenicum fever patient will never call for a cold drink during the chilly stage and it is so much characteristic that if it is found that the patient calls for cold water during that stage, you can certainly conclude that he is not an Arsenicum patient and it is not an Arsenicum case. So, the clear thing to be remembered is that thirst for cold water during the chilly stage of an intermittent fever contra-indicates Ars. (2) You know that it is a characteristic of Arsenicum thirst that the patient calls for water very frequently though he takes it only in sips; but you will find an exception during the hot stage thirst because the patient takes it in good quantity every

time. (3) The characteristic restlessness of an Arsenicum patient manifests specially in the hot stage, when he takes off the covers and is violently restless with a violent thirst for a profuse quantity of water each time and the patient vomits after every second or third drink the whole quantity of water taken in. (4) During the sweat he may call for water as he has equally a violent thirst but takes only in sips; restlessness commences to abate along with the appearance of sweat, as also the heat commences to wear off. (5) During the apyrexia, the patient is full of languor, exhaustion, want of appetite and even nausea.

Remittent fever,—Arsenicum remittent fever is not found from the very start, in other words, Arsenicum is hardly indicated in the beginning of a remittent fever. At first, any of the remedies like *Bry*, *Rhus-tox*, etc., may be indicated and later on, when the patient grows weak and restless, the intensity of the fever also comes down, the patient gets chilly and the peculiar thirst of Arsenicum comes in, then this remedy may be required. In some patients the Arsenicum condition is found to appear towards the end of the second week, in others again still later and in the rest it may not appear at all. The Arsenicum totality is chilliness, restlessness, fear of death, intense thirst but taking water in sips as it upsets the patient and his stomach and with all these much exhaustion and weakness, loss of appetite even nausea. If there is a diarrhoea as an associated symptom, the stools are scanty and much offensive,

Typhoid fever,—When in course of a remittent fever, typhoid symptoms supervene, sometimes Arsenic totality may appear. The symptoms of the remittent fever are there and along with them there are offensive stools of dark colour which are scanty and generally pass involuntarily with a good deal of frequency. The fever heat generally slows down and there must be the mental peculiarities of Arsenic.

***Typhoid fever and Typhoid condition**,—You should always differentiate between a typical typhoid fever and a fever in typhoid condition. There are more cases of the latter than of the former. A typical typhoid fever is a peculiar specific type beginning with a very small heat but with a continual ladder like rise of temperature culminating in a full typhoid fever. The central point of attack may be different according to the susceptibility of the individual patient, though a different name is given accordingly e.g., if the brain is predominantly involved and violent deliriums appear, it is called a brain-typhoid. If the lungs are principally involved, and pneumonia or broncho-pneumonia is an associated condition, it is called a lung typhoid. But suppose, the intestines are mainly attacked and ulcerations are formed there, it is called an abdominal-typhoid. These are all different names according to the manifestation spots and that is all. The individual totality in each case must govern the selection of a remedy. Now, where there was no such gradual and slow rise of temperature but rather an abrupt rise with vehemence of brain symptoms and associated with symptoms in various other organs, it is called a fever under typhoid

condition. You should know that typhoid is a word coming from *typhus* which means the smoky condition of the brain; in other words, a fever having brain symptoms like unconsciousness, delirium, involuntary discharges, loss of comprehension, etc. The only point to note is that if the development is slow and gradual, it is called a typical typhoid, but if sudden or irregular, it is called a fever with typhoid condition.

From the difference above explained, you will also see that Ars. may be indicated more in the typical typhoid than in the other form, because Arsenicum is a remedy which has a slowness and graduality in it. In any case where the Arsenicum totality is present, as given before, you may confidently administer it.

*There may be some mis-apprehension as is found in many minds that there is a fixed *course* of a typhoid fever which it must run and that no curative effort is successful to bring round the patient before that fixed course is run. But, so far as Homœopathic treatment is concerned, I tell you with full confidence, as has been asserted by our illustrious Dr. Farrington, that the so-called course of a typhoid fever or of any disease whatever need not run and should not run in case a proper prescription is made, for if a true Homœopathic medicine is given, you may confidently assure the family that the course must be cut short and cure will commence from the moment it is administered. If the treatment is placed under a true Homœopath, there will be no such thing as a course of any disease. Moreover, if on the third or fourth day of any remittent fever, the case is given

over under the charge of a Homœopath it is sure that there will be no development of the case either into a remittent fever or a typhoid fever but the case is sure to be aborted and perfectly cured within the first week. I am so strong over this point that in case it is not so possible I am sure there must be some drawback in the prescriber ; for, the law is perfect and can not fail.

Chronic fever,—In chronic fever, either idiopathic or as an associated symptom with some other disorders, Arsenic may often be indicated when its symptom totality is found. The same old tale, viz, constant chilliness, fever heat aggravating after 12 to 2 P. M. or A. M, the same anxiety, fear of death, etc. Restlessness is found rather to decrease in proportion to the chronicity of the case ; but though the physical restlessness decreases, the mental anxiety or disquietude is rather found to increase. The patient thinks it useless to be under the treatment, as according to him, there is hardly any chance of cure. He gets an irritated temper. There is hardly any thirst as water does not suit him and excites nausea. There is generally a loss of appetite and whatever he takes, he takes rather hot. Bed-sores are frequent which are also ameliorated by warmth. There may be constipation or thin, scanty stools,—in the former he passes frequently horribly offensive winds, in the latter the stools are offensive rather putrid. He does not want bath but is inclined to wash only the head with cold water. The chilliness, you know, is a predominating feature in an Ars patient and he is fond of warmth and covering ; he is full of fears viz. of death, of thieves, of dacoits,

of ghosts, etc. Due to continual suffering from the chronic type of fever, he is rather anæmic. At last swelling appears in the extremities, heart-beats get irregular and intermittent, after which the patient has only to pass his days with a terrible anxiety and fear of death unless the death closes the scene.

Arsenicum chronic fever may be often the result of the senseless drugging with quinine which is unable to suppress the fever manifestations, on account of Psora or some other miasm standing at the back.

Arsenicum fever may appear *as an associated symptom* of some other diseases. Very often you will find that the fever symptom in a particular chronic case is not idiopathic but only an associated feature. This type of fever i. e. fever associated with heart disease, diabetes, fistula in ano, chronic sores etc. etc. corresponds with Arsenicum symptoms only towards the end and you will see that though Arsenicum can give the patient a momentary relief or relief even for a few months, yet it cannot cure permanently unless the idiopathic disease is not remedied.

*You will often see that a particular manifestation of any disease symptom does not tend towards cure if the system is miasmatic ; and if suppression is intended, the remedy is generally worse than the disease, because the influx is upset and a force from out to in is established. An invariable result would be that multi-farious complications and ultimates will be produced. You cannot possibly understand the position unless I give you one illustration. Suppose, a chronic diarrhœa is intended to be suppressed i. e. the case is not wanted to be properly cured under

the Law of Similars but only the manifestation of diarrhoeic symptoms is wanted to be suppressed. In that case, you will find that a general dropsy appears and at the first onset of this ultimate, swelling of the extremities comes in. Here, just understand what you should do and what not. If you deal with this ultimate only, even by a truly Homœopathic remedy, what do you do? You simply nip a bud and the whole tree of disease will be standing there continually growing as it had been, before the onset of swelling. Suppose, you find the swelling œdematous, the patient having no thirst but full of dryness internally and externally with a horrible burning, having a relief from cold bath and open air, urine abnormally scanty or suppressed etc. etc. you give *Apis*. Or, you find a constant chilliness, loss of appetite, nausea, the patient wanting covering and closed doors without any inclination for a cold bath except for washing of the head only, etc. etc. and you give *Ars. alb.* In these cases you may have a satisfaction that you have prescribed admirably well. As a matter of fact you will see that you have been able only to give a partial relief in the cases; but, under the circumstances, you have had no other alternative. But always remember that you have not prescribed for the whole case. You have prescribed only for the result of the suppression; and unless you deal with the case or cases squarely, miasmatically and for the individual patient as a whole, you will be unable to cure the patient at all. Just go to the root of the case and prescribe upon the totality,—consisting of mental, whole bodily and according to the individua-

lity of the patient himself. If you are able to do so, you will see that the last symptom (swelling in the above illustration) will go away first and then the diarrhœa, i. e. in the retrograde way. One word more, in case, if some body, before you take up a patient, had suppressed in the above way and you are compelled under the circumstances to prescribe with the view of doing away with the resulting condition, you are to use lower potencies of Apis or Ars as the case may be and when you get the *statu quo* you will be quite at liberty to use high and higher potencies when you will be treating the case miasmatically.

Respiratory organs,—Arsenic is a remedy *per excellence* in the difficulty of breathing, in fact, in any disease condition relating to the respiratory organs. But you are to remember here, as elsewhere, the characteristic totality of the remedy, viz, constant fear of death, restlessness, intense thirst but drinking water only in a few sips, loss of appetite, nausea, aggravation after 12 P. M. and specially A. M., inability to lie in bed but the patient must have to sit inclining towards the front, special aggravation from cold and cold water and uncovering. In this connection I give you one warning. Suppose, you go to the bedside of a patient and find to your wonder that he wants fanning over his head; but you need not be perplexed, it is only a common symptom in all cases of hard and difficult breathing. You will place a very small value on this symptom alone but only a relative value along with other symptoms of the case and prescribe accordingly. Now let us compare.

Comparison,—Let us compare *Ars. Alb* with the following remedies, viz. *Ant. t.*, *Ipec.*, *Nat. s.*, *Carbo. v.*, *Kali carb* and *Kali bi.*, specially with regard to difficulty of breathing or Asthma. *Ant. tart* is hardly required in chronic cases, though during acute aggravation of chronic Asthma and recent cases of difficult breathing, it has its frequent use. *Ant. t.* has two different stages for its use. One is *dry* and the other is *humid*; in the first stage, there is no trace of mucus in the throat or the respiratory passages but simply a difficulty of breathing ensues with flapping of the *alæ nasi* (*Lyc.*, *Ammon Carb.*, *Phos.*, etc), vomiting and nausea which are relieved by lying to the right (*Phos.*), absolute thirstlessness, dirty coating in the tongue, cold sweat on the forehead, etc; in the second stage, there is so much infiltration of the air passages with mucus along with the difficult breathing that it seems as if a cupful of mucus will be thrown up but, as a matter of fact, nothing is raised; the other characteristics of the remedy, viz., vomiting and nausea, thirstlessness, etc, as given above, are all present. *Ipecac* also is hardly ever used in old cases of Asthma. The symptom-picture is almost the same as in *Ant. tart* with the following points of difference viz. (1) instead of stertorous breathing of *Ant. tart*, there is a wheezing respiration in *Ipecac*; (2) tongue is characteristically clean in *Ipecac* but in *Antim.*, it is dirty coated; (3) the nausea or vomiting of *Ipecac* is not relieved by lying to the right as in *Ant. t.* and *Phos.* Save and except those points, both the remedies have all symptoms in common, viz absence of thirst, want of

appetite, nausea, etc. Lastly, Ipecac is generally used before Ars, in other words, Ars follows Ipecac. Nat. Sulph is also required in sycotic Asthma cases which, you know aggravate during the morning hours and specially on damp cold. Another remedy is Carbo. v. Instead of restlessness of Ars, it is rather torpid and is generally required when tympany and cold sweat on the forehead supervene in Ars cases and the characteristic relief from hard fanning appears. Carbo. veg. has a paralytic condition of the respiratory apparatuses (*Ant.*) and that is the reason why Carbo. veg. cases have no cough (which is nature's effort to raise the accumulated mucus). Kali carb aggravation commences just when the time for Ars. aggravation ends i.e, 3 or 4 A. M. to 5 or 6 P. M. Moreover, there are stitching pains, swelling of the upper lids, pains in the small of the back, profuse sweat and intense exhaustion. Carbo veg. is its complementary. Lastly, both Kali Carb and Ars patients of Asthma must sit inclined to the front. Last of all is Kali bichromicum, which has all the symptoms just as in Kali Carb. Though all the Kalis have sticky and threadlike secretions, yet Kali bi. has it most characteristically. Kali bi has also a peculiar pain towards the right of the root of the nose (*Sticta Pulmanoria*).

Of the remedies above compared together you should know that *Ant. t.* and *Nat. s.* are mainly *sycotic*; *Carbo. veg.* and *Ars.* mainly *psoric* and all Kalis are mainly *syphilitic*. Asthmatic diseases are mainly *sycotic*, so anti-*sycotic* remedies are more often used in curing this type of disorder.

* In every case of Asthma, Arsenium. alb. appears to be indicated but it is only an *appearance*. Every so-called disease has lots of *common* symptoms which are only for giving it a *name*, e.g., where there are frequent loose stools, vomit, thirst, etc., you call it Cholera. Then again, where there are high heat of the body, intense thirst, head pains, etc., you call it a fever. A group of common symptoms is useful only to give the disorder a name but those common symptoms are useless for a prescription. So that, by simply knowing that it is a case of Asthma, it would be quite un-homœopathic to jump upon the selection of Ars, simply because it is a case of Asthma. For the purpose of prescription, *individual* symptoms i. e., those that are found in the particular individual under treatment and not commonly to be found in every person suffering from that disorder are required. For example, in every case of fever, thirst is a *common* symptom but if in any particular fever-patient thirst is absent, in that case, it is *individual* for the patient, and, being peculiar, must be valuable for a prescription. So, in every case of Asthma, the patient *commonly* feels relieved if he inclines to the front. So, it is only a *common* symptom, being present in every case of Asthma. On that symptom being present in almost every case of Asthma, it would be wrong to prescribe Ars, unless the peculiar thirst of Arsenic, the peculiar mid-day and mid-night aggravation, restlessness, fear of death &c, are present which are *individual* and *peculiar* for Ars. Just see, the position of lying is aggravating in almost all cases of Asthma, but

suppose, you find a remedy or remedies in which that very position is rather relieving, in that case, it would be very important for the purpose of prescription. You know remedies which have that symptom e. g, *Psorin* and *Manganum*. So, in every case, the rule is that individual and peculiar symptoms must govern.

Digestive organs,—Arsenic has loss of appetite,—not only so, it excites nausea at the sight or at the smell of food. *Colchicum* has also want of appetite but the peculiarity of *Colchicum* is that it excites nausea particularly at the smell of cooking. Even the very name of food stuffs will excite violent nausea. *Colchicum* has a great tympany. But the difference between the two remedies is that *Colchicum* patients would lie still because all movements aggravate (*Bry*), and *Ars* is restless. Arsenic wants warm things to eat and if he takes cold water or cold things, they will excite nausea. You know *Phos* is exactly opposite, because it has intense desire for ice-cold water. Arsenic may be required in various disease conditions of the digestive organs, if the group of its peculiar symptoms viz violent restlessness, fear of death, the peculiar thirst, chilliness, scantiness and fetidity of the stools, etc. is present. You should remember that Arsenic in these cases is generally preceded by *china* and followed by *Phos* or *Sulph*. *China* has tympany, profuse fetid stools, much hunger and undigested portions of food stuffs in the stools. *Phos* has a good appetite or rather goneness in the abdomen, profuse stools, desire for cold drinks and inclination to lie to the right. Sulphur is to be thought of, if any of the indicated remedies does not properly act and cure,

Heart,—You should remember that when Arsenicum alb is indicated there is hardly any chance of cure. Here, a word of explanation is necessary. If, during the course of some acute diseases the heart shows only *functional* disturbances and the whole patient exhibits Arsenicum totality, then this remedy gives a very happy result by soothing all the disturbances of the organ, and at the same time curing the whole patient. For example, a patient after having suffered for a long time from a remittent fever has got swelling of the extremities, palpitation and weakness of the heart with frequent flushings and palpitation but the heart itself *as an organ* is not deranged,—in this case Arsenic can cure the whole patient and bring the heart also in perfect order. But, where the organ is *idiopathically* deranged and *organic* changes have also occurred on account of the organ having been diseased for a long time, there if the totality is is similar to Arsenicum alb, the remedy cannot do much except giving the patient a timely relief. Under that circumstance, it can neither cure the patient as a whole nor can remove the organic changes in the heart. Various cases may be cited in order to prove the above statement.

Hæmorrhoids,—Arsenicum may be indicated in the case of patients having piles, blind or bleeding, on condition that there are violent burning and stitching pains in the anus which are relieved by dry hot fomentations.

Anæmia or Bloodlessness,—As a result of long suffering from a protracted disease, anæmia may

appear and may correspond with the Arsenicum totality. Various other remedies may be required in this condition, viz., *Ferrum meta*, *China*, *Nat. mur*, *Kali carb*, etc, and any of these remedies may be used in accordance with its own totality. In Arsenicum patients you will have to find,—loss of appetite, nausea specially at the smell of food-stuffs, chilliness, desire for covering, mental disquietude, anxiety, fear of death etc. If the anæmia comes in after a long suffering from Malaria, any of these remedies, viz., *China*, *Ars.* and *Nat. mur* are expected to be indicated. You should know the indications of each of these remedies. *China* has tympany, lienteric stools in spite of a good appetite, profuse sweat, aggravation from winds, drinking of milk and fruits, etc. *China* and *Ars.*—both are chilly and one may be profitably used after another. *Ferrum* has a relief from slow movement in spite of its inherent weakness, sudden flushing and turning red hue of the anæmic white spots, upon even a small excitement, lienteria, urgency to stool during eating etc. Moreover, extreme exhaustion, pulsating headache and a loss of appetite or, an unnatural and voracious appetite, are also there. *Nat. mur.* has hammering headache, inveterate constipation, profuse sweat, dejection, a desire for salty things and cold water and a general relief from cold bath, open air etc. It is peculiar that this remedy in spite of its dejection and sadness has a desire for solitude. *Kali carb* has anæmia more specially to be found during child-bed and in the first few months after delivery; intense pain in the small of the back, tympany and sense of fulness in the stomach

immediately after meals, swelling of the upper eyelids, intense weakness and profuse perspiration are the associated symptoms. Lastly, you should always look for the mental totality in the absence of which you can never think of Ars.

Potency,—30th and 200th are generally used. The higher potencies also act very nicely if properly used.

ARSENICUM-IODATUM.

Psoric.
Syphilitic. &
Tubercular. }

Arsenicum-Iodatum is a combination of two deep acting remedies viz, Ars-alb and Iodine. Though it is a combination yet it has become a new remedy, though containing the peculiarities of each at least to some degrees. The remedies of which it is a combination are found to be altogether different in a few particulars, namely Ars is badly chilly whereas Iodine is intensely hot ; Arsenicum wants in appetite whereas Iodine has a voracious one ; Arsenicum wants closed rooms whereas Iodine wants open air, etc. Then again, they are also found to be similar in a few respects namely both are restless, both are emaciated, both are malaria-stricken and the discharges are highly excoriating in both etc. Arsenicum-Iodatum is a very deep acting remedy and has a Tubercular tendency so as to be very useful in the premonitory condition of that persistent and death-dealing miasm.

Hay Fever.—Now-a-days Hay fever is a very common malady in our society. It is generally a

premonitory condition of active Tubercular manifestation. It is generally found that Hay fever does not appear except in Tubercular systems and we should take care to nip the disease in the bud. A general picture of the Hay fever is,—the patient begins to sneeze as soon as he rises up and comes into the open air from the bed-room, watery coryza comes out from the nose and all these stop as the day advances. Then again towards the evening all these reappear and this condition may continue for a few days and then stop only to reappear for a few days after a pause of two or three weeks. In some cases a periodicity is found so as to appear in every Winter or in every Rains, or in every Autumn. In any case, the periodicity is important. *Ars Iod* has it as *Sabadilla*, *Ars*, *Allium-Cepa*, *Euphrasia*, *Arum triphyllum*, *Lachesis* etc. have it. The characteristic point in relation to the Hay fever of *Ars Iod* is,—that both the nostrils are felt to be closed up and the patient gets no scent, moreover a feeling of dryness is there; there are lots of sneezes but the special thing to be noted is its discharges are watery and highly excoriating so as to produce ulceration in the nose. Of course, the constitutional peculiarities are to be carefully noted before prescribing this remedy specially in chronic Hay fever. Now, let us come to the differentiating features of the remedies above noted,—

Arsenicum Album,—Discharge is excoriating but *Ars* is more chilly and there is a characteristic burning in the nose and in the throat which are ameliorated by drinking warm things, by covering, and by keeping within closed doors and aggravated by any

form of cold. Moreover, the characteristic time aggravation of Ars namely, after midnight and mid-day, is not prominent in the combination. Lastly, Ars Iod is Tubercular, Ars is mainly Psoric.

Sabadilla,—It has also Hay fever but it has an aggravation in *bright light* and open air; tenderness is felt in the throat which is ameliorated by drinking *hot water*. Moreover, there is a feeling in the throat that something is stuck there and in order to relieve that feeling the patient has a tendency to constantly swallow. The tenderness in the throat commences, as in Lach, first in the left and extends to the right.

Lachesis,—It has a special aggravation after sleep and the tenderness in the throat, as in *Sabadilla*, commences in the left and extends to the right. But the point to be noted is that the patient wants cold water to relieve the throat symptoms. Moreover, Lach. Hay fever has the periodicity in the relaxing weather of Spring and Summer. Lastly, after break up of every sleep there must be a characteristic aggravation.

Allium Cepa and *Euphrasia*,—These two remedies have already been dealt with previously (See p. 32 and 33). The main difference between the two remedies is that *Euphrasia* has the lachrymation excoriating, but the nasal secretion is bland which is just the opposite in *Cepa*. *Allium Cepa* has ulcerations in the nose and has a relief in the open air.

Arum triphyllum,—The excoriating property of *Arum* is rather extreme. It has sharp ulcerations in the nostrils, mouth, throat, lips, tongue, in fact the whole cavity of the mouth from which a continual

profuse flow of blood and mucus comes out but the wonder is that the patient must bore into them with his fingers constantly and they cannot be prevented inspite of the intense local tenderness.

Dulcamara.—May also be taken up which has hardly any discharge but only dryness and closing up of the nostrils. Its aggravation is from the *sudden change* of damp cold from Summer.

The rest Hay fever remedies namely, Nux, Merc, Kali. Iod, Sanguinaria, Puls, etc. shall be dealt with later on.

Nature, Mind and Constitution.—Ars. Iodatum is a restless remedy and though the restlessness highly aggravates yet the patient cannot do without being restless. I have already told you that this remedy is composed of two remedies of very much opposite symptoms, so that we sometimes find dymatrically opposite symptoms in different patients of this remedy e. g. you will find some Ars-Iodatum patients have a voracious appetite, the others again have none i. e. no appetite at all ; then again some are chilly, the others are hot ; yet *cold bath, cold air, rains and change of seasons are aggravating circumstances* of all patients coming under this remedy. In a general way it is the *medium temperature* that really suits the Ars-Iodatum patient. *Fearfulness, anxiety, restlessness, dejection and high grade of sensitiveness are the features.* The patient is weak with rapidly palpitating heart, pulsations being felt all over. A very small exertion fearfully exhausts the patient, burning is felt everywhere and like Ars is ameliorated by warmth. The discharges are excoriating and even

ulcerating specially the nasal secretions and leucorrhœic flow of the female. The discharges are offensive too.

Syphilitic symptoms.—Most of the syphilitic symptoms are found in this remedy,—I mean the acute syphilis as well as the chronic or constitutional syphilis are in it and provided the individual peculiarities of the patient tally with this remedy you can very well expect a cure. Glands swell, get tender and by and by indurated; liver and spleen also are found to be enlarged.

Tubercular symptoms.—Arsenicum-Iodatum should always be thought of in the premonitory condition of acute Tuberculosis. In the beginning when the temperature rises towards the afternoon or evening there is a dry cough attended with profuse night sweat with a steady exhaustion and emaciation just commencing, this remedy may be indicated and may abort the future course of Tubercular manifestation. But you should always remember that the general constitutional individuality must fit in, otherwise if you use it as a routine remedy in every case of this type you must fail in all cases except those that are truly Homœopathic. If you find from the history that the patient had suffered from Malaria or from Pneumonia and Allopathic treatment was resorted to this remedy is more likely to be indicated (*Carbo-Veg*).

The glandular kingdom is specially acted upon by this remedy. Glands round the throat and neck and those in the intestines are more often affected. They swell up and are generally tender. The

characteristic weakness and the peculiar mental features must be there. A case is going to be cited below.

Case-report,—Sreemati Sarnakumari... .. (the wife of a big officer in the Rangoon Port commissiner department) aged. 34/35, mother of a single daughter came under my treatment in 1922. They were inhabitants of a village near Jharia where they came during the puja vaction that year and arranged for her treatment. When she had been in her father's house had suffered from Malaria for about 3 to 4 years and on account of which she could not regain her health and was rather emaciating when she was 13 or 14 years old. At the 14th year she had her first menses but to utter surprise of all her breast did not usually develop, which were like only two pieces of small rags. Thenceforward she was feeling very much exhaustion during every mense. The flow is irregular, sometimes profuse, sometimes scanty and the white discharge all along there. It was found to have been very much troublesome now-a-days,—it being furiously burning, excoriating and ulcerating. From her twentieth year onwards she had been very much susceptible to cold and several glands specially round the neck and throat as well as in the intestines were visible. The spleen was also in an enlarged condition and they said it was a "Dead spleen." Though apparently there was no fever for so many years yet the spleen did not come to its natural size. The special points in the patient that demanded immediate attention were (1) continued emaciation, (2) white discharge, (3) susceptible to cold, (4) continued

loss of flesh, (5) swelling of the glands. The patient did not feel any inconvenience for the enlargement.

The patient did not like cold both as she could not tolerate it and used to feel pains in her limbs and might get a new attack of cold, much sweating, exhaustion, dejected mood and a constant feeling of a disappointment, much thirst, anxiety and peacelessness of mind etc. were prominent. She did not like heat yet cold in any form could not be tolerated at all.

The husband of the patient was of unimpeachable character but she inherited syphilitic taint from her father. The husband had bleeding piles and his father died of fistula in ano. So that the Tubercular miasm must have to be suspected in the patient.

On the strength of the above group of symptoms I selected *Ars. Iodatum* and administered it in 1000th Potency but no reaction forth coming even after having waited for two months I gave her the remedy in 200th potency yet no reaction. In the 4th month I gave her *Tuberculinum Bovinum* 1m a single dose. Within a month a reaction appeared but only pertaining to mentals. No truly curative actions commenced as I observed that the swelling of the glands did not allay. Hence I concluded that the dose of *Tuberculinum* would not produce a curative effect though it might have done away with some resisting force within the system that stood in the way of commencing the curative action by virtue of *Ars-Iodatum*, the truly Homœopathic remedy for the case. In fact my conclusion proved to be verily true. After two months after the dose of *Tuberculinum* the patient showed a stagnant condition and a single dose of *Ars-Iodatum*

1m was given her and to our surprise we found that within 3 weeks the glands were much reduced. I was greatly relieved to find that truly curative action had commenced. About two months after I had to give 5m and the curative course continued for four months, at the end of which the glands were not visible; moreover the susceptibility to cold was by this time much reduced. After waiting for the time I had to give another dose of 10m, and no other was required. In September 1923 my patient had a severe attack of old Malarial fever that had been suppressed and she had to suffer for 10 or 12 days. The anxious husband wrote to me and I advised "No medicine", and in fact the fever went off by itself.

* How could you know that *Tuberculinum* could not cure the above patient? It is generally known that when mentals are improved it is to be understood that a curative course has already commenced. In that case how a different conclusion could be arrived at in the present case? I think that I should explain. In the present case the patient was similar in all respects with *Ars. Iod.* but there having been a deep Tubercular current in her flowing from a long time from the heredity *Ars. Iod.* being not so deep could not manifest the initial curative impression in her and *Tuber. Bov.* came in as a help. But as the patient was not similar to *Tuber. Bov.* the remedy could only produce its beneficial impression in the mental plane of the patient and no more. It may be thought that *Ars. Iod.* could not produce the favourable impression and *Tuber. Bov.* removed the obstruction and made *Ars. Iod.* itself to produce the impression. Now,

on the one hand Ars. Iod. finished its action. *Tuber. Bov.* was also not similar, hence the repetition of Ars. Iod. commenced to do what was needful and in fact the patient made a favourable progress all along.

There is another thing as an infallible indication of the commencement of the curative course in this patient which must be the reduction of the swellings of her glands according to Hering's Law of Cure, viz., that the *last* symptom should be the *first* to go away. Our illustrious Dr. Hering came to this Law after a series of observations in very many deep cases and for a long time. The thing is that there must be a *retrograde* way of cure. Suppose, in a chronic case A, B, C, D, E are the manifestations in the order of time, so that when the curative course begins after, and as a result of, the administration of a truly Homœopathic indicated remedy, then the last manifestation "E" should go away first, then the last but one, viz., "D", and in this way in the retrograde fashion. This has been fixed and we also daily observe that this is the true order of a true cure. If that be the case, you can rest assured that the final cure is very sure, and is only a question of time.

The above order of cure was duly verified and even the Malarial fever that had manifested during her early age also came to reappear and then her cure came to finality. This reappearance of the suppressed manifestations on which the disorder had its first onset is to be taken as the *scientific proof* of a true cure.

Skin Diseases,—The skin symptoms of this remedy are highly important. There are various

forms of skin diseases, and of various names and denominations in this remedy but we do not require a name. One peculiarity is there and that is there appear and fall off innumerable *scales*, big and small associated with violent itching. The itching puts off the scales and the raw places are laid bare. Generally the skin diseases of this remedy are found to be dry.

* One thing I must mention in this connection that the skin diseases of Ars. Iod. are found to come *in place of* Tubercular developments in some of the organs of the patient. The skin symptoms, if truly and Homœopathically cured under the Law of Similars, the Tubercular manifestations are prevented from appearing but in case they are suppressed, those developments are sure to come. It is generally known that lung-phthisis is the only ultimate that is Tubercular but that is a mistake. Tubercular manifestations may appear anywhere and everywhere in the human system, though only a different name is allotted according to the spot of manifestation. If it appears in the lungs, it is called Phthisis, if it appears in the brain, it is Insanity, if it appears in the bones, it is said to be Bone T. B or Caries, if it is in the abdomen, it is called the Abdominal T. B. The same thing is there, viz., the play of the Tubercular taint is everywhere and there is nothing in a name. Of course, there are reasons also why the Tubercular taint will try to have, in one, its manifestation in the lungs and in another man in the brain and in the third man, again, in the abdomen, etc. The thing is that the weakest organ is affected and a different person may

have the weakness in a different organ from that of another patient, on account of the indwelling Psora and its influence upon the system, *before* the Tubercular miasm obtains an entrance into it. I wish to illustrate the skin condition of Ars. Iod. by giving a case in point.

Case Report,—Sj. Gunamay.....M. A., a retired professor of a premier college of Calcutta got a sad bereavement on account of the death by drowning of his only son. He had lost his wife long long ago, and after the bereavement he now thought of a change of climate to regain his mental balance, if possible, and had been to Dhanbad in Jan. 1923. He had a bad eczema in both of his legs from the knees downwards and came to my dispensary for placing himself under my treatment. Our whole Bar felt very deeply for him as he was a man of intensely honest and religious nature (I used to practise both Law and Medicine at the time). I quote his words as in the following.

"Doctor, you will see, I am a man really accursedthis eczema is there for the last 14 years and I think nobody can imagine what a great trouble I have been suffering from it. I can give you nothing regarding the modalities except that it increases during rains. Oh! what a violent suffering I had last rains!.....One peculiar symptom that I can give you is the exfoliation, in other words, varieties of scales of various shape and thickness come out of it. A portion may appear to get well but so long the colour of the skin of that portion does not get quite natural, there is a chance of re-appearance

of the eczema on that spot. Lots of external application I used but to no effect. Injections I never took.

"I have a susceptibility to cold and coryza even from my childhood but catarrh I never remember to have extended downwards below the throat,—it confines itself to the nose; every fortnight or so I get a renewal of the coryza with a burning within the nostrils and the roof of the mouth. A thin secretion comes in, keeps there for 16 to 24 hours and then goes away for a fort-night or so. I want covering and keeping myself in a warm room. Regarding bath, I do not enjoy it though I take it as a matter of habit and that only in tepid water. Sometimes my throat gets inflamed and the glands swell up.

"My mind is vehemently sad and dejected and there are sufficient reasons for it which you know already (Here, the patient sobbed and wept aloud). I do not know what a cheerfulness is; there is no joy in my life except what I felt during my student days. I have always been and still am of rather a restless nature, so that I am unable to confine myself to one subject or to one place. If, under your auspices I can get my eczema cured, I shall think of passing my later days in deep concentration and prayer".

On the strength of the above symptom-totality, I selected *Ars. Iod.* as that was the only remedy that loomed large before my eyes. I administered *Ars. Iod.* 1M. in four graduated doses, every two weeks and an instruction was kept so as to stop taking any further dose, in case improvement ensues. 18th January 1923.

24th March afternoon, the patient came to our Bar Library and showed the spots. We found and he also corroborated that exfoliation was much reduced. All the four doses had already been used and now there was given a pause so long the improvement continued.

11th June, the patient came to say that there was no further improvement and so a single dose of 10M. was given. It was found in August (the exact date is not written) that, exfoliation was altogether stopped but the spots turned copper-coloured and the itching rather increased. The patient wanted some further dose but nothing was given.

On the 25th October, it was found that there was no change with regard to the colour or the itching. A dose of *Tuberculinum Bovinum* 1M. was given. There was a great improvement no doubt but the spots could not regain the original skin colour. After much thought and study a dose of *Sulphur* 10M. was given on the 9th January, 1924. That was rather the finishing dose and I got no further news from the patient. Here, the work of *Ars. Iod.* was wonderful!

With the help of this remedy I was successful in curing a *Leucoderma* patient under a most hopeless circumstance, the patient passing his days mournfully and waiting for death. In this case my attention was drawn to this remedy by the high grade of exfoliation of very small scales that I marked in the patient. I stop giving the details of the case for fear of space.

* Before leaving the discourses upon *Ars. Alb.* and its combinations, I should write a few

words about the essential peculiarities of the remedy. It consists in this, that the remedy is at once deep yet sometimes very much superficial; that its course of action is very slow yet sometimes it seems to act with electric rapidity, so that the essential character of Arsenic is very peculiar so as to be confounded at times. In a diarrhœic patient, the condition of Arsenic may come up in course of 2 or 3 hours,—the course is so rapid, yet Arsenicum symptoms do not generally appear before 20 or 22 years in a heart case. The heart symptoms may begin with a few superficial remedies and may go on and on with remedies like *Spigelia*, *Cactus*, *Naja*, *Ammon Carb* etc. and after a pretty good long period of 20 to 25 yrs. may require Ars. or *Lachesis*. In Malaria cases, it has been seen that patients come into Arsenicum condition in a week or two and again a chronic fever may take 2 or 3 years to develop Ars. Alb. symptoms.

Then again, its action, the course of action, the nature of action etc. are found to be different in different systems. In some, its action is slow and delayed, in a few others it is very rapid; in some, its action is deep and searching, in a few others very much superficial and so on. What must be *the reason* behind all these? What is likely to be there to produce all these vagaries and varieties?

The reason is explained. Every patient has in him a mixture of Psora, Sycosis etc., in varied combination, the nature of which is different in each patient. This nature of combination and depth of the miasms make each patient altogether different from others though each of them is found to be suffering

from each of the miasms. A particular miasm working for a century in the family must be the deepest of the deep when reaching a particular member of that family after so long a time, and the work of the miasm must be in the same proportion varied and extensive. Here two things ought to be remembered,—one is depth of the miasm working in the system, the other is extent of the work it can do. Regarding the remedies we also find, as an exact counterpart of what we find in the different systems of the patients, that a particular remedy may have in it the characters of all the miasms but it can not work *equally* regarding each of them and therefore we find that a particular remedy may be very deep Psoric but only a superficial Syphilitic or a remedy is deep Syphilitic but very much superficial Psoric. As there is a difference of nature and combination of the different miasms in the human system, so there is a varied capacity of each of our remedies to meet them. Arsenicum Album can work upon all the miasms but can not work with the same depth over each of them. As a matter of fact it works deepest upon Psora, far less upon Sycosis and the least upon Syphilis. Now, a system which is deeply Psoric but Sycotic only in a faint way, will be very deeply impressed by Ars, and Sycosis will be touched only, meaning thereby that Psoric symptoms will be almost effaced away whereas the Sycotic ones may not be removed. But in systems in which Psora is superficial, whereas the other two or one of them very deep and predominant, there Ars. Alb. will show its action in a superficial and 'desultory way'. This is the

reason behind the peculiarities of Ars. Alb. above referred to.

There are other remedies also which have such a peculiar characteristic though in a less profound way e.g. *Thuja* which has a superficial action upon Psora far deeper upon Syphilis but the greatest and the deepest action it can do upon Sycosis. For example, *Sulphur* which is a deep Psoric but only superficially Sycotic and far from having a curative action upon Syphilis, it rather aggravates the condition. Another example you may have in your oft-used remedy *Nat. Sulph.* It can work very deeply and for a long long time upon Sycosis and can work only superficially on Psora but has practically no influence upon Syphilis. In this way, we can study all the deep-acting remedies of our Materia Medica and can understand the nature and depth of their action as also the reason underlying the different capacities in each.

One word more and I shall leave, for the present, our study of Arsenicum. The action of Ars. Alb. or Iod. upon Syphilis should be understood. Both of them seem to act almost in the same way. Where the Syphilitic chancre is rather superficial, the ulcer not being very deep or extensive, and, as concomitant symptoms, there is burning ameliorated by warmth, the discharge being scanty with violently offensive smell and the patient himself being chilly, *Ars. Alb.* or *Iod.* can cure *the chancre only*, but can not touch the deeper *miasm* underlying, so that none of them has any the least capacity of curing the Syphilitic miasm as a miasm, meaning the deep and underlying tendency

of the patient to manifest syphilitic symptoms every now and then.

If you are at a confusion where to use the *Album* and where the *Iodatum*, you should remember the highly excoriating property of the *Iodium* combination. The discharges of both the preparations are scanty, highly offensive and highly excoriating, though the excoriating property is more in *Iodatum* than in *Album*.

Potency,—All the potencies from 200th upwards.

Bacillinum and *Tuberculinum Bovinum* are the great complementaries.

ARUM TRIPHYLLUM.

I do not know if this remedy has ever been included within the Anti-Psoric group by any of our illustrious predecessors, yet I know of its Anti-Psoric capacity and its efficacy under the most trying circumstances of many acute diseases. Its action is not only wonderful but very much sweet inasmuch as it can, in course of a night, drive off the gloom of the family by bringing in a wonderful change in an almost hopeless patient. There is no chance of confusion amongst the remedies of the group similar to this remedy in their action, if we can remember its main characteristic. If we can find in a case this characteristic referred to, we can easily select this remedy and we shall have never any chance for repentance.

What is that characteristic? Though there are ulcerations within the cavity of the mouth, over the tongue as well as in the corners of the mouth, the patient will persist *in constantly boring into the ulcerated spots with his fingers, though there is an intense sensitiveness and consequent intolerable pains as a result of the boring.* In fact, when the patient bores at the spots, he feels horrible pains, so much so that he startles up, even weeps aloud, still he would not leave boring. Why? Because at the ulcerated spots he feels a vehement itching, crawling, tingling, etc., so that he is bound to do so and can not desist from it. If you can remember one word more in this connection, you will have a fair picture of the remedy. It is this that the saliva or any discharge of the Arum Triphyllum patient is badly excoriating and ulcerating. Perhaps there is only one remedy in our Materia Medica which has the excoriating property of a similar nature, viz, *Nitric Acid*, but more on this later on.

The three main points that you ought to remember are,—(1) the patient will persistently bore into the ulcerated spots, in spite of the intense sensitiveness and consequent pain, (2) horrible tingling in the affected area and (3) all discharges are horribly excoriating and ulcerating. These three are the *essentials* of Arum Triphyllum.

Typhoid fever,—The above described ulcerations take place within the mouth, nostrils, throat, etc. with horrible tingling felt by the patient making him awfully restless. But this condition generally comes in along with Scarlet fever, Diphtheria, Typhoid, Measles, Small Pox, etc., specially as a result of the

eruptions being suppressed or repercussed by some un-homœopathic means or by virtue of Psora dwelling within the system. In any case, where the above picture is manifested, the patient must have brain symptoms, rolling of the head over the pillow with salivation, the saliva being highly excoriating. The patient is highly restless and gets not a wink of sleep. His condition appears most pitiable when he is found to persistently bore into the ulcers with his fingers in order to relieve the tingling, itching and titilating pains there. Though by so doing he makes his condition more and more pitiable, yet he can not be desisted therefrom. The ulcers are red, angry-looking, and full of excoriating discharges.

If there is Diphtheria as a complication of the Typhoid fever, the glands round the throat swell up and a particular difficulty is felt by the patient in swallowing so that most of the food stuffs come out through the nostrils. There are horrible ulcerations in the mouth, tongue and corners of the lips which the patient constantly bores into.

It has been noticed that Arum Triphyllum is rather a *left*-sided remedy,—the ulcerations, the Diphtheric patch, etc., are more found towards the left than the right.

Hay fever and Coryza,—Arum is often used (where the symptoms correspond) in Coryza and Hay fever. The left nostril closes up so that the patient has to breathe through the mouth, the Coryza and the general condition of the patient being aggravated during the night. But the main characteristic which should be present in all Arum cases, is the excoriat-

ing discharge, so that the nostrils are ulcerated and a tingling is felt there and the patient is compelled to bore into the nose in order to relieve the tingling. One point more which you should also remember is that Arum ulcers "burn like fire."

There is a likelihood of confusion to be made between Arum Triphyllum and *Cina* with regard to "boring into the nose." *Cina* child also bores into the nose, as there is a tingling, as Arum Triphyllum children do, but there is a wide difference between the aspects of two remedies. *Cina* has no ulceration, nor has it any pungent or excoriating discharge and so *Cina* patient does not feel any pains due to his boring but rather feels relieved. Moreover, *Cina* has no brain symptoms.

Aphonia or Hoarseness,—You would not surprise to hear that a remedy which can produce Diphtheria, ulcerations in the throat, etc., should have hoarseness in its pathogenesis. The hoarseness of Arum aggravates or comes in from exposure to sharp east or north winds or from excessive use of the vocal organs. The peculiarity of Arum hoarseness is that whenever the patient increases the tone of his voice, it breaks up into two or three types of voice. With regard to the hoarseness, the following remedies may be compared with Arum, viz., *Rhus Tox*, *Graphites*, *Causticum*, *Phos* and *Carbo Veg*. Each of these remedies has the breakage of voice on raising the tone, but only *Rhus tox* has it that on first one or two attempts the patient feels a difficulty but on repeated attempts the voice becomes easier. In fact, in most of the diseases of *Rhus*, it is a decided peculiarity that

there is a difficulty in a first few attempts which goes away on repeated efforts. *Graphites* has constipation and a predominance of skin symptoms and its aphonia is rather of a chronic type. *Causticum* is used as a complementary to *Graphites*. *Causticum* has a tenderness and a sense of ulceration in the throat and its hoarseness aggravates in the morning. *Causticum* has an amelioration in rains whereas *Rhus* and *Carbo veg.* have an aggravation at the time. *Causticum* is complementary to *Carbo veg.* But it should never be used before or after *Phosphorus*. Then again, though *Carbo* and *Rhus* aggravate during the rains yet *Rhus* has an aggravation in cold damp, whereas *Carbo* in warm damp. *Carbo* aphonia aggravates in the evening, *Causticum* in the morning. Moreover, *Carbo-veg* patients want fanning under all circumstances. *Phosphorus* has a tenderness in the throat and a feeling of dryness there and the patient desists from speaking, fearing it would aggravate. A *Phosphorus* patient generally wants cold water in the head and stomach but cannot tolerate any sort of cold in the throat. The hoarseness of a *Phosphorus* patient is not always an ordinary symptom to overlook, because in many cases it has been found to be a *premonitory* symptom of acute Tuberculosis. The necessity for comparison amongst so many remedies arose on account of the common symptom which all of them have, viz., the voice breaks up on its tone being raised.

The **Coryza** symptoms of *Arum* have already been given viz, watery coryza, pungent and excoriating, closing up the nostrils, specially the left and

aggravation of sneezing at night. There are many remedies which have one or other symptom common with *Arum* and they should better be compared viz., *Ammon carb*, *Sambucus*, *Nux-vom*, *Lyco*, *Cepa*, *Iodine*, *Natr. ars.*, *Ars. iod.*, and *Sabadilla*; there may be a few others but these are the remedies which should mainly be compared.

Ammon carb,—The characteristic symptom of *Ammon Carb* even in its Diphtheria is stuffing of the nostrils but there is an intense chilliness, and bleeding from the nose after cold bath, after meals, and during washing the face in the morning. *Ammon. Carb.* has an aggravation after sleep as also the left-sidedness, both of which are found in *Lachesis* as well, but they are inimical and should never be used one after another.

Sambucus,—It has also stuffing of the nostrils specially in little children. But its coryza does not flow. It dries up within the nostrils and closes them up, so that the nursing children feel a difficulty when nursing and weep aloud. *Sambucus* picture is this that the child gets up suffocated and sits up in bed, the whole body turns green and it can easily inhale but feels a difficulty in exhaling. It has also an aggravation during sleep, another peculiarity of *Sambucus* is that the child perspires when it does not sleep, but as soon as it sleeps the whole body becomes dry. Lastly, like *Chamo* and *Rhus*, *Sambucus* has a relief from exertion.

Nux vom,—Its coryza is peculiar in that though its patient is chilly and wants warmth and warm room, yet its coryza aggravates in a warm room. The

nose is stuffed up and frequent sneezing with watery secretion appears. But the coryza appears to be ameliorated if the patient walks about in open air.

Lycopodium,—Much stuffing of the nose, the child wakes up due to the stuffing and is compelled to breathe through the mouth. Just remember *Lyco* has flapping of the *alæ nasi*, aggravation from 4 to 8 p.m., tympany, constipation and a liking for hot food.

Allium cepa,—Its nasal secretion is *excoriating* but lachrymation is *bland* (*Euphrasia*, just opposite). Coryza is ameliorated in open air and aggravates in closed rooms. The nasal secretions are thin and pungent.

Iodine,—The secretions are highly *excoriating*, so much so, that there are ulcerations in the nostrils; but the main feature of *Iodine* is that the patient eats well but dries up and wastes away in proportion, amelioration from food, cold bath and open air.

Natr. ars.,—It has also *excoriating* coryza along with a tenderness on the fore-head; the main feature is the sense of dryness along with thin secretions. Cold and dust aggravate sneezing and coryza, the morning being the special time for aggravation.

Ars. iod.,—It has predominance of pungent and *excoriating* discharges and is in frequent use in new and old types of Hay fever. A feeling of dryness, watery secretion, predominance of sneezing, closure of nostrils and ulceration are there in it but the peculiar constitutional totality must be found (see *Ars. iod.*).

Sabadilla,—Constant sneezing, profuse secretion from the nose, aggravation in bright light and open

air and a constant inclination to swallow in order to relieve the feeling of something sticking in the throat. The tenderness in the throat is relieved by hot drinks. Like *Lachesis* the left side is first affected. The Hay fever remedies having excoriating discharges have been compared with Arum. There are a few remedies again which should be compared in a general way with Arum,—viz, *Nitric acid*, *Muriatic acid*, *Lycopodium*, *Ailanthus*, *Arsenicum album*, and *Baptisia*.

Nitric acid,—A confusion generally arises between *Nitric acid* and Arum, because both have ulcerations in the mouth and corners of the lips, as well as, in the nostrils, excoriating discharges, intense exhaustion, etc., are there in both the remedies. But the *Nitric acid* case is deeper and therefore the remedy is used in dangerous types of Scarlet fever, Diphtheria, Typhoid fever, etc., specially towards the end. Of course, the images of both the remedies though are alike, yet *Nitric acid* is specially useful in systems affected with Syphilis or Mercury or both. Moreover, *Nitric acid* heart-beats intermit and the urine of the *Nitric acid* patient is extremely pungent and excoriating. All these peculiarities are wanting in Arum.

Muriatic acid,—The weakness and exhaustion of this remedy are so much pronounced that the patient is inclined to slide down the bed. The ulcerations in the cavity of the mouth are deeper and blackish. The heart-beats become intermittent. The stool and urine are passed involuntarily. In fact, there is hardly any medicine in our *Materia Medica* which has so much weakness and exhaustion as *Muriatic acid* has and

therefore it is used during the precarious condition of Scarlet fever, Diphtheria, Typhoid fever, etc. It is a deep Anti-psoric.

Lycopodium,—This is also many times indicated in the above serious condition. The child bores into the ulcerated spots as in *Arum* but there are other symptoms upon which you can easily distinguish. The *Lycopodium* child has generally closure of the nostrils and for which it breathes through the nose; it has flapping of the *alæ nasi* also; moreover, in the midst of the sleep it wakes up frightened, weeps and kicks the mother, so that sometimes it is difficult to console it. Lastly, constipation, fullness of the stomach, 4 to 8 P. M. aggravation, etc., are the main features of the remedy. Lastly, in the terribly serious stage, the lower jaw hangs down, the child lies unconscious with sterterous breathing and there is found red sediment with urine.

Ailanthus,—Though it has no boring into the ulcerated spots, yet like *Arum*, it has great ulcerations and pungent and excoriating discharges. There are ulcerations, swelling, internally and externally, as also the high grade of tenderness in the cavity of the mouth and throat, even sometimes worse than in *Arum*. But the main distinction lies in this that an *Ailanthus* child lies stupid, unconscious and comatose but the *Arum* child is highly restless.

Arsenicum alb.,—Though it has ulceration, excoriating discharge, etc., as in the other two remedies, yet its dryness is predominant in place of salivation. Moreover, *Arum* restlessness is bodily but *Arsenicum* restlessness consists of mental anxiousness, intoler-

able inquietude and intense fear of death. The discharges are scanty but highly offensive. Arum discharge is characteristically profuse, *Ars.* discharge is characteristically offensive; and if there is offensiveness in the Arum discharge, it is to be taken as an exception. Discharge is thin and excoriating in both, though *Ars.* prostration is greater. Lastly, Arum is wanting in the midday and midnight aggravation of *Ars.*

Baptisia,—In Typhoid fever, Diphtheria or Scarlatina, etc., the *Baptisia* patient has the red face, deep unconsciousness though showing occasional restlessness but the characteristic point is violently offensive decomposition; ulcers are blackish and appear to be in the highest state of decomposition, the gum and the tongue are full of sordes, deep ulcerated and highly offensive.

You should see that an Arum patient should be as speedily cured as possible, because within a short time the patient may come to a serious, rather an incurable condition. I describe below a case of Arum Triphyllum.

Case-Report,—Ganapati, aged 4 or 5 years, son of an E. I. Ry. employee, named Sj. Bibhakar Chatterjee got a very high fever with intense heat, in the month of November 1917. During the first four or five days what medicine was given was not known, and though as a result the fever heat abated a little yet the character of the fever did not change. Moreover, the child had a few reddish pimples all over the body. They were not numerous and came out only sparingly. Of course, the physician in attendance did what was

needful to get them sufficiently out but they did not, and instead of that, Typhoid symptoms came in and along with those there was a swelling in the throat. The child could not swallow anything specially the liquid substances, because on the very attempt it would piteously weep aloud and the substances would force out through the nose. Unconsciousness began to deepen and yet there were no other modalities, the fever having continued as a synocha between 101° and 102° all day and night. On the 8th day, it was found that the whole cavity of the mouth was full of ulcerations and the patient could not close the mouth and there was too much salivation. On the 10th day evening, when convulsions appeared the family and the wise physician engaged myself. I found the following conditions and symptoms.

I found the patient so much restless that the family scattered round his bed a number of small pillows, because there was no knowing where the child would toss upon and be hurt. The throat had a big swelling and the mouth cavity was full of ulcers which the child persisted in boring into, though unconsciously, yet weeping for the act. The attending physician had already given *Cina* from 200 to 1000 potency but to no effect. The abdomen was found tympanitic, urine considerably small,—only a few drops at a time, that also only once or twice in twentyfour hours. The ulcers were scarlet red and it seemed as if somebody had washed them with soap and water. Lower jaw hung down, and the child was breathing through the mouth and there was an almost constant flow of saliva. A

terrible type of Diphtheria I had to fight with. However, the above symptom-totality furnished me a clear picture of the remedy which I gave in the 6th potency every four hours. After the fourth dose, restlessness was a bit controlled and so the interval of administration was increased, and then I stopped giving further doses. On the 13th day the temperature came down to 99°,—so low a temperature was not read any day up to date. Most probably on the 16th day, I had to give 30,—two doses with the result that there was profuse and frequent urinations and the patient got cured by and by. It was noticed that for three weeks, exfoliation of the skin continued and the neighbours declared that the patient was brought back from the jaws of death.

Potency,—6th, 30th and 200th act well. Higher potencies are generally not used because the remedy is only useful in *acute* condition.

ASAFŒTIDA.

Anti-Syphilitic }
and }
Anti-Sycotic. }

Asafœtida, though a vegetable gum seems to antidote Sycotic and Syphilitic diseases but having no very depth of action, is hardly used except in cases where its peculiar symptoms are aptly manifested.

You cannot, from the external appearance of the Asafœtida patient, believe that he is a "patient" at all. Because a patient worth the name should have a lean, thin and anæmic appearance; but an Asafœtida

patient does not *look like* a suffering individual. To all external appearance, he is fat and rotund, face is rather reddish, even looking healthier than ordinary healthy people. There are many remedies which are like *Asafoetida* in this sphere, i. e. the patients of those remedies also appear quite healthy. What's the reason? The reason is that on account of weakness of the heart in these patients, the venous blood is not properly circulated and so stagnates in the veins and capillaries. These remedies are *Ammon Carb*, *Carbo Veg*, *Lachesis*, *Pulsatilla*, etc. This condition of the patient is called *false plethora* and that is the reason why they look fat, rotund and healthy.

Picture.—The characteristic point in connection with this remedy is the *anti-peristalsis of the food stuffs*. A few words may be useful in this connection. When we eat anything, up to the act of chewing and swallowing, it is *voluntary*. Then, as soon as the food stuffs are pushed down by and below the œsophagus, the work of digestion and assimilation is absolutely involuntary. They course down and down and down, and after the full digestion and assimilation are complete the *effete* portions are ejected through the anus in the form of *fæces*. Now, you are to note only the *Influx*, I mean, the tendency of the food stuffs to course downwards, rather the vital act of pushing them down and down. In *Asafoetida* this onward tendency of coursing down is found to be reversed. That vital act is technically called *peristalsis* and in this remedy a condition of *anti-peristalsis* is created. You should remember that *Influx*. If the system is diseased, there may be various disorders with regard to

this Influx. In Asafœtida it is anti-peristalsis i. e. the food stuffs have rather a tendency to course *up* and there are other remedies too which have also similar disorders. For example, *Ipecac*, in which the patient has an aversion to swallow even, as if something within makes an effort in the upward direction against entering the *bolus* within, a condition or an upward effort set in by the vitality which we call nausea ; for example, *Nux vom*, in which we find a desire or urgency, to evacuate the fæces but the urgency is mostly ineffectual. Here also there is an anti-peristalsis in the lower intestines ; for example, *Lachesis* again, in which the fæces are confined in the anus and there is no vital effort to push them out. In this way *Silica*, *Sanicula*, *Sepia* and various other remedies are there which have some sort of disorder in this sphere. In Asafœtida, in place of healthy peristalsis from the stomach and duodenum downwards, a reverse action, a sort of upward effort is produced and for that reason no coursing downwards, no passing of flatus, no gradual assimilation, but, instead, an upward course is produced and so a sort of fullness is experienced attended with highly offensive and sour eructations and sometimes of the smell of garlic and the patient feels as if his stomach would burst. Asafœtida has *another* peculiarity, viz., its *sensitiveness*, so that the patient gets hysteric fits on the slightest cause. For example, she has indigestion and tympany or has some discharge suddenly stopped. For such a cause she gets hysteric fits. For example, she has got some ulcer somewhere in her body and the ulcer is so much sensitive that

even upon a slight touch upon it, she will get fainted away. The *third* thing which seems to be a characteristic of this remedy is the offensive smell of its discharges, viz., stool, sweat, flatus, etc. The *fourth* or the last point is the feeling of goneness in the stomach specially at about 11 A. M. (*Sulphur, Nat. Carb. etc.*).

Mind,—It is a pity that the drug was not proved in a higher potency and that is the reason why its mental peculiarities have not properly come out. Intense sensitiveness, a restless mood, the desire for open air and an aversion to be in a closed room and to heat,—these may be taken as its *mental* features.

Syphilitic symptoms,—Asafoetida has the ulcerating property characteristically. It produces ulcerations in the eyes, suppurates the ears, eats into the root of the nose, and all these ulcers are characteristically highly *sensitive*. Moreover, they discharge a vehemently *fœtid* secretion. They look deep, the edges being of bluish or violet colour. *Lachesis* has also much sensitiveness, *Hepar* also has it but the characteristic difference lies in this that the Asafoetida ulcers want cold applications and open air over them but those of the other two remedies want warmth. Moreover, in the ulcers of Asafoetida, there is a sharp, stitching pain pushing outwards. Throbbing or pulsating is also there and they characteristically aggravate at night.

On account of the syphilitic miasm, the following indications are there in it, viz., aggravation of all sufferings at night, tenderness in the bones, caries, pro-

fuseness of sweat, aversion to warmth and desire for cold. Then again, nostrils ulcerate from which offensive pus comes out, nostrils are closed up and the patient has to breathe through the mouth. This offensive discharge is called *ozæna*. The septum of the nose is by and by wasted due to the ulceration and discharge and the nose flattens down. *Kali bi* also has it, but *Kali bi* discharge is sticky and stringy. Moreover, *Kali bi* characteristically forms scales in the nose and has offensive breath. *Kali-Carb*, though averse to summer, cannot at all tolerate cold. Not only the patient himself wants warmth, the ulcers also are relieved from it. I want to put in a peculiar case as in the following.

Case Report,—In 1916 March, Sreemati.....Bibi, a Mahommedan girl, an inhabitant of Gor-jaipur having been ill, I was called in from Purulia for treatment. A certain Civil Surgeon declared her case to have been incurable. When I asked as to what was the matter her husband gave me the following description. "Dear Sir, for the last four or five times we were given to understand that my wife was pregnant. Even in the seventh or eighth month her breasts, as usual with the would be mothers used to be filled with milk every time but towards the end of eighth or at the beginning of the ninth month a violent hæmorrhage for two or three days took place and everything used to end in a fuss. Lots of things we have done with a view of preventing this sort of things but to no effect. We did several things for obtaining the blessings of God as also we kept her under the treatment of Allopathic Doctors and

Kabirajas, but no result is forthcoming. The most pitiable circumstance is this that the Doctors and the Kabirajas are unanimously of opinion from the external appearance of the patient that there is no wrong in her and nothing to be treated at all. As a last resort we have approached you, and pray, that the needful may be done. We have a great *purdah* system but as for myself, I am not much in its favour. You may examine the patient in all necessary ways”.

From the history I came to know that the present age of my patient was 26 or 27 ; eight or nine years back she had suffered from hysteric fits continually, off and on, for more than two years and the fits were suppressed by a “quack”. Just after the meals, the patient had the greatest uneasiness due to tympany in the stomach and she had to walk along and could not rest for a while. There was too much perspiration, and on some days she had the hysteric fits and used to suddenly fall down ; on the days she had no fits, a series of eructations would well up towards the evening which would give her some relief, but it was a remarkable fact that no flatus would pass. She had a great terror for the sun-rays and she yet has it. As soon as the fits were suppressed, all those troubles came up. I examined the patient's heart and found it rather a bit fatty. The whole patient was also fat and fleshy, and I noticed an offensive smell to have been emanating from her. I could not ascertain whether her sweat, that was rather profuse, would smell so. The patient was hot and could not tolerate warm rooms or mid-day heat.

The patient gave me the following points,—
“Father, as an aura before the hysteric fits, I would feel something ball-like rising up from the abdomen towards the throat and tending to choke up my breath. Just after it, I lose my senses. The hysteria is still there though the fits have become few and far between. Then for the last ten or twelve years there is a persistent ulcer in both of my nostrils, and the discharge is so offensive that even myself can hardly stand the smell. The physicians are of opinion that operation is necessary, but I am afraid of operation. Palpitation is a constant companion and pulsation is all there throughout my system. The most aggravating circumstances are the following viz., night, hot days, specially cloudy hot days.

On questioning I came to know that the husband's system was quite normal but her parents had *sypilis* and both of them were *mercurialised*.

Apart from the above set of symptoms, I found that the patient's body was a bit fleshy and of reddish hue as also that she was generally upset in the sun-rays and during summer. Then again, I came to know that sleep was anything but normal but in case there was good sleep she felt greatly relieved after it. On these symptoms, I gave her *Asafœtida* 1000 in two consecutive mornings and many doses of placebo. After three months I repeated the remedy in the same potency and I kept an instruction that if fits appeared or there were pregnancy symptoms along with production of milk in her breasts, intimation should have to be sent to me.

After two weeks the fits rather appeared in

numbers for two or three days and then they stopped once for all. It is needless to say that none of the other two symptoms ever appeared. I had been to that village for the treatment of another patient and her husband came up to me to pay, as he said, due respects to me as also to inform me that the deep ulcerations in the patient's nostrils had also been cured under my treatment. The patient's family rather wondered how so fat a woman could be reduced with tiny sugar pills.

There are a few remedies which should be compared with, viz., *Ammon carb*, *Lachesis*, *Merc. sol* and *Aurum*, and only one word for each will, I hope, clearly make out the difference. *Ammon carb* is chilly, *Lachesis* has the characteristic aggravation after sleep, *Merc* wanting medium temperature and to lie only to the left and *Aurum meta.* has a strong desire for suicide.

Modalities.—*Aggravation* in the night, from touch, rest, in heated rooms and from application of warmth; *amelioration* in open air, in cold and from exertion. *Asafœtida* has a tendency of manifesting symptoms more in the left side of the body.

Potency.—Much useful from 12 to 1000, though the higher potencies also work very well.



AURUM METALLICUM *Anti-Psoric,*
Anti-Syphilitic & }
Anti-Sycotic.

* Nothing is *absolute* good or *absolute* bad in the creation. Everything is either *relative* good or *relative* bad. This goodness or badness does not reside in any particular *object* of the external world, but it resides within ourselves. It depends upon the *condition* of our mind and body, and this condition, again, is the result of our past deeds of this life and in series of lives before this. Of course, in our common parlance, we say that milk is a very good and nourishing diet, but this milk is highly injurious, even abominable, for the persons suffering from intestinal disorder. We say north-east wind is highly harmful but the same north-east wind is very much refreshing and rather braceful for the healthy. If you do not have any miasm or any susceptibility within you, every created object cannot but be friendly to you,—that is the law. Nothing comes out from the hands of the Creator, Who is all good, or nothing is possible for Him to create at all which is conducive to our bad or evil. We are *ourselves* responsible for anything that affects us or our health. We make *ourselves* susceptible to the external winds, light, water, waves, sun-rays, etc. on account of our own law-breaking, so that the responsibility lies absolutely with us. We are *ourselves* at fault and the external creation never is. The fault lies with the unbridled gratification of our senses. A man that is pure and scrupulously obeys the Natural law, has nothing to complain ever against any external object. Even the ferocious animals

like tigers and lions have been known to forget their ferocity and evil nature when they come in contact with a man who entertains nothing but love for them. *This is the universal law and it has no failure.*

Aurum metallicum or Gold is the most precious and dearest of all things to be possessed by man. But, if you study the provings of this substance, you will see what a terrible discomfort, what a formidable disorder, it can bring to the human mind! One thing you should know that the desire to live is the central point or the characteristic feature of humanity. Under a normal condition of life, there must be a natural fear for death and a desire to live, because nothing is dearer than life. Aurum meta brings such a disorder in the human mind, that all natural love of life is destroyed. Not only so, it seeks opportunities so that a suicide may be committed.

* If you divide the human mind, you will find that it consists of *Intellect* (or knowing), *Sensation* (or feeling) and *Willing* (or loves and hates, desires and aversions). A few words on these may be necessary. People generally call a man "insane" if any of these three elements gets out of order. As a matter of fact, an insane person may have disorder with regard to one or the other of those elements but may be quite all right with regard to the rest. In some cases you may find that only the *Intellect* is out of order, in some again the element of *Sensation* is found to be diseased and in the rest the *Willing* or *Volition* may have been out of joint. Even in a few cases, any two or all the three may be disordered. Now, you will notice one fact that where a particular

function of the mind gets out of order and the patient is not treated and cured for any length of time, it is just possible that some one or both the other may get disordered.

The Aurum metallicum patient loses the balance of his mind, specially and principally in relation to his *Volition*. Of course, the other two, specially the *Intellect*, follow suit.

* As we have entered into these deeper spheres, I want to give you another thing in relation to the *correspondence* or the *concordance* between in and out. When a man's mind is disordered, it is quite natural that a corresponding set of outer organs must necessarily be disordered. There is an *eternal* correspondence, a relation which is more than sympathetic, a relation which may be called that between cause and effect, a relation of continuity from the dynamic to the physical,—between each of those mental functions, viz., *Knowing*, *Feeling* and *Willing* with the external organs functioning their individual works. This relation between inner and outer is eternal and may be understood and realised if you have the ability to deeply observe. Where the *Intellect* is disordered, you will necessarily find *correspondingly* that the functions of digestive apparatuses, urinary organs, the sexual sets, the breathing organs, as also those of skin and mucous membranes are necessarily deranged ; then again, in case the *Volition* is disordered, it is found, the heart, the liver and the sexual organs are also affected ; and where there is a disorder in the *Sensation*, the functions of all the outer organs may more or less be affected.

* You may ask,—“Well, sir, what’s the use of knowing all these deep philosophical matters, and pray, what earthly use and benefit you expect to derive by teaching us all these”? My reply is,—“Yes, there is a great deal of benefit and use from knowing all these, because Homœopathy stands principally upon philosophy. It is exactly in line with the universal law of order and disorder. As a rough example, I tell you that where you lose your temper and there is quite a tempest in your mental region, do you not feel correspondingly, just as a reaction, a sort of turbulence in the outer sphere, in the form of loss of appetite, want of sleep, constipation, a feeling of heat upon the skin and so forth? Certainly you feel that want of mental equilibrium must necessarily follow with physical equilibrium. So, you, as a physician, as a true healer of the sick should know that. As in every day affair there is a relationship between the mind and the body, so, should you not expect that in a deep chronic miasmatic malady affecting the mental sphere, there must be a corresponding *dis*-equilibrium in the outer sphere”?

* Then, there is a *benefit and use* from permanently bearing in mind this principle of *correspondingness*. Suppose, after you have long treated an Aurum Meta. insane patient, you observe that his mind is getting by and by cured, but just along with this, he gets indigestion, sour diarrhœa, albumenuria or some other disorders like these. The family may be impatient over the oncoming of these new disorders, you may also be at a loss to understand what to do under this circumstances. Just if you prescribe and administer a

medicine, in order to cure these so-called maladies, it is so sure as the sun rises in the east, that the patient will come to where he was. By administering the medicine, you kill the correspondence and upset the influx of Nature. The patient may have a long, long suffering simply for your own folly and ignorance of the vital principle. Any negligence on the part of a physician in getting about the principles of cure is a crime. Now, you should understand that those disorders which appear after the administration of your proper remedy and *as a sure indication* of the curative course having followed, are not diseases properly so called, but are the symptoms coming in along with the vital flow which is technically called Influx and the law is that you should always get your hands off. Your duty should be to observe and verify with a deep satisfaction in your mind that the medicine was properly selected, that the curative course has already commenced and that, *as a sure indication*, the mental dynamic disorder has been transmitted from the mind to the outer regions in the form of those symptoms. So, the use and benefit from knowing this philosophical principle must be quite clear to you. Let the worthy Old School physicians tamper and tinker with the *result* of the true disease and do and undo what they have done only the other day, but for God's sake, for humanity's sake and for your conscience's sake, do not mimic their methods and commit mischief of the above kind, though quite *unwittingly*. Wittingly or unwittingly, the mischief is all the same and you should always guard against it.

Mind,—The mental disorder of this remedy is worth studying and unless you can make a fair picture of the Aurum mind, you have not studied the remedy at all. The *mind is full of deep dejection and despair*. He is beset on all sides with the blackest clouds of sadness. He finds not a single ray of hope or cheer from any side. He thinks that he came to the world for nothing and it is quite useless for him to live, not only useless, but his life is an unbearable burden, and the sooner he can end his life, the better for him. This type of thoughts is continually in his mind and though he is not inclined to express his melancholic thoughts in so many words before anybody, yet he keeps on brooding over these sad thoughts and he looks melancholic and dejected to everyone observing him. He finds all darkness so far as the present is concerned and he can look to nothing brighter in future. So, what's the use of dragging this weary existence? It serves nobody and so it is better to die,—this is the red strand of his mind. You will see, he loses all love of life. Of course, there are times when he shows extreme irritation and vehement wrath but all these are only timely shadings upon the permanent back-ground of dejection and sorrow. By and by it is found that his intellect is also affected and the man loses all self-control.

But what is it that stands behind this sort of mental attitude? It is the Syphilitic miasm or the co-mixture of Syphilis and mercury. Mercurialised Syphilis, as it is technically called, stands at the back of the Aurum mind and you know that

the organs of liver and heart are *correspondingly* deranged.

The *will* of the Aurum mind is, first of all, deranged and then the *intellect* follows suit. Of course, there are remedies in which the *intellect* is disordered first and then the *sensation* and *volition*. Then again, there are remedies in which the *sensation* is first deranged and then the *volition* and the *intellect*. Each remedy stands upon its own individuality, so that in treating insanity cases, you are to decide which side of the mind is affected primarily and which secondarily or sympathetically, so that a proper prescription may be made.

Aurum meta and *Argentum nitr.* are both deep-acting remedies and can affect the mind very deeply, but you must have to differentiate between them and to know where do they differ, otherwise you will not be able to come to the right remedy. Both affect the mind but each in its own way. *Argentum nitr.* is full of curious sensations and is much *apprehensive* for the future, because this remedy affects the *intellect* and specially the *sensation*. In other words, the nervous system is deeply affected with the result of bringing in disorders in breathing apparatuses, heart and the digestive organs; but Aurum affects the *volition* or *will* and so deep despair and dejection are the results. *In place of fear and apprehension of Arg. nitr., a deep despair is found in Aurum. Argentum or Ars has a fear of death, whereas Aurum invites it.*

Now, you should understand how the Aurum metallicum soil is prepared. Where the system is already affected with the Syphilitic miasm, and with

a view to *suppress* the miasm, i. e. the Syphilitic manifestations, crude mercury is used and so the mercurial virus is engrafted upon the Syphilitic base, the Aurum meta soil is prepared. From the very beginning, the patient becomes hopeless and despondent and by and by he gets so much dejected that his mind is overburdened with despair and hopelessness. He thinks that it is quite useless for him to live in this world, because he does not find even the faintest ray of hope from any side and he constantly broods over his tired and hopeless life. Not only so, he seeks means and methods how to end this weary existence and actually commits suicide. You may fairly ask,—how is it that every mercurialised Syphilitic patient does not turn into the Aurum patient? The answer is,—it depends upon the condition of his system *before* he gets the Syphilitic and the mercurial poisons. There are different shades, viz, dormant, semi-dormant and active conditions of Psora whereupon those two viruses are engrafted, hence the difference. That is the reason why after getting those two viruses some body turns insane, some other turns into Aurum meta, *Hep. sulph*, *Guaicum* or *Syphilitinum* and so forth. The condition *previous* to the attack of those two viruses characterises the patient *after* the combination.

You should properly understand the nature, the condition and the indications of Aurum meta children, so that you may be in a position to correct them in the very prime of their lives. As a Homœopathic physician, you should try your utmost to abort the oncoming of serious diseases that are sure to come in

their later life. If you do not correct the children, they cannot live long and most of them may die a premature death.

Picture of an Aurum meta. child—You will find a very good indication of Aurum despair and Aurum hopelessness in the very child life. You will find the child as if pulled down with sad thoughts, as if constantly brooding over some misfortune, though it may be too young to comprehend anything regarding worldly matters. He is not inclined to work, not to read; he cannot concentrate and even if he can, everything escapes from his memory. The whole body is wasting and emaciated,—“eats very goodly but does not gain flesh.” By and by it loses all childish vivacity and strength, no *grit*. People say, “the child is losing all the while.” You will also see that the testes of the Aurum child are dry and withered as two pieces of small rags, and the testes do not grow and develop in a natural way. Not only so, the child suffers from a constant suppuration in the ears, carious teeth, many of them even fall away and are broken and there is hardly any bone development, so that when the child comes of an age, he is likely to have caries in the bones; the bones are weak, brittle and the child generally develops Tubercular manifestations somewhere in the system. If you tackle these disease symptoms, one by one, in a tit-bit way, you do, as a matter of fact, an injury to the patient. You should rather prepare a totality of the disease symptoms which appear now and then, which are only so many manifestations of the inner miasmatic disorder and *consti-*

tutionally cure the patient as a whole man. Those symptoms or the disease manifestations that appear every now and then are only the outer foamings of the internal deeper current of disorder which, in Aurum cases, is generally the inherited combination of Syphilis and mercury. In this condition, you may also think of *Syphilinum* which, fortunately enough, is complementary to Aurum meta. Of course, *Syphilinum* child is of a duller brain and of a cruder intellect and a more deficient memory. *Beryta Carb* has also mal-development and dwarfish intellect, but it has no Syphilitic miasm within it.

Suppose, the above child is not placed under your treatment and does not obtain any curative remedy, so that the disease course is allowed to run on and on, the result will be that organic changes will come in. Rapid work of the heart, irregular beatings, pains and aches in the liver, etc. are symptoms of the organs which first come in and then the heart and the liver are found to enlarge. Along with these developments, a sort of anæmia with swelling of the extremities and palpitation with hard breathing on ascending even a few steps also appear.

There is another symptom which is most painful, and which appears in Aurum cases, is the orgasm or the flow of blood-current upwards. Technically, it is called "flushing." With this flushing the patient feels an intense hot feeling towards the upper portion of his body and is full of sweats there. These symptoms make the Aurum mind all the more hopeless and despairing than ever. In case he was not driven to commit suicide before all these develop-

ments, he may die a natural death now after these developments. Before death it is found that his liver was much enlarged and hardened and the heart indurated. In case of female patients, the ultimate is generally formed in shape of cancer in the uterus.

Case Report,—Sj.....Chatterjee, B. A, aged 37 or 38, the only son of a retired pensioner, a high Government officer, came under my treatment on the 11th March, 1930. The old father came to me on the 10th March in the afternoon and requested me to see his son who, he said, had lost his brains. I had been to his place in the next morning and found his son, though not fully insane but very much depressed. Outwardly he was a goodly built beautiful young man. I got from him the following symptoms and conditions,—“I don't get any peace of mind, specially I am much perturbed during nights, as I do not get sleep and have to be continually restless, because I feel so hot that sleep appears to be altogether banished from me. Though so hot I feel, yet my fan can not be switched down, because I feel so chilly if the fan turns. Thus I must have to leave the bed often and to be strolling over my verandah. Many times I see a dream on just entering into sleep, in which somebody appears before me and says, 'Well, do not delay any longer. If you come along immediately, we shall very comfortably and peacefully live together. I can fairly remember that he was a friend of mine, a class-mate, who lost his life by drowning in 1926 when swimming in the Ganges. I remember his name too and that is 'Annada Palit.' I have

hardly any desire for food, mind is always restless and I am sure that such a life must be deserted with all means". These few words he delivered to me with much difficulty and after repeated askings and reminders. I found him perfectly indifferent, with no desire to talk but only to sit idle and to sigh deep sighs very often. Much offensive smell was coming out of the mouth, and his wife said,—“his mouth is so much offensive that none can remain with him in the same bed except myself because I take him to be my God and so can tolerate the smell. The essential characteristics of his mind are indifference, in-attention, despair, dejection and want of any love for any body even for his own life". I examined all the organs but found no particular disorder except that the heart was beating very rapidly. After I studied his mental condition as described above, I wanted to know about the previous history of his life and understood that towards the end of 1922 or the beginning of 1923, he contracted Syphilis and took four or five Salvarsan injections. Later on he was attacked with Gonorrhœa also, but nobody knew what treatment did he follow.

12th March afternoon,—After having made a full study of the case, I fixed upon Aurum meta to be given in three graduated doses of 1000th potency. But lo! on the following day, during dead of night, he committed suicide by hanging. The condition of the old father and the widowed wife should better be imagined than described!

The case, above referred to, having ended fatally before the administration of the remedy, the beneficial

work of Aurum meta could not be verified. Therefore. I desire to put in a fresh case.

Case Report.—Sj. Taponidhi.....,aged 42 or 43, was the Head Collector of a Raj State. He used to make a plenty of income from this job. Poor education with a plenty of income is sometimes a cause of upsetting the mind and exciting the ugly propensity, specially of the low-minded people. The gentleman used to collect money all the day long and to reside in the same *Kacchhari* house which was surrounded by various low class females, and from impure coition he contracted Syphilis. He could not obtain the services of any qualified physician and so placed himself under the treatment of a quack. The result was that he was mercurialised. The ultimate result was how serious, will be described by and by. At first right-sided orchitis appeared and intolerable pains in the gums followed as a necessary effect of mercurialisation. It was a small village and there was no convenience of treatment whatever. He thought of taking six months' leave from his services and coming to the Medical College for treatment. Anyhow he was not admitted into the Medical College Hospital and he placed himself under an experienced and well known Allopath and took series of specific injections. However, on the 14th January 1931, he came under my treatment and care. The history has been described as above and so I am going to put in the present condition and symptoms as I obtained from him. I give them in his own words.

14th January, 1931,—“Dear Sir, if you look and examine from my externals, you will not be able to

understand the real condition of sufferings I have been undergoing. I myself do not know what is the matter with me, but it is not at all possible for me to rest and lie down on bed for even half an hour at a stretch, and I do not know the reason why. My whole system gets heated up, the whole body becomes full of sweat and I must have to rise up and walk along in the open air. On the other hand, on account of the tenderness and pains in my testes even the slightest movement is most painful, * * * ; ulcerations in the mouth, in the anus, testes and in the gum are deplorable. Absolutely no memory, Doctor. The whole period of night is a terrible trial for me, because all the troubles and difficulties are violently aggravated at the time ; strongly do I determine for suicide but it is impossible that I can commit it, because my widowed daughter and my anxious wife must always keep themselves at my elbow. Constipation is violent,—on account of persistent tenasmus and efforting for stool, it leads to bleeding at the anus and forms fissures there. At present there is a painful ulceration. I do not know how long have I to drag along my weary existence in this way, but I know I must have to suffer for the sins I have committed”.

The good wife of the patient gave me many things but it is neither possible nor necessary to put them in here in detail, and I must give only the most vital points of what she gave me. She said,—“my husband is intensely dejected and is always taciturn, brooding, weeping and sighing. He does not listen to what we give him in form of consolation. I know

there are lots of maggots in the ulcerated portions of his testes and violent pains are there due to their bitings. Dear Doctor, we think, he has no sanity of his brains or he might not have forgotten to tell you about this serious fact. Moreover, he feels various uneasinesses and pains in the brain ; he has his ears full of suppuration, mouth and nostrils ulcerated and specially the testes so hepelessly decomposed. The disease is found to be going on increasing and increasing in course of the treatment followed up to date. His mind was all right but since he took so many injections, I think, he has lost his brains too. Yet so far as we observe, he remains better from morning till 3 or 4 in the afternoon and he gets a sort of sleep during this period but during the whole of night he is restless and tosses to and fro, sometimes rises up, then again lies down only to rise up again after a few minutes."

On physical examination of the ulcers in the testes, did I actually find a few maggots moving to and fro, and though the other portions of his system were also ulcerated and painful, I could not detect any worms there. Pus was trickling from the ears and an offensive smell was emitting from his mouth which was rather badly salivative. There were also a few glands, on both sides of the throat, a bit indurated. But the main thing is that, so far as the mental condition of the patient was observed, I concluded that he might commit suicide any time.

The patient had absolutely no desire for bath, but still there was an arrangement for daily bath with tepid water, because his daughter and his wife said

that otherwise the badly offensive smell that would come out from his body and mouth could not be tolerated. The patient could not lie except to the left and there were offensive salivation and offensive sweat. Though all these symptoms at first directed my mind towards *Merc. sol.*, yet his mental condition ruled it out and I fixed upon *Aurum meta.* Instructions were given for using unmedicated tepid water for washing the ulcerated spots, if necessary.

16th January,—*Aurum meta* 1000, daily evening a dose, for three days, in graduated form, was given. On the 28th January, I saw the patient, and though I could not notice any appreciable change, yet the female members reported to me that the offensive smell from his body was far less than formerly.

17th February,—There was a great mental change for the better. The ulcers were almost painless and no germs or maggots were found in them; no medicine was given.

11th March,—The condition was rather stagnant and the medicine was repeated in three doses as previously.

14th April,—Mentally far better. Ulcers almost healed up. The right testis was painless. The patient was sleeping well and the constipation also got far improved.

3rd May,—The primary chancre with the swelling of two buboes and a great tenderness in them, appeared. The patient got alarmed and anxious. Still on the following day, I had to go to the patient simply for convincing him and explaining to him the curative

principle. The patient was easily pacified, for his having had improvement from all sides.

12th June,—Aurum meta. 10m. potency was given in a single dose. I was called in after three months and the patient said,—“I am all right except for the two symptoms that still remain there. My constipation and the anal ulcer are there and I suffer so much during evacuation of stools owing to bleeding and cracks. Moreover, my gum is still diseased, the tenderness, occasional swelling, bleeding, etc. are there. Otherwise, I am all right. If you advise total extraction of the whole set of teeth, I would still agree. Please, do what is needful.” Under these circumstances *Syphilinum* 1m. and after two months 10m. were given in single doses each time. No other medicine was required.

Adult patient,—The picture of the adult patient of Aurum, i. e. the patient who has *acquired* Syphilis, should be understood. Due to impure coition when Syphilis is contracted, the patient often hurries to a neighbouring Allopath or to some quack near at hand who has the knack of suppressing the chancre by cauterization or by the administration of a deadlier poison of mercury,—making him ten times more diseased than formerly. But you should note that every individual in whom the Syphilis and mercury have combined will not necessarily turn an Aurum patient. Somebody may need *Kali Iod*, some other body may turn a *Hepar* patient or *Merc. sol* or *Syphilinum* or any of the long list of anti-Syphilitic medicines, in accordance with the Law of Similars. Supposing he is reduced to an Aurum patient, a clear

picture should be made and vividly kept upon your memory. Mind is depressed, hopelessly dejected, a constant thought of everything in the world being of no use to him, as well as, that he himself is altogether useless for the world, runs in his mind, and not only so, but he is eager to destroy his life by any means whatever. Constantly he keeps on brooding in that way and seeks the ways and means by which to end his life. He does not find even a ray of hope from any quarters and hence the step he wishes to take. Apart from that, *physically* he becomes a wreck. The bones of his system, specially the smaller bones are full of pains, in most of them there are inflammations and ulcerations with stitching and cutting pains that are unbearable. You know the Syphilitic bone pains aggravate at night. Many forms of diseases in the bones, often caries, are his life companion. Day to day these bone symptoms are manifested in the several localities of his body and make his life intolerable. Just imagine,—the patient is well at ease even during the rest in bed, for you should remember that warmth of the bed is intolerable and the patient is compelled to leave the bed and walk about in the open air. You may think that he gets peace when walking in the open air. But no, far from it,—after a small time, he feels chilly and fears catching cold there, so as to compel him to return to bed. So, he has to pass the whole night tossed from pillar to post and post to pillar, and during all these tribulations he broods over the idea as to how to end this troublesome life. Then again, he feels a constant pain in the periosteum which, you know, is the covering

portion of the bone. The Syphilitic individual must feel a cutting pain in his periosteum which aggravates during night and specially from the warmth of the bed.

You will find in the text that Syphilitic remedies as *Syphilinum*, *Mercurius*, etc, aggravate from sunset to sunrise and the Sycotic remedies like *Medorrhinum* and others aggravate from sunrise to sunset. The dictum may not be literally true but very nearly so, because exceptions are found in many cases.

Now, let us come to the *disease symptoms* in which Aurum meta. may be indicated. We shall get a few symptoms or indications along with the disease symptoms of the remedy.

Rheumatism,—The nature of Aurum metallicum rheumatism is its *changeability* of the spots of attack. It travels from one joint to another incessantly, so that the physicians who are for *local* treatment, are at a loss to understand what to do, and wonder at the hide-and-seek policy of the disease. Another nature of its rheumatism is to affect the heart at last. Various pains in the heart organ, difficulty of breathing, dyspnoea at the slightest exertion or labour and, at last, swelling of the extremities come in.

Along with the rheumatic troubles, a peculiar condition comes in, which is called Filaria. It is simply the thickening of the periosteum, specially of the lower limbs, due to the combination of Syphilis and mercury in the system. If you find the swelling of the extremities attended with *angina pectoris* you must have to suspect Filaria. Aggravation from bed-heat and the flushing of blood are the associated

symptoms. The rheumatic pains are aggravated from cold, during winter and on cold days and most necessarily from bed-heat. These rheumatic pains, if suppressed by un-Homœopathic interference affect the heart, or in some cases without any treatment whatever, the heart may be still affected, by virtue of the miasms in the system. The patient feels as if the heart stops its beatings for a few seconds and then again runs faster than usual.

Headache and Head Symptoms,—The hairs of the Aurum patient have a tendency to fall off and bald spots are formed over the scalp and when those spots get smooth and glossy, there remains no chance of re-appearing of new hairs. Syphilis combined with mercury and having already been combined with Psora, that had been lying from long before dormant in the system, are very likely to form mal-growths in shape of tumours; these are not exactly like the condylomatas produced by combined Psora and Sycosis, because the condylomatas are generally soft and painless, whereas the tumours that are produced by the combination of Psora, Syphilis and mercury are hard and tender to touch. You already know that this tenderness or soreness is a special characteristic of Aurum and this tenderness is to be found in the scalp bones and periosteum all over. The Aurum headache is very peculiar in this that though there is a feeling of heat within the head, yet the patient fears that a cold blast is coming from all sides, so that he is compelled to cover the head. Just remember,—*hot feeling within, but chilliness without.* *Psorinum* also keeps the head covered but *Psorin* has only the

chilly feeling there and never feels any heat within. *Psorin* headache actually aggravates from cold winds and hence he keeps the head covered. *Mag. Mur* wants to keep a pressure from a bandage over the head, but as a whole patient he wants open air. *Silica* also wants bandaging in the head during headache but the real relief comes not only from the pressure but his real intention is to keep the head in warmth. So that *Silica* wants both *pressure and heat*. The *Silica* headache aggravates from cold and from keeping the head uncovered and ameliorates from profuse urination. Now, the point for you to remember is that, in no medicine above referred to, there is a *duality of sensation* as in Aurum. Moreover, there may also be brain symptoms along with Aurum headache and a peculiar feeling of fulness in the head, the other remedies having no such feeling.

Eyes,—You know Syphilis affects the eyes in various ways. However, you should not look to the symptoms of the eyes only, but to the individuality of the patient as well, when treating eye-diseases. If the patient fits with the Aurum individuality, then and then only, the following symptoms will be helpful in selecting Aurum. There may be ulceration in the eyes, swelling all round and tenderness; specially there are various disorders with regard to eye-sight. Photophobia is the great characteristic and along with it there is an extreme soreness over the eyes and all round the orbits. A thing or an object of sight seems to be divided by a middle horizontal line, the upper half being dark and unseen and the

lower half only visible. Sometimes the objects seem to be broken and scattered all round. Sometimes small stars seem to be falling down. These are the peculiarities of Aurum eyes, i. e. in the eye diseases of an Aurum patient. *Calc. Carb.* has also many of these symptoms but the two patients, viz., of *Calc.* and Aurum stand widely different,—*Calc.* is mainly Psoric whereas Aurum is mainly Syphilitic mixed with mercury. *Lycopodium* divides the object by a vertical line and sees the left half but not the right half; moreover in *Lycopodium* the right eye is more often affected. In the Aurum case, the pain in the eye runs from out to in and you have already got that there is much soreness over the eyes and their orbits. *Asafœtida* has also the like type of pains, but *Asafœtida* wants pressure, and pains are ameliorated from it though, of course, the soreness or tenderness is common to both the remedies. In Aurum eye cases there is watering, the pains, the soreness, etc. attended with the photophobia for which the patient keeps his eyes constantly closed.

But you are to specially remember that all these eye symptoms of Aurum are aggravated in the morning and relieved in moonlight and from the application of cold water. This is a typical *exception to the general modalities of Aurum Meta* which shall be dealt with later on. Lastly, in almost all the mercurial and Syphilitic remedies there must be an ulceration in the eye tissue, more or less, but just remember that the Aurum totality is only needed, viz., the Aurum mind, the Aurum constitution and the Aurum modalities.

Ears,—Persistent and offensive suppuration in the ear which continues off and on and affects the hearing of the patient ; sound aggravates but music ameliorates. Various sounds are felt within the ears, viz., those of storms or of water-falls. Moreover, there must be the characteristic soreness in and over the ear bones.

Nose,—The nose knobs at the end, nostrils are ulcerated attended with foetid, offensive discharges and the patient constantly smells them. In any case, *an offensive smell emits from the mouth and nose* and the patient is painfully conscious of it. Some patients lose the power of smell even. As a result of the ulceration, the septum wears away and is destroyed and so the nose flattens down. You know in all Aurum cases, the mind is hopelessly depressed and is full of suicidal thoughts. *Hepar, Mercurius* and *Kali bi.* have the physical nose symptoms in each but the Aurum mind is not there. *Hepar* is badly chilly and becomes drenched with perspiration on even a slight exertion ; *Merc.* has profuse sweat without relief and has generally inability to lie except to the left, cannot stand neither extreme cold nor extreme heat, has the tongue thick and full of dirty coating, etc, etc ; and *Kali bi.* has an absolute want of mental symptoms, the only characteristic being threadlike discharges of sticky and gluey character. I hope all these symptoms will help you to differentiate between them.

Case Report,—A gentleman, named Sj.....Roy, one of the employees of Dhanbad Motor Company had misconducted himself in his youth and had

contracted Syphilis at the age of 19. He took lots of injections after which it was found that he had the peculiar desire of living alone with sighing, moaning, etc, which were obviously the indications of deep mental depression. Practically he lost his memory. Upon all these, the family were anxious, and arranged for his Ayurvedic treatment. By virtue of this treatment his mind was a bit improved but the depressed nature of it remained unchanged. There were two buboes that appeared on both sides and they suppurated. An operation was necessary after which an injection was given and ulcerations appeared within the mouth cavity in the gums and specially within the nostrils. He came to me and placed himself under my treatment obviously for the purpose of getting the nose ulcerations cured, as he thought that if his nose was cured he would be a perfectly healthy man. It was in 1922 when I was at Dhanbad. I give the case in his own words.

“My nose is the main spot of disease, the nostrils are badly ulcerated and almost all the time they get closed up, so that I must have constantly to breathe through the mouth. I myself feel a horrible compunction at the fetid smell which emits from my nose and I constantly think of committing suicide. I am the sole earning member of my family consisting of a score of members and of old and aged parents and so I am compelled to desist from it. Moreover, both the testes are heavy, thickened and indurated ; liver pains and the constipation are also there but they are inconveniences of far lesser order. All these together have made my life a burden”.

From what I saw I found that the flattening of its nose was rather imminent and was a question of two or three months more. The horrible fetid smell was really intolerable. However, my attention was at once directed to Aurum-meta on account of his mental condition, though *Mercurius*, *Kali-bi*, *Hep*, *Nitr. acid* and a few others of the group stood up before my mind for selection; but I fixed upon Aurum as the remedy for the case.

On the 13th March 1922, Aurum meta. 10m was given in three consecutive graduated doses and instructions were given for a report after a month. On 12th March, report came of a violent aggravation, specially, of palpitation. Nothing was given and report was advised after four weeks more. A course of placebo was given. On the 22nd April, the patient came and said that "the medicines (placebo doses) given on the 24th March had acted magically and four or five days after its use I have been feeling awfully better. Chest pains are no more, constipation also greatly improved, the nasal discharges are far less and the nostrils do not close up now-a-days as formerly." I advised him to send a further report after a month. On the 28th May, having found no further improvement, Aurum Meta 10m was repeated in three graduated doses. In the middle of June the original chancres returned and a mental change was observed. The nasal ulcerations were gone. The chancres healed up very slowly up to the November of 1923, when a dose of Aurum Meta 50m. was given. I observed that some complementary was necessary and I had to give *Syphilinum* 10m to complete the cure.

Respiratory organs.—Aurum Meta has a type of breathing difficulty which is not an ordinary asthma but a dyspnoea. Both the types show a great difficulty of breathing but the reason is different in dyspnoea which comes from the weakness of the heart. Asthma comes from the clogging of the tubes by mucous infiltrations. Aurum has the dyspnoea type of hard breathing on account of its weakness of the heart. This weakness is generally a metastasis of rheumatism in Aurum. If in Aurum patients rheumatism is suppressed, the heart is affected. Enfeeblement of the organ, palpitation, hard breathing, congestion in the heart, etc. are the results. By and by the organ itself is hypertrophied as a result of frequent congestions in the organ. The patient feels a great difficulty of breathing on walking a few paces or on ascending a few steps and feels that unless he stops, his heart may burst out. A constant heavy feeling is felt over the heart region. *Ammon Carb* has also that sort of pressure but the somnolence of *Ammon Carb* patient and a sense of fulness in the part are not found in Aurum.

Generative organs.—It is generally found that a female keeps a good health up to her pregnancy but all disorders come in just after delivery. This means that her system has inherited some poison from her husband's body. Even in case she inherits any miasm from her parents, that is the time when all the miasms are manifested. Aurum Meta females are not found to be intended by Nature to be good mothers. Mercury, Syphilis and Sycosis combined go to poison their system in such a way as

firstly to make the pregnancy impossible and secondly the foetal development up to the full time impossible. The male testes also get enlarged, hydrocele is formed and frequent night emissions appear to make the sexual organs relaxed. The menstrual discharges of the females are made scanty and the organs are displaced. Aurum females have many times been found to have cancer of the uterus. I have already told you that the pregnancy is made impossible and if pregnancy occurs at all, the foetus dies and abortions and miscarriages are frequent. If the Aurum female does not commit suicide she has generally to suffer for a long time from a serious type of uterine diseases. But notwithstanding all these local symptoms the mentals must have to be found, at least a high grade of depression leading to a desire for death must be present, otherwise you can not think of this remedy. There are various other remedies of this class, one of which may have to be selected in that case,—of course, on the totality of symptoms.

Modalities,—Like all the Syphilitics, the night aggravation is prominent. Moreover, it has an aggravation in cold and during cold weather. Aurum patient is generally better in the morning and in warmth and during summer.

Potency,—From 30 to the highest.

BACILLINUM.

It is a deep-acting remedy and belongs to a group of similar remedies which should better be taken up along with *Tuberculinum*.

BAPTISIA.

Baptisia belongs to the class of acute remedies and is never used in chronic disorders coming from a chronic miasm of Psora, Sycosis, etc. It is generally used in those types of acute fevers in which brain gets affected from the very beginning or at any time during the course of the disease, viz., Diphtheria, Scarlet fever, Measles, Small-pox, more specially, the typical typhoid and fevers with typhoid condition.

Picture.—It is not at all difficult to form a picture of this remedy. Decomposition and the offensive odour from all discharges are the two things which characterise the Baptisia disorders. Typhoid condition of the brain, intense exhaustion and weakness, reddish and a bit swollen condition of the face, go to show as if the patient has been intoxicated; along with all these there is a delirium of the muttering type, involuntary urination and stool, horrible foetid smell in them, sordes on the teeth, offensive smell from the mouth and oozing of blood from the gum coming in within 3 or 4 days of the fever. From the very look it becomes evident to the physician that the process of decomposition has already commenced

and that the patient is fast running towards his end. Ulcerations are found on the tongue and within the mouth cavity. The tongue at first is rather white with red patches distributed over it and a black hue comes in slowly to cover the whole tongue. At last it becomes just like a cow tongue, rough and half-burnt, as it were, and then ulcerations get prominent with horribly offensive discharges. The patient gets so much exhausted that his lower jaw hangs down, the tongue begins to tremble on attempting to protrude (*Gels, Lachesis*) and the extremities also tremble. Tympany comes in with a good deal of tenderness in the abdomen shewing ulcerations there and there are frequent involuntary stools of foetid odour. The stools are at first yellowish getting darker and darker and at last gets the slate colour and becomes horribly offensive. All the discharges are involuntary and the patient is found to slide down the bed.

The characteristic of the brain disorder is that the patient feels himself more than two or three individuals, as if divided into so many different persons and commences to talk with them. Moreover, he feels as if one portion of his body quarreling with other portions. He feels as if his body is divided and scattered all round and he is unable to collect them and that is the reason why he cannot go to sleep,—and as soon as he will finish putting them together, he will go to sleep.

Sore Throat and Diphtheria.—In all throat diseases of *Baptisia*, a peculiar symptom is found that the patient can swallow liquid substances fairly well but is unable to take in hard ones. The sore throat

is painless but highly offensive odour comes out (for comparisons, see Diphtheria in *Apis*).

In the commencement of *Baptisia* fever, when brain symptoms have not yet far advanced, it is found as if the patient is unable to direct his attention to a particular subject and then, by and by, his brain gets confused. Before the brain is fully involved, two things are generally found to be characteristic, viz., (1) restlessness, because the patient finds the side lain on sore and tender and therefore he is bound to change his sides and (2) drowsy condition in which if a question is asked he is found to slide down into his drowsy condition in the midst of his answer ; so that the drowsiness and the restlessness are found to intermingle during the first week and then the patient advances slowly and gradually towards full unconsciousness. This process is to be borne in mind.

If there is found a typhoid condition as an accompaniment of some other disease symptoms, viz., Diphtheria, Scarlet fever, Measles, Small-pox, etc., if the symptom totality is there for this remedy you can safely use it, and rest assured, it will change the aspect of the patient in a day or two and eventually cure the patient.

Now, for a comparison the following remedies are taken up, viz., *Gels*, *Lachesis*, *Bryonia*, *Rhus tox*, *Arnica*, *Ailanthus* and *Arum triphyllum*. There is a very small similarity of this remedy with *Muriatic acid* and so it has not been included within the above group but only a few words towards the end will suffice.

Of the above remedies, *Gels*, *Bry* and *Baptisia* form

a trio, because any of them, if properly selected in accordance with the totality of symptoms in the beginning of even a typical typhoid fever, may abort the case, and I know for certain in the light of my long experience that it has the sure capacity to abort and cut short the disease course then and there. A fever which is said to be of a type which must run its course for a period of 40, 45 or 50 days, is surely aborted within the very first week, in course of two or three days after the administration of one truly indicated. So, it is incumbent on you to clearly remember the differentiating points between those three remedies, specially because the true application of one of them has the sure chance of saving much trouble and expense.

At first let us consider and compare between *Gels*, *Bry*, *Rhus tox* and *Baptisia*. Both *Gels* and *Bry* want to remain still,—because *Gels* feels his body *very much heavy* and *Bry* has severe *aggravations from movement*. *Gels* has a reddish hue of his face and the tongue is generally clean and without any coating ; whereas *Bry* has a pale face and the tongue is badly coated, white or clayey ; *Gels* is generally thirstless and has neither constipation nor diarrhœa, but *Bry* has an intense thirst, though he wants to drink a profuse quantity of water at long intervals ; moreover, he has a characteristic constipation, the stool being hard, dry and thick ; *Bry* has a nausea and even vomiting on his attempting to rise and sit up in bed but *Gels* has neither nausea nor vomiting. In a general way it may be said that in the beginning of typhoid fever *Gels* precedes *Bry*, i.e., *Bry* symptoms

come in later if the case has not been altogether aborted by *Gels*. Moreover, the course of both the remedies is very slow, proverbially slow, so that during the first two or three days there may not be any positive rise of temperature except a sort of malaise or an out-of-sorts feeling and then the fever heat begins to rise little by little. During the first week these two remedies are generally found to be indicated.

Bry and *Rhus tox* are complementary to each other and one is found to follow the other. When in place of aggravation from movement, restlessness comes in,—the movement giving no relief yet the patient can not do without being restless, and the tongue appears triangular, red at the tip, *Rhus tox* comes in.

Rhus tox and *Baptisia*,—Both have restlessness of course. *Rhus tox* is more restless than *Baptisia* because the bed feels too hard for him and when the typhoid condition is far advanced he is restless because he feels that all his limbs are scattered over the bed and he must collect them and as soon as he can do so, he will sleep. *Baptisia* has the characteristic *decomposition* and all its discharges *offensive* which are found neither in *Bry* nor in *Rhus tox*. *Bry* has constipation, *Rhus* has loose stools in profuse quantity each time and only *Baptisia* has the stools decomposed and offensive. In *Baptisia* the process of decomposition is so far advanced that the patient gets early bed-sores which also discharge offensive fluid.

During the first week, *Gels*, *Bry* and *Rhus tox*

symptoms may come in or in typical typhoid, it may commence with *Baptisia*.

Case Report,—In the August of 1912, a maid-servant of my own house named Thakamani Dasi, aged 37 or 38, fell ill. Up to 11 A. M., she did all the house-hold works after which she took her bath and mid-day meal. It was characteristic with her never to sleep in the daytime and she used always to be at her work after the mid-day meals. She used to spin thread with her *Charkha* or be busy with other works. That day she felt much exhausted and informed my wife that, she was unable to sit up and must take to bed. My eldest sister and my wife permitted her to do so because they thought that on account of the arduous work, during morning up to late hours to noon, made her so exhausted and that a few hours' sleep might tone her up. She did not rise even at 3 P. M. when it was found that she had a high fever and the wonder of wonders was that she had a profuse involuntary and offensive stool in the bed. I was in the garden and was immediately called in when I found to my astonishment that the fever was 104.6° with red face, full unconsciousness and she only looked up to me and again turned unconscious whenever I asked her anything. I immediately wrote a letter to her brother's son to come to my house immediately. Regarding treatment I thought of giving her no medicine as a few hours back she had her ordinary bath and meal, but I came to see later on that it was my mistake, for in these cases of serious types of fever one should not make a moment's delay to give medicine. However, during

the night the unconsciousness deepened and every two or three hours she passed involuntary and offensive stools. Next morning, she was fully unconscious, a bit restless, the fever coming down to 103.7° . Her brother's son arrived in the meantime and he was engaged in nursing her. After due consideration I gave her *Baptisia* 200 and thought of giving it every three hours a dose. It was rather the earlier years of my practice and so I brought late Dr. Jogendra Kumar Bose, M.B. of my village who had a good deal of experience in Homœopathic practice. Though he was an Allopathic Graduate but had been converted to Homœopathy, in the practice of which he had already earned a good deal of reputation. He came and fully examined the patient and prescribed the same medicine and when he learnt that I had already given a dose of 200 he was glad and asked me to give a dose every 3 or 4 hours. After the fourth dose towards 5 P. M. the fever came down to 101.2° . A good deal of mental change also appeared and in the next morning the fever was 99° and the mind was almost free. Two days more were required for the perfect cure and no other medicine nor any dose of *Baptisia* was further required for the case.

It has been observed that the *Baptisia* totality may come at once and from the very beginning, as illustrated in the above case, or it may come after any of the remedies,—*Gels*, *Bry*, *Rhus tox*, etc.

Bell, *Gels*, *Baptisia*,—In each of these remedies, the face of the patient becomes reddened but it is not at all difficult to distinguish between them. *Bell* fever comes suddenly, the heat rises very high and

though the patient is sleepy yet he cannot sleep or as soon as he enters into sleep he startles up. Moreover there is not the least sign of decomposition. *Gels* fever comes very slowly and the patient has no inclination to move as the body feels too heavy for the purpose. The tongue trembles on attempting to protrude and the patient is nervously very weak. In *Gels* also there is no decomposition. *Baptisia* has the characteristic decomposition and offensiveness in all its discharges, though the *Baptisia* fever may come from the very beginning or after some other remedies already referred to.

Arnica,—has also red face and during the typhoid condition and in the beginning, involuntary stool and urine, sinking down into unconsciousness after replying to the questions and the feeling of bed being too hard and restlessness due to the bruised soreness all over the body, offensive mouth, offensive sordes in the teeth and even offensive stools too, but in spite of all these symptoms there is hardly any decomposition in *Arnica* as in *Baptisia*. Moreover, *Arnica* has more heat in the upper part of the body, the lower part being rather cold,—a peculiar characteristic not to be found in any other remedy.

Lachesis,—Symptoms of this remedy are never found in the beginning of Typhoid fever but in course of it towards the end of second week or in the beginning of the third, when the tongue is found to tremble on an attempt to protrude it when it catches on the lower set of teeth. Moreover, aggravation after sleep and amelioration from any discharge are the special characteristics of

this remedy. During delirium, the patient constantly changes from one subject to another and goes on talking and talking. It has also offensive discharges, which point only is found in *Baptisia*. *Lachesis* patients are more tired and exhausted and even the lower jaw is found to hang down.

Ailanthus,—It is also required during the typhoid condition of many disease symptoms like Scarlatina, Measles, Diphtheria, etc. Its peculiar characteristic is that its discharges are badly excoriating so as to ulcerate within the mouth cavity and a comatose condition persists. Though *Baptisia* has also a comatose condition yet *Ailanthus* has it deeper and *Baptisia* has a mixture of coma and restlessness.

Arum triphyllum,—It has also a typhoid condition and excoriating discharges so as to bring in ulcerations in the mouth cavity and the lip corners, but *Ailanthus* is deeply comatose and *Arum* violently restless,—*Baptisia* having a mixture of the two. Moreover, the *Arum* patient will constantly persist in picking and boring into the ulcerated spots on account of a violent tingling and itching there,—in spite of the extreme soreness and tenderness of the spots.

Last of all *Muriatic acid* should be brought in. It comes towards the end of a Typhoid fever. A muttering delirium, deep unconsciousness, deep ulceration from the mouth to the anus, foetid breath, tongue dry, paralysed, and looking like a piece of rag. Lower jaw hanging down and the patient is so weak that he constantly slides down the bed. The deep unconsciousness, ulcerations and offensive discharges are

the points which are found in both. The Baptisia symptoms rather come early and those of *Muriatic acid* come very late. Moreover, the beatings of the heart are found to intermit in every third,—a symptom not found in Baptisia. With a view to distinguish, you are to remember that Baptisia has the predominance of decomposition and offensiveness, whereas *Muriatic acid* is predominantly weak and exhausted. All *acid* remedies are proverbially weak.

Puerperal Fever,—I am going to relate a case of Puerperal fever which will give you a very good picture and symptom totality of the Puerperal fever of this remedy. Moreover, you will be able to understand what a hopeless condition was there in the patient and how the remedy could cure her even under this circumstance.

Case Report,—In the year 1930, in a place named Baranagar, a suburb of Calcutta, in a very rich and affluent family, a female aged 24, was attacked with a bad type of Puerperal fever and the family having found her in a precarious condition and slowly advancing towards death in spite of good treatment called me in. It was the third delivery after which she was attacked with this fever. The delivery took place at 10 P. M., 9th December of 1930. Profuse wealth is not always a blessing, nay sometimes a curse,—which will be verified from the events related in this case.

Sreemati Nagendra bala....., aged 24 years, had been ailing from Puerperal fever for the last 18 days. She had delivered of a male child which died on the third day ostensibly on account of bad

ulcerations all over its body. On the 8th December, at 3 P. M. the pains commenced and a good nurse and two M. B. Physicians were engaged then and there. All of them thought that natural delivery was impossible for her, though they ascribed no reason for the opinion and a forcep delivery was made on the following day at 10 P. M. The child, as I have already said, died on the third day. Before this the patient had a still-born daughter in her first delivery and a daughter in the second delivery lived only for fourteen days. On account of the heavy depression of the mind due to these mishaps and bereavements or for the miasmatic reasons the unhappy mother had a high fever with much shivering at the commencement on the fifth day of delivery. The fever rose up to $105\cdot4^{\circ}$. The worthy doctors previously engaged as well as another Allopath of reputation were called in for treatment. There was no dearth of injections, but to the horror and astonishment of the family, the patient showed all signs of typhoid on the fourth day of the fever. At the instance of a brother of the patient, I was called in on the fourteenth day, up to which date Allopathic treatment was continued though to no effect,—rather lots of complications arose by and by. I got the following symptoms and condition.

The patient was lying on the bed absolutely unconscious, and a fluid stool,—fetid and blackish was found to have been oozing from her anus. The abdomen was rather tympanitic, the eyes bloodless, sight blank, the eyes sometimes open and sometimes closed, lower lid having sunk down for a few days past. The

outer look was intensely pale and gloomy. She was constantly sliding down the bed and the nurses were frequently putting her in the true position. On repeated requests from me, she attempted to protrude the tongue but could not; it was found to tremble and catch on the lower row of teeth. The cavity of the mouth was horribly ulcerated and a fetid smell was constantly emitting from the mouth. On the slightest attempt to raise the hands, they were found to tremble. The fever did not come down 100° rising to 103.5° . She was sometimes restless and sometimes comatose, though deep unconsciousness was retained all the time. The abdomen was sensitive and she could not tolerate even a slightest touch on it.

Under this circumstance it is rather easy to understand that the selection of a proper remedy must have been very difficult. Allopathic treatment was pushed to the utmost. The system of the husband was the storehouse of various miasms resulting in the delivery of a still-born child with ulcers in the body; moreover, in the name of treatment a series of injections were already given and douching was still continuing,—all these things considered together will give you an idea as to the problematic nature of the prescription to be made. However, the three remedies, viz., *Nitric acid*, *Muriatic acid* and *Baptisia* came up to my mind after I made a careful study of the case. I fixed upon *Baptisia*, the reason being the offensiveness of the discharges and intense tenderness in the abdomen. Of course, if you think of the ugly miasms in the husband's system, *Nitric acid* must come to the fore-front but the rapid course of the

present acute illness stood against its selection. Moreover, the picture of *Nitric acid* was also not complete. Of course, this remedy might come into use in future if her chronic treatment is taken in hand but for the present it must have to be ruled out. The next remedy, I mean, *Muriatic acid*, would not be given though many were the symptoms of that remedy present in the patient. The intense exhaustion and weakness were not present which might fit the acid remedy. Moreover, *Muriatic acid* is hardly ever known to be indicated so early as in the present case. With these thoughts flowing into my mind and after calmly observing the patient for a very long time, I advised *Baptisia* 30 in 3 doses to be given every 3 hours a dose and the administration of the remedy was to be commenced just in the falling of temperature. All external helps were distinctly forbidden and the nurses were given full instructions regarding diet, etc. and I stopped all recent and so-called "scientific and uptodate" methods of dietary. Barley-water, whey, essence of *Masuri* and pomegranate juice were advised to be given *ad libitum*. On the 3rd day morning, improvement fairly commenced, offensiveness much reduced and the patient returned to a bit of consciousness. On the following day, *Baptisia* 200, a single dose and another dose of 200 on the sixth day were all that was given. And no other dose of *Baptisia* nor of any other remedy was required.

The husband of the patient having observed the wonderful effect of the Homœopathic treatment in such a serious case like this, placed his own case and

that of his wife for the purpose of chronic constitutional treatment and I think their cases can not be perfectly cured before the end of 1933. The details of their treatment being out of place in this connection are not given here.

Bed-Sore,—Patients are seen many times suffering from bed-sores during the course of malignant fevers and a tubercular type of diarrhoea and dysentery. If those patients come perfectly under the symptoms of Baptisia, it is all well, but even when Baptisia is not the remedy for the case and the prescribed remedy is unable to cope with the bed-sores as well, in that case, if simply offensiveness of the discharges is present you may fairly interpolate Baptisia. *Psorinum* and *Ars* may also help in this type of cases to be selected with an eye to the symptom totality.

As a complementary to Baptisia, *Arsenic* may be thought of, and if there is hæmorrhage, *Arnica*, *Crotalus*, *Nitric acid* may come into use after it. Baptisia is a chilly remedy, very much weak and nervous.

I am sorry to note that many Homœopaths are there who would like to declare in the same chorus with our Allopathic brethren that the Typhoid fever must "run its course" for so many days or so many weeks before which it cannot be cured. I think it is a sin for any follower of the Master to say so. As a matter of fact, we have been able thousands of times to abort the course of a Typhoid fever within the first or second week, with the help of *Gels*, *Bry*, *Baptisia*, *Psorin*, etc., a remedy which can be selected under the totality of symptoms present in the case. The

truly selected remedy must commence improvement at once, though of course one, two, three or more days may be needed to complete its action and to finish the cure according to the nature and gravity of each individual case. This is a true *dictum* which ought to be borne in mind by every Homœopath and all intelligent householders.

Potency,—I have seen many using the Mother-tincture, 1x and 2x potencies of this remedy. I can not recommend this practice. I do not think any potency lower than 30th. should be profitably used in these cases. For myself I use 30th, 200th and in a few cases 1000th. with discretion.

BARYTA CARB

Anti-Psoric
&
Anti-Tubercular }

Baryta carb is a deep-acting medicine of anti-Psoric and anti-Tubercular virtue. It is frequently used and its work is also excellent, of course, if properly selected. The law is infallible and we are only to blame where there is no proper selection and hence no satisfactory action.

• What is a Scrofula? We have got the name from the Old School and it means a condition. When the infants or children do not grow properly and in the usual way, we say they are Scrofulous. There are people who understand goitre by Scrofula but it is a mistake; of course, those that are Scrofulous

may have goitre or the swelling of the glands. People understand scabies by Psora and so they mistake Scrofula by goitre. The real thing is that Psora is *the cause* of scabies and skin diseases. So, Scrofula is *the cause* of glandular derangement.

* What do you mean by Scrofula then? It is a condition of the system which stands in the way of natural growth and development. Scrofula is a general name and it includes all types of *mal-nutrition, mal-development*, e, g. (1) there are children who suffer from frequent scabies and skin diseases, and if there is a cut somewhere in their body, the spot must suppurate and would not easily heal. Their palms and soles are full of offensive sweats and they are liable to catch cold very frequently; their head is proportionally larger, the fontanelles remaining open for a long time, etc; (2) there are many, again, who have their abdomen and head larger in proportion, have frequent sour stools and sour vomitings, they are fleshy and plump, get much delay in learning to talk or walk and their brain power is dull; (3) many, again, there are who are much irritable, their skin being dry and mouth full of saliva, pass offensive stools and get profuse sweat in bed; (3) the rest are full of worms, have voracious appetite, have frequent pains in the abdomen, much irritated and dull brained. All of these classes come within the category of Scrofula, though each class has altogether different sets of symptoms.

* How did the miasm or susceptibility of Scrofula originate? What is the cause standing behind it and producing it? A few words are necessary for expla-

nation. Our revered Dr. E. B. Nash has put for us an idea that Psora and Scrofula are synonymous. He is a great teacher and we must respect his *dictum*. The thing is that at his time they were the same thing but now-a-days on account of the miasms of Syphilis and Sycosis being too much in our society and specially by virtue of the suppressive treatment, these two miasms have become different. Now-a-days Scrofula means the Tubercular diathesis. It is Psora plus Pseudo-Psora or inherited Syphilis. In other words, if the miasm of Psora co-mingles with Syphilis acquired or inherited, the new mixture is called a Scrofula and may give rise to the much dreaded Tubercular diathesis.

Baryta carb. has Psoric and Tubercular diathesis in it. In some cases, Psora predominates, in the rest, the Tubercular miasm gets the upper hand. There are various remedies in our Materia Medica which have a similar nature, viz *Calc. carb.*, *Silica*, *Psorinum*, *Tuberculinum*, etc.; and if the central features of Baryta carb are clearly remembered, there is hardly any chance of confusion between the similar remedies.

The **Suitability** of Baryta carb should be understood though it is a remedy specially suitable for the young and the aged, yet the young also may come within its range. I shall give you a picture of Baryta carb as it arises in each of them.

Baryta Child,—The central feature of a Baryta child is its *dwarfishness*. Either in the mind or in the physique, Baryta carb child shows the dwarfishness. It means as they dwarfed in their body development

so they lack in mental also. There are various remedies which produce disorders in this respect but it is Baryta only which dwarfs, meaning that far from making an advance, Baryta rather recedes as if its growth is stunted back. That is the characteristic of Baryta carb and that should be borne in mind.

Baryta youth,—The young people who commit masturbation before their age and get night emission as a result thereof, get disorders of digestion as also palpitation of the heart, are fit subjects of this remedy. Their glands are generally found to be prominent and the onward development is arrested. They generally get prematurely old and may largely be benefitted by the use of this remedy.

Baryta Old People,—When the old people manifest childish temperaments, have hardly any memory, have a tendency to frequently catch cold, and are found to be fond of children and younger people. Weakness of the heart, profuseness of the urine as also incontinence are the symptoms that are found in them.

General picture,—The Baryta patient is very much chilly. He cannot tolerate cold bath, exposure to cold air and damp air, and by the slightest exposure to them they get swelling of the maxillary glands and tonsilitis. Moreover, the natural course of his growth and development rather recedes, as it were. A child would take a long time to learn to walk and to talk, be much inattentive to his studies, and his memory and intellect are found to be stunted. He gets very shy of strangers, wants to hide himself behind a chair or an almirah, so as to escape detection; even sometimes he would weep aloud at the sight of an un-

known person. Tongue gets as if paralyzed and has a profuse salivation during dentition. The Baryta child has a pain in the stomach frequently after meals and has constipation of ball-like fœces. These are all general symptoms and the details are entered into by and by.

Mind,—I have given you already an idea of the Baryta mind. The mental development is found very early to get stunted so that the natural transitions, I mean, learning to walk on all fours, to sit, to walk, to speak, etc. are much delayed. There are a few remedies which have a similar defect viz., *Borax*, *Acid phos*, *Natr. mur*, *Calc. carb*, *Calc. phos*, *Silica*, etc. A comparison with only a few words may be necessary. The *Borax* child has a peculiarity of getting so much terrified upon a downward motion,—so much so, that it will clutch at its mother when she wants to put it down upon the bed from her lap or if she fondles or caresses and there is a downward motion during the acts ; so that a *Borax* child is said to be very nervous ; moreover, the child gets abnormally terrified at a sudden sound nearabout. A *Phosphoric acid* child has rather a *premature* development, just opposite to that in *Baryta*, *Borax*, *Natrum*, etc. because in the latter remedies the course of development is much *delayed*. In *Phosphoric acid* it is rather *more speedy* than natural. But for all that the mental weakness appears to be transmitted into the physical muscles and so the transitions are more delayed than accelerated. A *Calc. carb* child rather looks very fair, fat and plump, gets profuse sweat in the head, specially during sleep at night ;

moreover, has a sour diarrhoea, sour vomiting consisting of milk-curds and is much chilly. From the outward look, you may rather be misled, so as not to be able to understand that there is anything wrong with them but as a matter of fact the transitions are much delayed. *Calc. phos.* mind is weaker still, the legs are unstable and weak, a rickety condition develops very early and the child begins to dry up and becomes very much chilly. The child "wants to nurse all the time", yet it gets weak and emaciated, not on account of its food being less substantial, but on account of the fact that it cannot assimilate properly. The food substances are not to blame but the thing is that the substantial portion from the food stuffs is not assimilated by it and is ejected by way of stools. The child is full of fears and gets startled up on the slightest sounds. The *Silica* child is also very much chilly and cannot tolerate even the slightest cold. Moreover, the *Silica* child is noted for its obstinacy. He must have his ways and get satisfaction in his own way. Its legs are very weak, so there is a good deal of delay in learning to walk. Both *Baryta* and *Silica* have rather a distended abdomen with the rest of the body weak and emaciated. But one word you must have to bear in mind that, in *Baryta* the mind itself is undeveloped and that is the reason why the transitions are delayed. But in other remedies the defects are local i. e., the legs are weak and emaciated and therefore they make much delay in learning to walk.

"The reason for the delay is the mental defect,"—this reason is most prominent and clearly manifested

in Baryta carb, but in *Borax* and *Natr. mur* the same reason partially holds good. In Baryta the course of development seems to take rather a *backward turn* but in the other two remedies it is only *slowed down*.

The Baryta mind, if properly analysed, will show that far from an onward development, a *retrograde* course is manifested, as is evidenced by the fact that along with age there is hardly any process of *unfolding* of the mind, and so a young boy aged 12 or 13 can not mix with another of the same or similar age but is found to mix and play with a child of four or five. A middle aged man of forty will like to keep company with a man far younger, say aged 16 or 17. From all these, you will conclude that there is rather a *receding* process, or at best a very very slow process of development. Moreover, there may be an unsymmetrical and partial development, if any at all, of the Baryta mind and body. As an illustration of the partial development of the mind, you may perhaps see in one case that the intellect is slowly unfolding but the memory does not ; or in some other case, memory is found to develop slowly but intellect is at a dead-still ; in a third case, sentimentalism may develop at the cost of intellect and memory. Physically also, a particular organ or a particular side of the body may have a slow development, whereas the other side may remain almost paralysed and other organs do not seem to grow and function naturally.

Rickets or Rachitis,—I have given you a fair idea of the Baryta mentals. You will also see that the glands of a Baryta child are in disorder and specially the lymphatic glands. Glands below the throat,

round the neck, in the intestines, as also in other regions of the body, are found to swell up and the patient gets on slowly emaciating in spite of good appetite,—even in many cases the emaciation is found to be *in proportion* to the appetite or the amount of food eaten (*Nat. mur, Iodium, Tuberculin, etc.*). In the case of children, this condition is technically called *Rickets* and the children are called *rickety* children. In very many adult cases, the condition of consumption has been found to develop and I have been able to cure many of them during the predicament with this remedy. There are lots of terms but all indicating the same or similar condition as given above and you should be familiar with those names which are given simply in accordance with the locality principally affected, viz, when the intestinal glands are affected it is called *Tabes mesenterica* which is only another name for *Tuberculosis* of the intestines. Where the spinal axis is mainly affected, it is called *Tabes Dorsalis* which is *Tuberculosis* of the spine and in case the whole glandular kingdom is in a general way invaded and the patient goes on emaciating, the condition is called *Consumption*. But all these, more or less, denote the same thing and you need not pause upon the names but stand strongly in your invulnerable position of prescribing upon the totality of symptoms that are individual in each case. If the Baryta mind is there, you will be able to cure the consumptive condition in any age, whatever name or denomination is given at the time. Here is a case which I am going to relate.

Case Report,—Sj. Rabilochan,—an inhabitant of

Jaypur, Bankura, aged 20 or 21, fell ill of Tuberculosis and was brought to me for treatment on 12th December, 1909. His father related his case as in the following and I also took down a few notes by questioning.

"Rabi does not do anything, generally keeps at home but is very innocent. All my people are fond of him on account of his inoffensive character. Sometimes he angles fishes in my tanks, sometimes he is engaged in the studies but he likes to remain alone. In fact, he is never in the habit of mixing with anybody but he would remain by himself. During childhood up to the 10th or 11th year he was a weakling. Cough and coryza, frequent tonsillitis, occasional fever, etc, he suffered from during the time and he was very thin with his abdomen rather large. Every year he used to suffer from Malaria and he has still an enlargement of his spleen. He took a better turn since his 12th or 14th year and was in his best of health from the 16th or 17th year. In the August of 1906, he wetted himself with a continual shower of rain water and fell ill on the following day. Though fever and other symptoms went off after a few days' treatment, yet he is not regaining his former health as yet. During this illness he had to be fasting for 7 or 8 days and had to take a plenty of quinine. Since then he has been losing and losing. Further-more he is being dulled day after day. Of course, he was never such in his life but always a shy, dull and do-nothing fellow. For some months past he has got a swelling of glands in various parts and it has also been found that he has been running 99° to 100°

heat daily. Due to all these he has been emaciating and emaciating”.

I thought it impossible to get anything from the patient himself as it appeared to me to be of *non compos mentis* type. I examined and found lots of T. B. glands below the liver and round the neck, as well as below the throat. There was neither pain nor soreness in any of those glands, though I got from his father that almost everyday 3 to 4 hours after meals Rabi would invariably experience a sort of dull pain in the lower intestines. On cross-examinations I was further informed that he would mix only with the group of his selected friends and no other. The patient was chilly and would not agree to cold bath.

Having fully studied the symptom-totality as stated above, I fixed upon Baryta carb as the only remedy for the case and prescribed in 1000th. potency and rose up to C. M. gradually. In course of five or six months, memory commenced to improve and it was found that he could now remain alone. But I waited for one year and a half within which time the swollen glands were invisible and in a general way, and specially mentally, the patient was far improved but one thing could not be removed which was the susceptibility to cold. So, I had to use *Tuberculinum bovinum*, 2 doses in C. M. potency and the patient was fully cured. I think, rather I am sure, that *Tuberculinum bovinum* is complementary to Baryta, specially in the Tubercular sphere.

I want to put in here only one word regarding the mentality of Baryta patients. The individuals who are actually defective in their brains get much

irritated if anybody remarks that they are so,—and even sometimes they are up for calling them ill names,—this symptom is found in Baryta. The insane persons are generally found to be under the impression that it is they only who understand right and other people are all insane. Of course, Baryta patients do not go so far but they will not admit, nor can you convince them that they are *non compos mentis*. They would even resent anybody looking at them or laughing at them, because their idea is that the persons so doing take them for mad men.

Throat and Tonsils,—Baryta is a remedy *par excellence* in tonsilitis which is found to come in or at least aggravate during the rains or damp season. Children of Baryta make and Baryta constitution generally get their tonsils suppurated and feel a great deal of trouble and tenderness during the act of swallowing. After every inflammation and suppuration, the tonsil gets enlarged more and more, and the Allopathic physicians would advise operation and removal of the tonsil. This is highly injurious specially to those patients who have in their systems the Tubercular taint lying dormant; and the result is that more important organs are affected. Be that as it may, Baryta Carb, *if properly used, can take away the susceptibility to Tonsilitis*. During acute aggravations or the frequent inflammations, you may use *Bell., Hep., Merc.*, etc. according to the necessity and symptoms of the individual case and the deeper medicine like Baryta need not be used there and is not generally indicated. Then, after the acute aggravation is gone, you may think of Baryta carb or *Baryta*

mur, if the patient's individuality and constitution call for it, with the view of curing the patient permanently i. e. removing the susceptibility to tonsilitis once for all. A few remedies ought to be compared here.

Comparison,—Let us take the following remedies for comparison, viz., *Bell.*, *Hep.*, *Merc.*, *Chamo.*, *Calc. carb.*, *Calc. phos.*, *Ignatia* and *Conium*,—and *Baryta* should be compared with each of them.

Bell and *Hepar* are very much quick in their courses, whereas in *Baryta* the course is slow, very slow. The throat pains of *Baryta* come in very slowly and the local inflammation increases very slowly and the suppuration takes a long time to come in, whereas in the other two remedies, everything is complete in a day or two. *Bell* cases hardly suppurate and the pains of *Bell* are characteristically *throbbing*, due to congestion rapidly coming in; *Hepar* has much tenderness, a fish-bone sensation in the throat ameliorated by warm things, and the patient is full of sweat. Of course, all the three remedies are chilly and are fond of local warm applications. *Mercurius* symptoms are the following:—Offensive mouth, thick, dirty coating over the tongue, profuse salivation, profuse sweat without any the least relief, rather, aggravation from sweat and from the warmth of bed, are characteristics. The tendency of *Bell*, *Hepar* and *Merc* is to suppurate and each of them has a rapid course towards suppuration. *Baryta* is very slow and makes a considerable delay in bringing in the suppuration unless aborted by some other acute remedy. *Merc. cor* is more rapid in its course (just like *Acon*, specially in dysentery) and though it has

all the symptoms of *Merc. sol.*, yet *Merc. cor* and *Baryta* have a special peculiarity which should be noted. It is the condition of getting *choked up* during the act of swallowing and the patient is compelled to throw off the *bolus* without being able to get it in. *Chamomilla* patient is badly irritated, rather *inflamed* and in *Chamo.* cases, the throat-pains extend up to the ear. *Chamo.* course is very much rapid and violent, so much so that the patient is verily upset and is anxious and restless. *Calc. carb* and *Calc. phos* cases require the *constitutional* peculiarities and the *constitutional* symptom-totalities for the purpose of prescription, as the local symptoms of these deep remedies have hardly any value. All the remedies, so far considered, have their relief of local conditions from warmth. Regarding the *Calc.* group, specially the *Carbonate*, one word should be remembered. It appears as if they, specially the *Carbonate* do not precede or follow *Baryta* with benefit. It appears as if an inimical relation exists. Next, *Ignatia* comes in and it is quite peculiar that the patient of *Ignatia* feels pain *between* the acts of swallowing and rather feels ameliorated *during* the act. *Conium* tonsil never suppurates. It hardens and hardens and remains indurated. *Ignatia* and *Conium*—both are chilly and obtain relief from warmth and it is wonderfully peculiar that the *Ignatia* throat pains are rather ameliorated from pressure.

* By the bye, a few words upon the *tonsil operation* are necessary. Now-a-days it has been rather a fashion with our people, specially in the richer circle to remove the enlarged tonsils of their children.

That this method is highly injurious has already been said previously. Of course, in a few cases of urgent circumstances, immediate operation is necessary, otherwise there may be a death from suffocation. There are other classes too in which there is hardly to be found any symptom-totality to prescribe upon. Except under these two predicaments, operation should not be recommended. You should always remember that the enlargement is the *resulting* ultimate of the vital disorder and so, where the symptom-totality, i.e., the constitutional peculiarities and individual characteristics are found, a truly homœopathic prescription can slowly reduce the enlarged tonsil by first putting a stop to the frequent inflammations and, by and by, the *tendency* thereto.

Swelling of Glands.—I have already told you that in Baryta carb the whole glandular system is deranged. As the tonsil goes on enlarging and enlarging after every inflammation or acute aggravation, so the glands of other regions also do. Little children are generally found to experience a dull pain just after meals or during the digestive process and the reason behind it is the *irritation* of the glands in the digestive canal. For some time, these glands may not be felt by the touch of hands, but after some time they get enlarged and may be felt so. This peculiar glandular disorder in the children is technically called *Tabes mesenterica* which is a type of the Tubercular process and though it is more often found in the children, it is not very rare amongst the adults. There are a few remedies which have also

this type of disorder, viz, *Iodine*, *Calc. phos* and *Silica* which should better be compared with Baryta carb.

Comparison,—Let us now compare. First look to the Baryta totality,—dwarfishness of the body and mind, dull pain in the abdomen after meals, passing of undigested stools, swelling of the abdomen along with general emaciation, horribly offensive sweat in the soles of feet, etc. *Iodine* has violent restlessness, anxiety, voracious appetite and proportionate emaciation, constant desire for open air and a desire for, and amelioration in, cold and cold bath, etc. *Calc. phos* also has voracious appetite and emaciation, a great deal of delay in natural transitions, and the bones getting soft, thin and undeveloped. Moreover, *Calc. phos* is much restless though not so much *anxious* as *Iodine*. All the medicines of this group are chilly except *Iodine*. Last of all, *Silica* child is much obstinate, timid, much emaciated though the abdomen and the head are larger in proportion; moreover, it has an offensive sweat specially in the soles. *Silica* is aggravated from cold, both dry and damp.

Head-pains,—In the headache of Baryta the patient feels as if the forehead is forced downwards and though as a *patient*, Baryta is chilly, yet his headache is relieved by open and cold air. There are various types of skin diseases over the head.

Eyes,—There are various disorders of sight, the main symptom being as if the patient is looking through the smoke. Then, there may be ulcerations, granular lids, etc. but unless the patient's *individuality* corresponds with Baryta, the local symptoms have no value.

Ears,—Various sounds are heard specially during inhalation, chewing and swallowing but after lying no sounds are heard. The glands near about the ears are found to swell, and various forms of skin diseasee are also found round the ears as in the face and over the head.

Respiratory organs,—The old people may have a type of rattling in the chest which aggravates from cold or during damp days, and Baryta may be needed. Baryta has a type of cough also, which does not go away except so long as the patient lies over the abdomen, otherwise the dry coughing continues. Moreover, there is a palpitation aggravated on the slightest exertion, as also when lying to the left.

Perspiration,—Baryta has offensive foot sweat. Other remedies also have it, viz, *Graphites*, *Sanicula*, *Psorin*, *Silica*, etc. and if this sweat is *suppressed*, many disease symptoms may appear. *Graphites* has constipation like Baryta but Baryta has no stool, as in *Graphites*, smeared with mucus. Moreover, *Graphites* patient is rather fat. *Sanicula* foot sweat is confined between the fingers where ulcerations also are found. Along with the foot sweat of *Sanicula* there is burning also. *Sanicula* and *Silica* have the peculiar condition of stool in that it recedes after partially coming out. *Silica* has large head, large abdomen and is obstinate and timid. Except *Graphites* they are all chilly but *Graphites* has also an aggravation from damp cold.

*A few words, I think, will not be out of place here with regard to the *use* of this remedy. Whenever you feel that you should use this remedy you must be

sure that the *Baryta mentals* are there and it would be better, if the *susceptibility* to tonsillitis with *actual* manifestation of it, in a more or less frequent way, is also there. The retarded condition of the brain and mind development must be there,—a point which you should always remember. I have seen in many families that parents and teachers labour under an impression that the *Baryta* children may be corrected by virtue of good admonitions and healthy teachings. But this is clearly a mistake. You must have to know the field where admonitions and teachings are fruitful and where they are not. Where the patients have *a will* to be corrected and to be better by and by, that is the field where those are of any use. Now, the thing is that the *Baryta* minds can not have such a will in them. In fact, that is *the* disorder from which they suffer. You should always remember that whenever you find a betterment of the mentals, it comes *in pursuance of the natural law* and it is never an accident. Where the mind itself is diseased, how can we expect that a strong will to be cured should be there? You can not pacify a *Chamomilla* patient by thousands of consoling words and healthy advices. Can you ever expect a *Bufo rana* youth to bring him into moral and better ways without the help of our curative law, that is, without administering a *dynamic* remedy selected according to the Law of Similars?

*You should not entertain an idea of curing these patients by casual doses of *low* potencies, say 30, 200 or even 1000. No, you must have to consider the *depth* and the *chronicity* of every case before you can

select the potency. At first you may obtain a ray of benefit by the use of lower potencies but you are to rise up higher and higher in the ladder of potencies. You should always remember that the Baryta carb disease is a vital one lying in the third plane of human existence and so you cannot fully and permanently cure with potencies lower than 50 M. or C. M., nay, sometimes still higher may be needed. I put in only a hint here and you may use your discretion according to the varied circumstances of each case under your treatment.

Modalities,—*Aggravation*,—after meals, lying on the affected side and on the left side, from cold, cold bath in damp days, from intellectual labours, thinking of the ailments, and in company of people ; *Amelioration*—from loneliness, from warmth, covering and exertion ; only the head pains are ameliorated from cold and open air.

Potency,—Potency from 200 to C. M is of general use.

BARYTA MUR.

This remedy is similar to the *Carbonate*, though the following two peculiar characteristics are found in the *Murate*, viz, (1) where cramps and convulsions are prominent and (2) violent sexual irritation. In all other respects, they are similar to each other. Where in a *Baryta* case i. e., in a case where *Baryta carb* symptoms are present along with one or both of

these characteristics, it would be better to use Baryta mur than the *Carbonate*. This remedy is not found to be of much use.

BELLADONNA. *Anti-Psoric.* }

This is a remedy of almost daily use. Though it has not been included amongst the anti-psoric group, yet I have seen that it has an anti-psoric action. Its action is speedy and deep as well. Of course, our revered Master as well as the illustrious followers have declared it to be one of the polychrests. In fact, it is capable of being used in various human disorders and in varied predicaments.

General features,—Belladonna is a chilly remedy and cold aggravates all its conditions. From cold exposure the patient gets a swelling of the throat, tonsillitis, fever or rheumatic pains and many other disease symptoms. Of course, the manifestation of any particular disease symptom always depends upon *the miasmatic* condition existing in the patient's system. A Sycotic individual may have the manifestation of rheumatism or an individual with Tubercular diathesis may have cough and cold, with or without fever. Moreover, you know, the chain tears up in its weakest link, so that the weakest spot in the system (of course, made so by the miasm existing in the system) will be the disease-manifesting spot.

There are various remedies which are affected with cold, like Bell, and it would be better if we bring

in a comparison here so as to be able to abort the on-coming manifestations at the very outset.

The three remedies for the purpose of aborting the manifestations, as a result of cold exposure, are principally *Camphor*, *Aconite* and *Belladonna*. *Camphor* is to be thought of before the reaction comes in i. e., so long as the cold feelings in the patient continue. As soon as the reaction appears and a hot feeling comes in, *Camphor* must be ruled out and that is the stage for using *Aconite*. Suppose, you could not use *Camphor* or you were not called in, unless and until the *Camphor* stage was over ; so that you may find fever, restlessness, high grade of thirst, fear of death and a desire for cold air and even fanning,—now *Aconite* is in place. Suppose, even *Aconite* could not be used and in that case, an inflammatory condition of some of the vital organ may have to be expected. You should clearly note and bear in mind the difference between *Aconite* and *Belladonna* in this sphere of their use. Because, in case you mistake, you will lose the opportunity of cutting short the disease course and of aborting the further manifestations. In *Aconite*, there is no selection of any spot or any organ for setting up an inflammatory process, and the disorders, distempers or discomforts are all found to be general. In *Belladonna*, a particular spot for setting in the inflammatory process is found to be selected, so that it may be Tonsilitis or may be Appendicitis or Bronchitis or Pneumonia or Mastitis or congestive Headache, etc., etc., that is to be expected. This selection is not accidental but is perfectly causal and quite in keeping with the law ; because the selec-

tion depends upon the various conditions brought about by the miasm or miasms upon the organs of the human organism and the weakest organ is expected to be affected. However, the first point of difference I have given you as above. The second point is that *Aconite* is highly restless and full of fear of death; not only so, it has the peculiar thirst calling for frequent and profuse quantity of water. Moreover, *Aconite* has a desire for cold. Whereas Bell is rather drowsy and sleepy, though unable to sleep, because as soon as sleep comes in, the patient startles up. Bell has no fear of death, and it has thirst but for a small quantity of water at long intervals, only to moisten the tongue; then again, Bell is rather chilly so that it wants to cover the whole body during the fever. Another point that you should note is that *Aconite* is dry and if any sweat appears in the *Aconite* case, it is to be taken rather an indication of good action of your remedy; whereas Bell is sweaty, specially in the covered parts. Apart from all those distinguishing features, Bell is found to run a high grade of temperature with red eyes and face and throbbing or bounding pulse and carotids, etc., etc. From all these, I think, you will be quite capable of distinguishing between the three most valuable remedies in *acute* conditions which will be of help in aborting the disease-course as a result of cold exposure. As a Homœopath you should be able to abort every case of a running fever with complications like Pneumonia, Brain Typhoid, Abdominal Typhoid. etc., etc.,—of course, it may not be with the help of the above three remedies only, but with the

help of any remedy indicated according to the totality of symptoms. Do not go on with the idea that any disease *must run a course for so many days*. If you do, you confess your incapacity and lack of knowledge in the Law of Cure and in your *Materia Medica*.

*I have seen and you may also daily observe that *Aconite* and *Belladonna* are advised to be used *alternately* by the many so-called good physicians. This is highly unfortunate. I warn you against this sort of unreasonable, rather stupid instruction. Where *Aconite* is indicated, *Belladonna cannot* cure and vice versa. Moreover, do not be led away by the opinion of those redoubtable prescribers, to the effect,—“each of our cases is happily cured by the alternate use of *Aconite* and *Belladonna*”. As a matter of truth, you should understand that the patient is cured *in spite of* that type of senseless prescription. For God’s sake, the two remedies are fortunately in a friendly relation and so when one of them cures, the other does not interfere.

Nature of Belladonna,—First of all, you should note a peculiar nature of this remedy, that its symptoms *come all on a sudden and go away all on a sudden*. The symptoms that come suddenly may, of course, remain and continue for some time but when they go, they are found to go away *suddenly*. Bell has this nature as a grand characteristic. Upon this you should compare the nature of *Aconite*. *Aconite* symptoms come up as a violent storm and after finishing the devastation that it can do within the least possible time go away all at once. In other

words *Aconite* has not the nature of continuing its symptoms for any length of time but whatever it will do, it must do within the least possible time. It was Dr. Dunham who said that *Aconite* has the nature of violent tempest and it is verily true. Of course, Bell may also finish its actions within the least possible time like *Aconite*, but generally its symptoms may be found to continue for some time. Moreover, *violence* of symptoms is another characteristic of Bell. Just remember the idea behind each of the two remedies. The point in Bell is the *suddenness* of its symptoms in coming and going, as well as the *violence* of its symptoms; and the idea in *Aconite* is the abnormally *speedy course* of its actions. Of course, coming and going of its symptoms may be equally sudden as in Bell, but the point is its *speediness* as in a violent storm or tempest.

Modalities—Bell is principally a right-sided remedy as *Apis*, *Lyc*, etc. Its *aggravation* comes in from *touch*, *sound*, exertion, *on exposure to cold air*, on looking at bright objects, *towards the midday and midnight*, on uncovering, on uncovering the head, after sleep, in the summer, in sun heat, *upon lying and on lying to the affected side*; *amelioration* is to be found *from rest*, on sitting and standing erect, in *warm room* and from *warmth*. The modalities shall be dealt with in details as we go on with the remedy.

Relations.—Of course, Bell has a friendly relation with *Aconite*, but the main *complementary* of Bell is *Calc. carb*. Where the acute symptoms of the *Belladonna* patient, though removed more than once, repeatedly appear every now and then, *Calc. carb* should

be used. It has also been observed that *Sulph, Bry, Merc sol, Gels, Glonoine, Hyoscyamus, Stramo*, etc., goodly follow Belladonna, according to necessity and totality of symptoms appearing in each individual case.

Fever,—The nature of this remedy, as I have given you above, will be clearly evident if you consider the fever symptoms of the remedy. Mainly you are to remember two things in relation to its fever, viz, (1) it suddenly comes and it suddenly goes away, and (2) it comes with a good deal of violence. The *suddenness* and the *violence* are the points. Whenever there is any fever without any the least previous warning in the patient, you may suspect the fever to be a Belladonna fever. *Suddenly, violently and with a swift course*,—to be remembered. *Obviously, Aconite* fever has almost the same type of its on-coming, and I can tell you that the junior practitioners are generally found to be at a loss to distinguish between them, at least during the first few years of their practice—and I do not blame them, as the points of difference have perhaps nowhere been suggested. This is the reason why many practitioners even of experience are found to use the remedies *alternately*. But this sort of practice cannot be recommended though as I have told you that it is not so much harmful as the two remedies are not inimical. But Homœopathy cures on the totality of symptoms, under the Law of Similars, and if one is *homœopathically* related to the case, the other *cannot be*. For the purpose of convenience, I am therefore going to give you the main differentiating points for your proper guidance.

The following points of difference should be remembered. (1) Both *Aconite* and Bell may produce fever as a result of cold exposure and there may be inflammatory symptoms in both, but in *Aconite* they are *general*, whereas in Bell they select a *particular* spot or a *particular* organ, for congestion, often a violent congestion, and as a general indication it is found that throbbing pulse and carotids, suffused face and reddened eyes, very high heat, etc. are found to appear. (2) In *Aconite* there is a high grade of mental inquietude which can hardly be allayed, restlessness, anxiety, fear of death, etc., whereas in Belladonna, instead of restlessness and anxiety there is a drowsy condition of the patient; though there may be a good deal of irritation, yet rather a soporous condition, as expressed in the text "sleepy but cannot sleep" is to be found. (3) *Aconite* has a high grade of thirst, so that the patient calls for water and a profuse quantity of it each time and very frequently too; moreover, *Aconite* has a dry skin; whereas Bell has practically no thirst except for a small quantity of water at long intervals, and instead of dry skin Bell has a good sweat, specially on the covered parts; moreover, the sweat in Bell far from giving any relief to the patient, may aggravate, whereas if any sweat appears at all in an *Aconite* case, it gives much relief to the patient,—not only so, it is an indication of coming down of the fever or its going off. (4) There is hardly any *remittent* type of fever in *Aconite*. It is generally *synochal* and of course Bell also has no remittent fever but its fever may be *intermittent*,—the fever suddenly coming, and after re-

maining for a few hours or a few days, going away suddenly. There is neither remittent nor typhoid type of fever in any of them; Bell fever is intermittent, it comes suddenly and after a few hours or few days, it goes suddenly as well. There are some physicians who teach that Bell has typhoid fever. But I tell you that the very *nature* of Bell is against the typhoid type of fever. Typhoid is *slow*, essentially slow,—the slowness is its characteristic. Bell has no such nature. Suddenness is characteristic of Bell as I have told you before. Of course, Bell can attack a patient suddenly with a violent type of fever attended with a brain irritation, convulsion and a tremendous form of delirium, with the result that the patient is exhausted and dies. But a typhoid type of fever, the very character of which is slowness is *never* to be found in Bell. Graduality and a remittent nature, by which I mean the continuation of fever rising up to some high temperature towards noon, afternoon or evening and coming down to a certain point of temperature towards morning, is foreign to Bell. Cases of typhoid patients are found in which the high fever, violent delirium, drowsiness, etc. may lead the inexperienced minds to give Bell, but it does not cure and may do rather a good deal of harm to the patient; though it may lower the temperature for some time only and produces an *appearance* of benefit, encouraging for the time being the family and the physician. In these cases you may rather think of *Stramo* which has the violence almost like Bell and also has a nature of typhoid. *Hyoscyamus* is never violent. (5) *Aconite* can produce only a *functional*

disorder and there is never any tissue-change in it. Of course, Bell also has only a functional disorder and no tissue-change, though Bell can produce a local congestion and thus *prepare a field* for such changes. But in any case, where there is discharge or ulceration, etc., Bell is ruled out giving place to some other remedy. (6) Lastly, during the high fever *Aconite* wants cold and fanning, Bell feels chilly and wants covering.

Now, let us go on with the fever symptoms of this remedy. Bell fever generally comes on with some local inflammation and congestion attended with or without brain irritation. A high pitch of heat is there upon the skin, so that the examining hand is burnt, as it were. Little children generally get Belladonna fever with a high degree of brain irritation. Perhaps half an hour before, the child was all right and was playing merrily with its playmates. It then went to sleep and as soon as the sleep broke up, it was found that a fever with a high heat, a good deal of restlessness and an irritation of the brain came in. Its face and eyes are now found to be deep red, heart beatings are violent, throbbing carotids and the heat is found to be more towards the head, whereas the extremities are found to be rather cold. This is typical Bell, and suppose, it is unable to finish the case, *Calc. carb* may come in as a complement. You know a Belladonna child is of robust body and *Calc. carb* is fair, fat and plump. Both of them are full of sweats. Both are chilly and both want covering during the fever. *Aconite* is followed by *Sulphur* and Bell. by *Calc.* in a general way. Of course, it has been found that

after Bell., *Sulph.* is also sometimes needed. The order is Bell, *Sulph*, *Calc.*, because *Sulph* should not follow *Calc. carb.* The symptom-totality in each case must decide which to follow and which not.

Sometimes Bell fever, how high it may be, goes away after a few hours or a few days and the patient keeps on well, but in Psoric patients it may continue and bring in symptoms, conditions and manifestations in various organs of the body. Sometimes throat inflammation may come in. In other cases, Scarlet fever or Measle fever may be the result, or even meningitis may come in. So that during the first few days, the physician should keenly observe in which way the wind blows and will try, if possible, to abort the whole course, so that the possibility of any such untoward manifestations may be averted. Let us consider those possible manifestations which are thus apprehended.

Meningitis and Brain symptoms,—Of all the complications that may come in Belladonna fever, in case it could not be aborted in the beginning, the foremost is the *brain irritation* and *brain congestion*. At first, red and suffused eyes and face,—the eyes appearing as if coming out, bounding pulse and throbbing carotids, pulsating headache, fever-heat being more felt in the upper body than in the lower, the thermometer reading very high, the hand examining the fever is felt as if burnt, yet the patient wanting covering all over, thirst for a small quantity of water, drowsiness with startings on entering into sleep, sweat mostly on the covered parts, though giving hardly any relief, etc, etc, appear in the case. Then come in rolling of the

head and crying up during sleep due to terrible dreams and visions, delirium of violent type, so much so, that the patient wants to beat and bite the nurses and attendants; grinding of the teeth, even sometimes convulsions of opisthotonic nature may appear and if they do, they are to be taken as indications of oncoming meningitis. You know meningitis is a term meaning the irritation of the meninges which are covering portions of the brain.

As the condition proceeds, the *somnolence* increases. Delirium grows less often along with the increase of somnolence but the rolling of the head rather increases, and sometimes one hand or one foot is moved involuntarily. But I want you to notice that as the case proceeds on and on, the violence decreases proportionately and the course is slowed and softened down. You should understand that Bell will very shortly give place to some other remedy of *milder* nature. Of course, before taking the turn, a Bell case may be so violent and serious that all the symptoms above given may violently aggravate and put an end to the life of the patient. But in most cases, specially in Scrofulous and Tubercular types of patients, it is generally found that the whole aspect of the Bell case is changed and then you are to turn your attention to some other remedy. Here *Apis*, *Bryonia*, *Sulph*, *Calc* and where there is blood poisoning, *Hyoscyamus*, *Rhus tox*, *Lachesis*, etc, may be required, each according to the totality of symptoms present in the case. Now let us give in a few words some hints as to the use of these remedies.

Bryonia,—In *Bry* cases, you will expect rolling of

the head, somnolence, the cephalic cry, soft delirium, etc., along with the special peculiarity of *Bry*, viz, aggravation from motion. Apart from that, the constipation with dry thick feces, thirst for a big quantity of water at long intervals, and dry and coated tongue must be remembered. Both *Bell* and *Bry* have intense headache though *Bell* has sensitiveness to touch, whereas *Bry* wants pressure. Moreover, *Bry* has no startling up on entering into sleep like *Bell*, nor has the suddenness or the violence as in *Bell*.

Apis,—In *Apis* cases, the following totality will be found,—the sudden shrill cry during sleep or the comatose condition of the patient, from which it appears as if some body has thrust a sharp needle-like thing into the patient's head, rolling of the head over the pillow, mouth dry yet no thirst, the quantity of urine much reduced or altogether suppressed. Perceptible aggravation in warm room and from covering, as well as between 3 p. m. to evening, clear amelioration from cold, and somnolence are characteristics of *Apis* and if there is a delirium, it is only of a low muttering type. In typical Typhoid fevers as well as when brain symptoms appear during the Measles, Small pox or Scarlet fever, *Apis* condition with Typhoid symptoms as enumerated above, is found to appear.

Sulphur,—This remedy comes in as a complementary to *Bryonia*, where *Bryonia* was selected upon the totality but could not complete the cure. In *Sulphur* cases, there is generally a history of suppression of some skin symptoms or in acute exanthemata the rash could not properly come out due to the presence

of Psora in the system. In these cases or where the eruptions are repercussed after having come out, *Sulphur*, *Apis*, *Zinc*, etc., are to be thought of according to the totality of symptoms in each individual case. Then again where symptoms are not very clear, *Sulphur* may be thought of, which generally clears up a case.

Calc. carb—After Bell, *Calc. carb* generally comes in, if, of course, the *Calcarea* totality is there. Meningitis often commences with Belladonna group of symptoms but where the patient's system is badly Psoric or Tubercular, Bell can not be expected to finish cure and some Anti-Psoric or anti-Tubercular remedy must be requisitioned according to the totality present. *Calc. carb* meets the Psoric as well as Tubercular cases. But the totality of the individual peculiarities must be attended to. In very many cases the local symptoms may not tally, but if the *constitutional* totality is there, that remedy which meets the totality must cure. *Calc. carb* is generally found to meet children's cases.

* **Scarlet fever**,—It is a type of exanthematous disease. It is generally given out that there are no cases of this disease in our country. But as a matter of fact, I have known and myself have treated a few cases of it. Scarlet fever is a name and names should not guide us. It is a very serious type of fever attended with eruptions and unless very carefully handled and intelligently treated, it has a tendency to end seriously. One thing which you should understand and which should always be your guide in the treatment of diseases is that the seriousness does not

lie in *the name* of a disease nor in *the disease* itself, but it absolutely depends on *the condition of the patient's system*. A fever in a certain patient may, without much trouble, end in a cure but the same fever may end fatally in the case of another patient if the latter's system is miasmatic. The fact that there are very rare cases of Scarlet fever in our country is due to the fact that the systems of our people have not yet been so much complicated and degenerated as those of the people in the countries where Scarlatina is most prevalent.

You should understand what a Scarlet fever is. It is a type of exanthematous disease like Measles, Small-pox, etc,—the only difference being that the eruptions in Measles, Small-pox, etc. come out separately and are technically called *discrete*, whereas in Scarlatina there are no eruptions separately visible to the eye, but the whole body becomes highly reddened and swollen up; not only so, violent and serious complications are found very many as attending symptoms, viz., Brain Typhoid, Diphtheria, Diphtheritis, Convulsions and a high grade of fever generally not to be found in any other disease of that type.

There is a special type of Scarlet fever technically called Sydenham Scarlet in which Bell seems to be the specific remedy. The whole body turns deep red, rather scarlet, no discrete eruptions are found and it appears as if the whole body is one eruption,—so much redness and swelling are found. There is an intense sensitiveness with soreness all over the body and in spite of the somnolent condition of the patient

there is present a high grade of violent delirium. You know, Bell is sleepy yet cannot sleep and as soon as he enters into sleep, he startles up on account of the throbbing pains highly aggravated during sleep. Along with these symptoms of Bell, the Scarlatina patient gets pains in the throat, and the neighbouring glands, specially to the right, swell up and become painful. It is invariably found that the condition of the patient characteristically aggravates during and after sleep. In Bell cases, you should remember the following symptoms.—violence, congestion in the brain, swelling and the scarlet colour of the whole body, very high fever, intense sensitiveness, absence of discrete eruptions, throbbing pains, violent delirium and an attempt to bite and strike the attendants. You should remember one word here, that there is a violent nausea and vomiting which look like those of *Ipecac* but the nausea and vomiting that are found here have the cause not in the stomach as in *Ipecac*, but in the violent congestion in the brain, and so *Ipec.* must be ruled out. You should carefully remember it, so that you may not be misled by *appearances*.

If in spite of the Bell totality, the fever and other conditions do not abate, you should conclude that Psora stands in the way and should think of *Sulph* which is, by the bye, a good complement of Bell.

If instead of the extreme violence of delirium and high grade of fever-heat, a less violent condition is found with predominance of restlessness and instead of deep red colour, there is found rather erysipelatous condition without much redness and the eruptions

are found discrete though swelling is there, you may think of *Rhus tox.*

If after the use of Bell and *Sulph* too, no relief comes in, rather brain symptoms are found to aggravate and the aggravation after sleep stands more prominent, the body hue of the patient turns even violet or bluish and instead of the violence of Bell it appears that the case has taken a deeper course with indications of blood poisoning, swelling of the throat in the left side or commencing in the left and extending to the right, and attended with pain, tenderness, sensitiveness of the parts with deep coma,—*Lachesis* must have to be administered. By the bye, *Lachesis* is also complementary to Bell.

Calc. carb symptoms may also come in, because it is also complementary to Bell. But in *Calc.* cases the constitutional peculiarities of the remedy must have to be sought for. In *Calc.* you should expect loose stools.

You may think of *Lycopodium* too, to come in after Bell, in case the following symptoms are present, viz,—aggravation after sleep so that the child gets up terrified, throws off his legs and tries to beat and bite the attendants or the mother, as also tympany, constipation and the characteristic time aggravation of *Lyco*, bet. 4 p.m. and 8 p.m.

Then you cannot discard *Apis* and *Ammon carb* from consideration in this connection. You know *Lachesis* and *Ammon carb* are inimically related, so that you cannot think of giving *Ammon carb* in case you have already given *Lachesis* after Bell. Then again, *Apis* and *Lachesis* both coming from the

animal kingdom do not happily follow one another. However, though sometimes all the three remedies seem to look alike, yet you can fairly distinguish between them. In Scarlet fevers, both *Ammon carb* and Bell characteristically attack the right side of the throat. Both have redness of the body and both have somnolence. The distinction lies in this that *Ammon carb* has discrete eruptions and has no swelling of the entire body as in Bell. Moreover in *Ammon carb*, the condition of the throat is so much serious as to suffocate the patient to death. Lastly, in *Ammon carb* cases, there is no violence as in Bell. Of course, there is startling during sleep in both but the reason for the symptom in Bell is intense brain-irritation due to congestion, whereas in *Ammon carb* it is stuffing up of the nostrils, so that the patient gets up suffocated.

The distinction between *Apis* and Bell has already been given. Yet I think a repetition will be useful. In *Apis* there is more nervous irritation, whereas in Bell, there is irritation more due to congestion. Both have drowsiness, but *Apis* has more rolling of the head over the pillow. Moreover, the sudden cephalic cry due to sharp pain in the meninges is absent in Bell. Then again, *Apis* is characteristically hot and so cannot keep the cover on and is positively aggravated by covering, whereas Bell is rather chilly and must have the covering. The colour of the swelling in Bell is red, whereas in *Apis* it is rather colourless. *Apis* swelling is œdematous, Bell swelling is not so,—of course, both have sensitiveness. Lastly, *Apis* is dry and has no sweat,—and if any, it

gives a relief to the patient, whereas Bell is full of perspiration, specially, in the covered portions, though sweat hardly brings in any relief.

Diphtheria,—This disease-symptom is very much deep and Bell is almost out of place. If there is any symptom pointing to Bell, it would be simply wasting of time, in case you depend upon it. But however, it may be indicated during the first or congestive stage, when a high grade of congestion, local throbbing pains, difficulty in deglutition, specially, of liquid substances, a bit ameliorated by swallowing warm things,—all these attended with high heat, are found. But once this stage is gone and discharge, or separation of membranes, commences, or as soon as ulceration comes in, Bell must have to be ruled out. The *nature* and *course* of Diphtheria are quite dissimilar with those of Bell. Moreover, blood-poisoning is never found in Bell. In any case, it may be needed in the very first or congestive stage of Diphtheria.

Up to this, I have dwelt upon all the details of the ultimated conditions that may appear in course of Bell fever. Whatever may be the disease symptom and whatever may be the name pathologically given,—if there is a *sudden onset, rapid course, violent nature, high grade of congestion, high fever, etc. etc.*, in that case Bell will be useful up to the onset of any tissue change or blood poisoning. If properly used according to the said totality the violence it may greatly mitigate, and many times abort the course. You should not conclude that in every case of Bell fever, these ultimates must appear. In cases of young children, you

will just wonder to see that Bell can abort the whole case in course of two or three hours. A child that was quite all right an hour before and took his bath and meals usually and perhaps had been to sleep. The mother is perhaps within the same room where the child is sleeping. After an hour or so, oh, what does she see? She finds that her dear child is getting regular convulsions along with the break-up of sleep. Forthwith she feels its body with her hands and finds that the child is running high fever. If the mother is intelligent enough and has any the least Homœopathic knowledge, she won't lose her head as ordinary mothers but will search for a dose of Bell 30 or 200 from her Homœopathic box and put two or three globules dry on its tongue. The result will be that in a course of a few minutes, the child will enter into a sweet sleep and will rise up almost normal. Of course, it may be that another dose of Bell will be needed or in a complementary way a dose of *Sulph* 30 or in case the child is of *Calc.* make, a dose of *Calc. carb* 30 will finish cure. But only in cases where the child or an adult patient has a combination of more than one miasm in the system, such an early cure cannot be expected. Several remedies may be needed and the complications, above referred to, may come in along with the course of fever.

Acute Dementia or Insanity,—The action of Bell in acute insanity is very nice. The *violent nature* of Bell is very important to remember, during acute manifestations. (During this time, only a small amount of food should be given to the patient, as on account of congestion in the brain, there is naturally a very small

amount of blood-flow in the stomach region, so that the patient is upset if a bigger amount of food is given him during this time.) During waking period the patient sees terrible figures, unnatural apparitions and runs about to strike them, to beat and bite them ; then, within a short time, he may fall into a stupid sleep but instantly startles up ; during sleep also, he dreams violent dreams and startles up every now and then ; sometimes he feels that he has himself been transformed into so many figures, e. g., lions, tigers, dogs, etc. The higher portions of his body remain characteristically warm or hot and the lower portions cold,—it is due to the congestion and the consequent flow of blood high up into the head. In *Bell* cases patients are generally hand-cuffed and bed-tied, so much violent are they. Otherwise, they may spring down through the windows, or may beat, bite or strike or do many violent things in relation to the family members or may destroy the valuables in the house. In any way, they must be constantly watched over, for, in extreme cases, the patient gets terrified and must escape and if any body stands in the way when he runs, he may violently strike him down. Any kind of sound upsets him and he cannot stand light. Much fear, attempt to escape, startling up, unequal distribution of heat as above referred to, reddened eyes and face and inability to stand sound, touch, etc., are its characteristics. *Bell* patients do not like company, rather avoid it. They want to remain alone and in darkness. Here *Stramo*, *Hyoscyamus* and *Opium* come in for comparison.

**Bell* patients are ameliorated by food and so it is

usual that even during active insanity, the family and the attendants try to feed, sometimes over feed the patients. But as a matter of fact, this practice is very much faulty and can never be recommended. Of course, it is found that a temporary respite can be given by feeding, but a permanent injury to the patient as a whole is often the result. Only easily digestible food-stuffs and those even, in small quantities, should be permitted ; you may ask the reason why. The reason is that promptings from the mind and nerve-centres are actually necessary for the proper functions that are performed by the human organs. That mind and nerve centres are out of order during the time and if they are over-taxed a reaction must ensue in the mind and nerve regions and will aggravate the case. Then again, you know, stomach is in direct *correspondence* with the intellect, and so both are *interrelated*. Under this circumstance, when the intellect is in disorder, stomach *must* be so. Hence the rule that easily digestible food-stuffs in smaller quantities, each time, should only be allowed. Just see the *rationale* of the rule. An insane patient is in actual Typhoid condition,—only the seat of the Typhoid symptoms is specially in the brain. As in ordinary Typhoid cases, brain of course, is involved only in a *sympathetic* way and sometimes the stomach, sometimes the chest and sometimes the intestines are *idiopathically* affected. You restrict the diets in ordinary Typhoid cases. Should you not do so in brain Typhoid cases too ? Because, all the same, as the whole being is affected, only some portion idiopathically and other portions sympathetically.

Comparison.—*Stramonium*, *Hyoscyamus* and *Opium* are to be compared. Before I commence comparison between the aforesaid remedies, I want to say one word only to my friends coming from the Allopathic School, who are in the habit of basing their prescriptions upon *Pathology and Pathological changes*. In cases of dementia, insanity, and any mental cases, where is the Pathology? Even long-continued insanity will not produce any the least tissue change or Pathological manifestations and if you are to base the prescription upon Pathology or tissue change, it will be a forlorn hope to treat these cases and a few others, which are *reluctant* to supply you with tissue change for your help, because it is not the intention of Nature to help you in that way. She gives you 'signs and symptoms' for your help and guidance and if you go astray, your patient would be the worst sufferer and your name as a Homoeopath must be a misnomer. The Master has kept clear instructions as to the points over which your prescription is to be based and no deviation ought to be made. A number of patients may have the *same* disease and even the *same* Pathology, yet in accordance with their *individual* symptoms and *individual* characteristics, altogether *different* remedies may be required for each.

The aforesaid remedies which have been taken into consideration for comparison are generally prescribed for dementia or insanity, but each according to the peculiar and individual characteristic of the patient in hand. Both in Bell and *Stramo* there is a congestion, but Bell congestion brings in an *inflammation* and *Stramo* disorders the *sensorium*.

Hyoscyamus has hardly any congestion but the nervous symptoms predominate in it. Regarding violence, *Bell* and *Stramo* stand on equal grounds, and even *Stramo* is sometimes more violent, though the predominance in sensorial matters is found in it. *Bell* congestion and inflammation are of the highest grade. *Stramo* has the peculiarity, that it manifests more violent delirium on seeing a bright object, though he likes light and company; *Bell* is just opposite, because, it avoids light and company. *Hyoscyamus*, of course, has sometimes an appearance of violence but the predominating feature is rather the opposite, and almost all the muscles of the body are found to twitch. Due to intense nervousness, *Hyoscyamus* is sleepless. *Belladonna* startles up just on entering into sleep though it is sleepy, but both *Bell* and *Stramo* wake up from sleep in a terrified condition. *Stramo* has many peculiar vision due to the disorder of its sensorium and even like *Baptisia* it imagines many things with regard to his own body. *Hyoscyamus* has also wrong sensorium but in a far lesser degree than *Stramo*. A *Hyoscyamus* patient fears and suspects that some body will poison him and so he hesitates to take the medicine given. He has a desire to escape, out of fear or suspicion. Regarding the disorder of consciousness, the order is *Bell*, *Stramo* and *Hyoscyamus* i. e., loss of consciousness is least in *Bell* and highest in *Hyoscyamus*. A *Stramo* patient wants to be naked only occasionally, whereas *Hyoscyamus* is characteristic with regard to the point. A *Bell* patient is rather terrible, *Hyoscyamus* is nervously restless and sometimes comatose and *Stramo* has a mixture

of all those with a peculiar merry-making propensity, —he will pinch you, will laugh at you and make lots of jestings and funs. Last of all *Opium* comes in. It has Bell-like congestion, redness of the face, and perspiration on the forehead. *Pathologically*, *Opium* stands on the same board with Bell, yet the characteristic difference lies in this that Bell violence is proportionate to the congestion and *Opium* is dull and has *want* of reaction and of consciousness just in proportion to the congestion. The other two remedies have hardly any relation with *Opium*. One word more, only Bell has amelioration from eating, whereas the other remedies have rather an aggravation.

If you consider the mental condition of Bell, you will find that the essential characteristic is *sensitive-ness with irritation*. Sometimes the patient appears to be altogether helpless,—so much violent and turbulent does he appear,—you may think that the poor patient is going to lose his life. Badly sensitive he really is. But there is one redeeming feature,—on the one hand he is upset by a slight touch or an ordinary sound, even on small movements so much sensitive is he, but after the administration of the remedy, the reaction follows at once. Even where the manifestations are so much violent that you will not stand to see or look over the patient, yet a single dose is found to cool down the patient instantly. But you should not expect such ready reaction in every case that is sensitive, because remedies like *Hep. sulph*, *Coffea*, *Chamo*, *Nitric acid*, *Ignatia*, *Nux. vom*, *Zinc*, *Cuprum met*, *Sulph* and a few others are

equally sensitive, yet except in a few of them reactions are delayed.

Headache,—Bell is frequently indicated in head pains. The head is felt to be very heavy and like *Arg. nit.* it appears that it is expanding. Moreover, the patient feels that he should bend his head back-wards and is actually relieved thereby, and if he is erect or bends his head forward, the headache aggravates. The pains are throbbing, hammering, cutting, etc, and on suddenly standing from a sitting posture all these pains are intensified, If he bends his head forward it appears to him that the contents of the head will burst out. During the headache, if the patient lies still, of course, the pain continues but if he sits up all on a sudden, or stands up all on a sudden, the pulsating pains highly aggravate but after some time, the original condition returns. Sudden touch or sudden pressure aggravates but slow and soft touch and pressure rather give relief. If you are to press, you must have to do by and by. Anything *sudden* must aggravate. Moreover, cold, cold air, cold winds, standing posture, sudden movements, etc., are aggravating circumstances. Let us come to comparison between Bell and a few other remedies.

Comparison,—The following remedies are taken for comparison, viz, *China*, *Lachesis*, *Hyoscyamus* and *Bry.* *China* gets the headache from cold winds but it has no congestion like Bell. The headache is rather of a nervous type. Of course, it is difficult to distinguish between the two at the first sight, because, both the remedies have, during their headache, hot head and the extremities cold. Bell has *neural-*

gic pains in the lower limbs but if it gets head-pains it must be congestive. *Bryonia* head-pains are aggravated from movement, and ameliorated from pressure, but the other modalities of Bell are not to be found in *Bry.* *Hyoscyamus* headpains are ameliorated from movement of the head and on bending it to the front so that it is exactly the opposite of Bell ; moreover, blood congestion is altogether absent in *Hyoscyamus*. *Lachesis* and Bell have congestion and sensitiveness to touch as well as an aggravation from a sudden rise from sitting or lying posture, so that it is sometimes very difficult to distinguish between the two. You know that both have an aggravation after sleep. But *Lachesis* feels the aggravation *during* and *after* the sleep but Bell has it decidedly *after* ; the throbbing pains of Bell are characteristic though *Lachesis* also has it of a fainter type. However, you can readily distinguish between the two if you note that Bell has the aggravation of pains on movement i, e., *immediately* after movement, whereas *Lachesis* has it *a few seconds after the cessation* of the movement. This distinctive feature is important to remember.

Boils, Carbuncles and Inflammatory processes,—

Bell has throat pains, tonsillitis, etc, with the throbbing pains, having amelioration from taking warm things and the patient feels as if something is lodged in the throat and there is a difficulty during deglutition. If Bell is given at this stage, the onward process is at once aborted and all chance of suppuration, ulceration etc., is averted. Similarly, if there is a boil or abscess anywhere over the body, the colour being red with sensitiveness to touch or even with fever, you

may use Bell with much benefit. You can abort the whole process. Soon after the administration of Bell, the fever begins to come down, the throbbing pains become less and less, though the swelling may remain in a painless condition for two or three days after which it is absorbed by the system by and by. But suppose, on account of Psoric taint in the system, Bell is unable to abort and the boil or abscess goes on towards suppuration. In that case you may think of *Hep. sulph*, *Calc*, *Lachesis*, *Tarantula cub*, *Ars*, *Anthracinum*, *Carbolic acid*, *Merc sol*, etc. Sometimes, the physicians are quite upset at this time and a proper guide should be given to them.

Before commencing with any of the other medicines as mentioned above, you must be quite sure that Bell fails in the case. You should neither hurry up nor unnecessarily delay in these cases. If you find that Bell actually does not give any benefit, in that case you must have to proceed to some of the other remedies. But always remember that the totality of symptoms is your only guide and no medicine should ever be given on the idea of or the name of *disease*. Suppose, the patient is fair, fat and plump, has more sweat on the body, specially on the head and forehead, so that the pillow gets wet during sleep, has acidity of the stomach and has sour stools and vomits, the patient being chilly, etc, then on this totality you can think of *Calc. carb*. I have seen in hundreds of cases that without considering the *local* symptoms at all and being guided by the *constitutional* totality, these cases are amply benefited and cured. Suppose, Bell fails you but the sensi-

tiveness to touch has rather increased. You should direct your attention to *Hep. sulph* and *Lachesis* and give one of them on the following totalities in each. *Hep. sulph* has intense sensitiveness to touch, relief from warmth and warm application and there may be throbbing pains or rather sharp pricking pains in the locality, the suppuration being imminent, because the affected spot is no longer red as during the Bell stage. But in case the red hue has turned more red or rather scarlet, intense sensitiveness to touch, inability to apply warmth and positive aggravation during and after sleep, in that case *Lachesis* is in place. *Tarantula* pains are absolutely intolerable. The patient gets no sleep during twenty-four hours and for the amelioration of the pains he has always to walk over. Soft smearing over the affected spot may give a timely relief, the colour may be deep scarlet or bluish, and reddish or bluish arteries are found round the affected spot. Upon this totality you should give *Tarantula cub* which is really highly soothing.

If there is *violent burning*, you should think of *Ars*, *Anthracinum* and *Carbolic acid*. *Ars* has a violent burning relieved by heat, intense restlessness, anxiety and fear of death,—all these being more mental than physical. Fever is generally associated with the inflammatory process. *Anthracinum* has the most atrocious and intolerable burning without any the least relief by any means whatever. *Carbolic acid* pains come and go suddenly like Bell, but has no extensive use in boils, carbuncles, etc ; but if its peculiar feature is present it can do good, viz, that

of dire *constipation* and *putrid smell* of all discharges and even in the breath.

In the treatment of boils, carbuncle and abscesses, special care should always be taken so that the whole process may be aborted at the very beginning. I would never advise the indicated remedy to be given in *lower* potencies, because the lower potencies generally tend towards suppuration. Here, in order to abort i. e. to cure at the very stage, potencies lower than 200 should not be given, at least never lower than 30th. Bell, if properly indicated should be used in 200th and *Hep. sulph* or *Lachesis*, if any of them comes in, should be given not lower than 200th. If it is seen that the process is not aborted, and rather, goes on to suppuration, even then 200th is the best potency to be used, for, if possible, it may abort and if not, it will help suppuration. But in case where you are sure that there is already a suppuration, then in order to evacuate the pus as early as possible, you may administer the indicated remedy, viz., *Hep. sulph* or *Merc. sol*, in 6th. or 12th. every 4 to 6 hours; you will see, 3 or 4 doses will suffice. It has generally been seen that boils, etc. burst towards the latter part of the night, because, I think, that is the time when the vital work is at its lowest.

People are generally under the idea that *aborting* of boils, etc. at the very first stage, is tantamount to *suppression*. But they should be clearly taught the principle that the indicated remedy in the potentised form and selected under the Law of Similars can *never suppress* but must *always cure*. The reason is that the Homœopathic remedy thus selected must act

from in to out, whereas any un-Homœopathic remedy must act just the opposite way i. e., from out to in and the result is *suppression*. Aborting means *curing at the very stage*, so that they should be given to understand that there is a wide gap between *aborting* with the help of the indicated Homœopathic remedy and *suppressing* with the help of some external un-Homœopathic drug.

***Warning**,—Let me put in a word of warning here, with regard to the use of *Mercurius* and *Silica* in these cases. When you wish to burst a boil or an abscess, never give *Mercurius*, because it may confuse the case,—it will neither abort nor burst but will bring in a condition of non-action. *Mercurius* has its use when a boil or an abscess has already burst and you want to evacuate the pus and cure it. Both *Merc.* and *Silica* are used for the purpose but they are inimical. Hence, you should clearly see to the symptom-totality when you use one or the other. *Merc.* is used in acute and recent cases, its pus is thick, there is an offensive smell in the mouth of the patient with thick and coated tongue. *Silica* has the long and protracted cases and the pus is thin but it goes on however scanty. In *Silica* cases, you generally suspect a *sinus*,—thin pus, discharge continuing and scanty in quantity. There may be a fetid smell in the pus. In *Silica* you should look to the patient's condition,—chilly, sweaty head, obstinate nature, etc. etc. Then again, if at a particular stage you want to use *Silica* but you have already used *Merc.* in that case you are to interpolate a dose or two of *Hepar. sulph* before you administer *Silica*.

Colic,—You know that Bell is not so deep acting, yet I tell you that I have cured a case of severe colic of thirteen years standing (I am going to give you the Case Report). In case of Bell colic, look to the main characteristic of Bell pains, viz, they suddenly come on and after some time, they suddenly go away. Moreover, there is much sensitiveness in the locality, so that you cannot touch the spot. Of course, the patient wants warm fomentations, but take care that you do not press over the spot when fomenting. The patient is sleepy but as soon as he goes into sleep, he has to startle up due to the pains appearing at the time. Lastly, the pains generally aggravate after mid-day or mid-night and often after meals.

Case Report,—Sj. Bimal Chandra Ghose, aged 24 or 25, well-made and of robust constitution, was one of the then employees under Messrs Shah & Co. at Dhanbad. He was the tutor of my youngest son at the time. Since his eleventh or twelfth year of age, he had, off and on, been suffering from colic pains, at an interval of five or seven to ten or twelve days. Intense sensitiveness below the stomach so that he could not touch the spot. It was a peculiar case, for the pains used to come and go suddenly but a particular fit of the pains so coming and going, used to last two or three days and he had to be much reduced during the time. I could not get any the least hint regarding the patient's individuality or his constitutional symptoms. The only thing I got that the patient was chilly and he was quite well in all other respects. Under these circumstances, I had to proceed on the very insufficient data of local symp-

toms only. However, I gave 200th but it produced no benefit. Then I used 1000th potency in two consecutive doses. The patient was quite well for two months but the pains re-appeared in exactly the same form after the period, when I gave him 10M, a single dose. Four months afterwards he had a slight pain for a few hours only, but I gave him no medicine and nothing was to be given afterwards. He was free from the pains during the three years he was there. 1918, 3rd January.

* It may be asked how the patient was cured by the use of Bell, it being a non-anti-psoric but the patient's disease was distinctly of a chronic type? In reply, it is to be said that the colic only, as a *local* symptom, was cured and could only be expected to be cured. But the real tree of disease could not be eradicated because there was no *constitutional* totality. Due to the absolute want of the patient's individuality, the patient as a whole could not be touched, but only the local manifested symptom would be, and actually was, removed.

Breathing Organs,—Bell. has a few symptoms and conditions in relation to the breathing organs. You know Bell is a chilly remedy and is susceptible to cold. On a cold exposure, it has soreness in the throat, congestion in the part, hoarseness, difficulty in deglutition and relief from warm things. The most characteristic symptom of the remedy in this sphere is the sense of dryness,—the patient feeling dry at the spot and the coughing that ensues is also dry. There is also an itching sensation. *Lachesis* has also a dry cough and both have susceptibility to

cold, aggravation on lying, the only difference being that *Lachesis* has a characteristic aggravation during and after sleep, which Bell has in a less characteristic way. *Hyoscyamus* has also dry cough having the characteristic aggravation on lying.

*In these days of so-called civilization people are reluctant to have their disease symptoms properly manifested. It is found that the people having the susceptibility to cold and coryza are inclined to smell something at the very on-set of coryza with the view of *stopping* the nasal flow. Some are found to smear hot oil and foment over the palms and soles before lying down for night,—the purpose is only to suppress the manifestation. The result is suppression and upsetting of the Influx. In these cases there are various remedies in our Materia Medica, any of which, according to the totality of symptoms, may give speedy relief without suppressing the condition but instead of that if those *suppressive* measures are applied on un-Homœopathic basis, the result is sometimes very serious, specially in those cases where there is a Tubercular diathesis. The principle is that you should always *cure* on the totality of symptoms but never *suppress*. I am going to give you a case report.

Case Report,—Sj. Shyam Lal Roy, an employee in the B. N. Ry, an inhabitant of Faridpore, aged 33 or 34, came to me for his treatment in 1921 when I was at Dhanbad. Various Doctors declared that he had T. B. One Phthisis Specialist in Calcutta had given him 10 or 12 Calcium injections. After that he had been to our illustrious Dr. Younan, with indifferent

results. Moreover, it was much inconvenient for the patient to go over to the Doctor every time. I give below the symptoms and conditions as given by him.

“In 1913, I worked in Kidderpore and I used to live in Howrah. I had to daily go to my Office by Tram Car. I had a peculiar susceptibility to cold so that after every ten or twelve days I got acute coryza, —with burning in the throat and palate, itching and soreness over there and I had to suffer for two or three days being confined in bed, with restricted diet and bath, sleeplessness, etc. I presented myself to our Chief Medical Officer who advised Cod-liver oil and Grimault Syrup which I used for six or seven months but to no good. In the meantime, one of my office friends advised me to smell Eucalyptus oil from a handkerchief, so that the coryza would be instantly avoided. I practised that method for a few times and took a fancy to it, because I found it a veritable *ureka*. By and by I found that though the coryza was stopped, yet there was a malaise and an uneasiness within myself. After a lapse of five or six months I began to feel a slow evening fever and I got terrified. I had again been to the Chief Medical Officer. He examined me and said,—‘Babu, there is a hard fight coming on,—T. B. is impending, though at present there is no matter in you.’ At last he advised me to go to a T. B. Specialist in Calcutta, and he recommended six months’ leave for me. I took several injections during the treatment of that Specialist, but I derived no benefit at all. It is he that advised me to come to you. I already told you that I had been to Dr. Younan, etc.”

"I cannot say whether I am a chilly or a hot man, because though I feel chilly yet I am also full of sweats. In no case I can keep myself at rest in a particular place. Moreover, I must have to frequently eat; vacant stomach must upset me and aggravate all my troubles. Now-a-days the fever runs up to 100° and after much sweating in the night I find towards the dawn that the fever is off. The fever heat comes suddenly, e, g, it is 97° at 5 P. M. and after 15 or 20 minutes, it rises to 99.5° or 100° . I have a dry cough which aggravates on lying."

Upon the above symptoms though Bell was clearly indicated, but as several physicians declared that it was a case of T. B., and as a matter of fact it was so, I had a great hesitation before administering Bell, because it is a superficial, quick-acting remedy. However, to my utter surprise it was found that the suppressed symptoms of cold and coryza came back after its administration in 1000th potency. The fever came down, the troublesome coughing was no more there and the relief was so clear that I must have to say that such a wonderful work from Bell had never been observed by me before. The patient came up to me and said,—“Dear sir, I have clearly realised what the matter was, but in any case I expect that under your auspices I shall be fully cured or else I shall not stir from you.”

It would be a long tale to describe the full course of treatment that cured the patient and it is not necessary here because I want only to show how much injury can be done by *suppressions*. However, I had to use *Ars. iod.* from 1000th to 10 M. and

Tuberculinum bov. 50 M., a single dose. Full one year was required for a complete cure.

Pleurisy and Pneumonia,—You know what a Pleurisy is,—Pleurisy is an inflammation of Pleura, the covering portion of lungs, and Pneumonia is the inflammation of the lungs themselves. Bell is often required in the treatment of these two disease symptoms. Bell Pleurisy and Bell Pneumonia generally appear in the right side. Be it Pleurisy or Pneumonia, Bell must have its own totality, viz, red face, throbbing pulse, high heat, dry cough, sudden attack and cold exposure, etc. The peculiarity of Bell case is that there must be a sensitiveness in the affected side and the patient is unable to lie to that side. So much sensitiveness is there that a sudden jerk upon the bed would make the patient startle up, specially if the jerk or push be without his knowledge. The patient cannot tolerate light or company. *Bry* has also right-sided attack and has a clear aggravation from movement, but the difference is that *Bry* is relieved from pressure and and so it must lie to that side. Moreover, Bell has *sensitiveness* and *throbbing* pains, *Bry* has *stitching* pains. You should also know the *Apis* symptoms in this connection, because *Apis* has also both the disease symptoms, viz, Pleurisy and Pneumonia and they are also likely to be expressed in the right side. It has also stitching pains like *Bry* and sensitiveness like Bell, so it cannot lie to the affected side. But *Apis* has a characteristic burning. Moreover, *Apis* is dry, Bell and *Bry* are sweaty, though Bell has the sweat in covered portions and has no relief from it

but *Bry* has a distinct relief from perspiration. Lastly, Bell is chilly and *Bry*, though it wants warmth locally, yet, as a patient, has desire for cold but *Apis* always wants cold and open air and cannot tolerate covering or warm room.

Acute Rheumatism.—Bell has it and if it is used upon its totality, it improves within even a day. But one word should be remembered that Chronic Rheumatism, Gout, Arthritis, Ataxia, etc, come from Sycosis and so Bell has no efficacy there. It can only be indicated in *acute* cases of Rheumatism which appears from time to time as a result of cold exposure and Bell can give only *a timely* relief but can never do any good regarding the *tendency* of the patient to be so attacked, time and often,—because Bell has no such depth of action. However, you should remember the Bell group of symptoms, which are,—high fever heat, red hue of the affected spot, intense soreness and sensitiveness to touch, relief from warmth and aggravation from cold and movement. The patient cannot tolerate light, sound or any push or jerk; he is even upset if anybody enters the room where he lies. *Arnica* has also sensitiveness but it has no congestion like Bell, and in place of throbbing pains, *Arnica* has *bruised* pains, though it has also a terror of touch. *Rhus tox* complements *Arnica*, when the uneasy feeling due to the bed being too hard turns into a restlessness. *Calc. carb* complements Bell, but in the case of acute rheumatism *Rhus tox* is more often indicated after Bell. In the acute condition, Bell is aggravated from movement, and by and by

the patient gets restlessness when *Rhus tox* comes in.

Abdomen and Urinary Organs,—Bell has no characteristic diarrhœa, though it is sometimes indicated in dysentery if the Bell totality is there. Whether it is a loose diarrhœa or a dysentery, if there are scanty stools with much tenesmus, red hue of the face, extremities cold and upper part of the body rather hot,—with or without attending fever, Bell may be given. In Piles also, there is tenesmus with scanty bleeding and the parts are so sensitive that the patient has to walk with legs wide apart. In the kidneys also, there is sensitiveness with congestion, repeated urgency to urinate, scanty urination, tenesmus, etc. In every case, Bell characteristics must be there.

Female Organs,—A few words should be remembered in this connection. Profuse bleeding during menses with clots, and the discharge is rather hot. Then the parts are extremely sensitive, so that there is an aggravation from touch, movement, jerk, etc. Lastly, during the discharge, the patient feels that all her parts would come down. You may compare *Sabina* with Bell, because *Sabina* has profuse discharge, clotted blood, bearing down pains, aggravation from movement, etc. but *Sabina* has no local congestion or sensitiveness. Moreover, *Sabina* has a pain running from the small of the back round to the abdomen. Then, the aggravation from movement is highly characteristic in *Sabina*. In Bell it is less so. *Borax* has also bearing down pains and clots of white

Leucorrhœa, but it has a predominance of nervous symptoms.

Eye disease,—As a result of exposure to cold winds, the eyes are congested, get a swelling all round, turn reddish and aching pains are found, but there must be sensitiveness, specially, to light. Eye cases of Bell are generally associated with head-pains. There is an aggravation from cold and movement, and a relief from warmth and from being in a dark room.

Ear disease,—There are throbbing pains, soreness and sensitiveness associated with congestion in the ears. Patients cannot lie to the side affected. As usual, there is a relief from warmth and aggravation from touch, movement and cold. When discharges commence, Bell is generally out of place and you should think of *Merc* or *Hepar* according to the individual totality. There are other remedies which have ear affection, viz, *Chamo*, *Puls*, *Borax*, etc. There is a high grade of irritation like Bell in *Chamo*, but Bell has an aggravation from motion, whereas the *Chamo* child rather wants movement. *Puls* is tearful and though it has almost all the symptoms of Bell, yet, you know, *Puls* wants free air, cold application and slow movements. *Borax* child has decided aggravation from downward motion and sound.

Modalities,—I have already given you the modalities of the remedy. Bell has a decided aggravation from sun-heat and after sleep, so that, confusion may sometimes arise whether a case is Bell or *Lachesis*. But the characteristic difference and the modalities of the remedies will decide and which need not

be repeated because they have already been given in details.

Potency,—3, 6, 30, 200 and 1000 are in daily use.

BENZOIC ACID.

Anti-Psoric,
Anti-Sycotic
and
Anti-Syphilitic. }

Benzoic acid is a deep-acting remedy and specially applicable to the rheumatic patients. The Sycotic symptoms being predominant in the patient, its special sphere is found amongst the rheumatic and gouty patients. You know the difference between the rheumatism and the gout,—both are manifestations of the Sycotic miasm, the difference being that in gout, Sycosis combines with Psora and there is swelling in the joints with sensitiveness, and the condition is that the uric acid is not passed, as usual, with urine but is absorbed in the blood. In ordinary rheumatism, Sycosis is of course there, but in gout both the miasms combine making the condition badly obstinate.

The chief characteristic of Benzoic acid is that the urine smells highly pungent. Of course, in the natural urine there is a smell, a bit pungent, but that is hundred times intensified in Benzoic acid. This is very important. There is yet another condition in Benzoic acid which is alternation of its symptoms and the travelling nature of its disease. A particular disease symptom may be manifested in some organ or a portion of the body, and after sometime,—a few

days or a few months, another disease-symptom of altogether a different name appears in some other organs or portions of the body ; and so, when the physician attempts to treat the patient, he will necessarily be under an impression that the patient would need a different remedy each time. Of course, in this way each disease-symptom is treated and cured for the time being, but the whole patient is not at all benefited, unless the unifying thread is not found out and the patient is treated as a whole. Then again, a particular disease symptom may travel on from one portion to another under the same name and the same modalities. In Benzoic acid, the rheumatic symptom may travel on in this way as in *Kali bi*, *Puls.* etc.

* Under Allopathic system of treatment the disease results, viz., urine, feces, sputum, etc. are examined and a conclusion regarding the treatment of the patient is arrived at on that basis. You know that the *results* of the diseases are there because of the disease or vital disorder, so that unless and until that *disorder* is cured by the help of a remedy selected on the totality of symptoms of the individual patient, he cannot be cured, and necessarily the disease results cannot be removed. Benzoic acid having had a peculiarity of its own can very well play a hide and seek with the physician. The peculiarity is that in the Benzoic acid patients, when there is a good deal of suffering from the rheumatic condition, the urine is quite natural and so the specific gravity is also just usual. The physician finds nothing abnormal there and so he is at a loss to make any conclu-

sion from the examination of urine, but when the rheumatic symptoms are off and the patient is apparently quite healthy, on come the disorders in the urine. Be that as it may, you should remember the peculiarity of this wonderful remedy, so that you may use it properly. Just see the uselessness of the examination of the disease results.

The patient is chilly, weak and exhausted. Almost all the acid remedies are chilly except *Picric acid* but each and every one of them is weak and exhausted. In Benzoic acid, the patient is generally exhausted along with rheumatic pains which generally attack the joints from an exposure to damp cold or when the clouds are there and the external air commences to be damp and cold, but the peculiarity, as I have already told you, is that when the rheumatic pains are on, the urine is natural but as soon as they are off, the urine is full of casts and has the acute pungent smell. *Nitric acid* also has this type of urine but *Nitric acid* patient has hardly any rheumatic pains. Moreover, the urine appears very cold when it comes out. Lastly, *Nitric acid* has a peculiar tendency to ulcerate which Benzoic acid has not.

After the appearance and frequent manifestation of its rheumatic pains in the joints, nodes commence to develop which are, as a matter of fact, so many deposits or ultimates. Of course, they will give you no help for a prescription, for they are the *results* of the disease.

Metastasis,—You know what a metastasis is. I have described it in full in my lecture on *Abrotanum*.

Metastasis means a change, either of a particular disease to another disease, or a change of its manifestation from one organ or part to another organ or part. In Benzoic acid, a metastasis may occur from his rheumatic pains to some disorders in his heart, as a result of external application or some unhomœopathic treatment. Patient suddenly wakes up from his sleep on account of sudden difficulty of breathing, and cannot go to sleep again and there are violent beatings of the heart. In that case, unless and until the previous rheumatic pains are re-established, there is no relief in the patient. By and by, the heart gets more and more disorganised and if there is much delay in re-establishing the suppressed ailments, the heart, as an organ, may be enlarged and hypertrophied, when there will hardly be any chance of cure. After such a suppressed method of treatment applied to the rheumatic pains, and if it is a Benzoic acid case, you should remember the following picture viz,—profuse sweat, somnolence, difficulty of breathing, violent palpitation owing to which the patient cannot get to sleep, and if he gets, he must have to wake up all on a sudden and cannot go to sleep again. Now, on Benzoic acid being given to such a patient, you will find that he will commence to urinate lots of time and his urine will continue to evacuate various things which had so long been morbidly absorbed by his blood. The result will be the cure of the patient and the previous pains will come back.

Moreover, the Benzoic acid patient may have ulcerations in the mouth, a diarrhœa with offensive stools, frequent vomitings, etc., as a metastasis due to

suppression, and as soon as you administer Benzoic acid or any deep medicine to meet the case, the suppressed pains will *reappear* and the patient will be fully cured. In all these cases, you are only to see to the quantity of urine (which becomes scanty after the suppression) and its horrible smell, so that you may suspect a suppression and select the remedy. Here, I intend to give a case-report of a boy patient.

Case Report,—Sreeman Jeebananda Roy, age 3 to 4, was the only son of the father at the time as he had lost two sons and one daughter before this. Anyhow the father was under an impression that he had lost his children simply due to bad treatment and had they been homœopathically treated, they might have certainly been saved and this impression was confirmed after the cure of Jeebananda. The father had no dearth of money and so he did all that he should have done regarding the treatment of Jeebananda. The child never slept a restful sleep, always restless from one portion of the bed to another and he must involuntarily urinate in the bed and nothing could stop this habit. Moreover, the urine was of such a vehemently pungent smell that the good mother could not, with all her efforts remove the filthy smell from off the beddings. At present Jeebananda was badly suffering from diarrhoea and that being exactly the disease, of which, and the age in which, both his brothers died, the parents were so much anxious as to select nothing but Homœopathy as the mode of treatment. He brought the child to me and requested me to do the needful so that this child might have been saved.

The patient had frequent vomitings and a constant nausea along with an offensive diarrhoea with lots of evacuations which were also offensive. This thing was continuing for more than two months, yet the patient did not look pulled down or exhausted. The boy was much irritable, obstinate and rather of a grave nature. Moreover, he had ulcerations in the mouth and in the anus. There was a good deal of offense, as I have already told you, in the urine and in the stool.

I enquired about the heredity but got almost nothing. Father was a man of godly nature, the mother was also so and it was rather a problem to ascertain how this type of disease-symptom could be there in the son. Father was rather rheumatic, but for that he never took to bed. I thought of *Nitric acid*, but upon a deeper study, I could find no fair picture of the medicine in my patient. *Nitric acid* has an intolerable pain after evacuation, in the anal region, which my patient had not. Then Benzoic acid was thought of and it was given in 200th potency. After the diarrhoeic symptoms were off, it was given in 1000th in a few doses. After this the habit of urination in bed and offensive smell in the urine, frequent diarrhoea, all went off and the patient was fully cured.

You will see that the influence of all the three miasms is to be found in this remedy.

Modalities,—Cold air and cold are aggravating and warmth relieves the patient as a whole and his pains.

Potency,—From the 6th to 1000th. Of course, though not much familiar with its higher potencies, there is no reason why they will not be useful.

BERBERIS.

Mainly }
Anti-Sycotic. }

The *central* action of this remedy is in the kidneys and bladder and perhaps it also acts *sympathetically* in the liver as well. You know, if there are heart symptoms of *Digitalis*, it may be used in various disease symptoms. So Berberis can also be indicated in several disorders of the human body, in case its symptoms of kidneys are there. You know what is meant by "affinity". If a particular remedy has its central action in a particular organ we say that the remedy has the affinity to that organ, as Berberis has it for the urinary organs, *Digitalis* for the heart, *Nat. carb* and *Ipec* for the digestive organs, *Zincum met* for the nerve centres and so on and so forth. Those remedies have their *central* action upon those organs, and it appears as if some other organs are affected *sympathetically*, at least the central action is idiopathic or primary and the action upon other organs is sympathetic or secondary. Whenever you study a remedy, always look to its central action.

Berberis has a pain in the small of the back along with pains, soreness and intense sensitiveness in the kidney regions,—and perhaps this is the main feature of Berberis. During urination, pains are felt in the abdomen and thighs. Pains are stitching, cutting and specially the pains run from the left kidney through the ureter to the bladder. Though there are, in most cases, pains in the left kidney, still both the kidneys are sometimes affected. Moreover, there is a peculiar sensation in the kidney regions, viz, that of bubbling. The patient feels as if there are bubbles

rising from the region. These pains aggravate from movement and as soon as pains are felt running to the bladder as spoken of before, there must be the desire for urination and this desire may be very frequent. During the urination the pains are also there. The urine itself is greenish, sometimes bloody but thick and sticky. It may be also like jelly. You should remember that this bubbling sensation is also found in *Medorrhin*.

If the characteristic conditions, as given above, are there, the rheumatic patients are cured by this remedy. In those patients, the lower limbs from the small of the back downwards are specially affected and the patient feels heaviness, stitching pains, sense of contraction and almost disability to walk, so that he has to constantly stop and sit down, after which he can again walk. Lumbago starts from the small of the back and runs to the feet, with soreness, sensitiveness and stitching and benumbing pains in the parts.

Bilious Colic.—The pains are of the same nature as stated above, and after some time, symptoms of jaundice come in,—yellowness of the eyes and of the outer skin, and gradually the patient sees everything as if coloured yellow. During this time, the stools are white, almost bileless. *Merc sol*, *Phosphorus* and *Lyc* may also be indicated in this condition, of course, if the individual totality is there. The *Berberis* totality has already been given. Only *Merc sol* has the urination with intense tenesmus, which the other remedies have not. In *Berberis* there is another pain which starts from gall bladder and runs towards the

left shoulder region. There is also intense sensitiveness in the parts.

Piles and Fistula,—Berberis has a very nice action upon the anal diseases, viz, Piles, Fistula, etc. It has all the symptoms and pains like itching, burning and cutting, specially felt after the evacuations, as in *Nitric acid*, but the *Nitric acid* patient must have syphilitic and mercurial taints in his system, and the discharges very much excoriating, so that even the corners of the mouth get cracked and ulcerated. But Berberis has no such syphilitic and mercurial taints as in *Nitric acid*. I am going to give in a case illustrating the action of Berberis in *fistula in ano*. Repeated inflammations come in the anal region and suppuration occurs either within or without and after a few days the pus-pocket is stopped or closed,—this sort of thing appears repeatedly, so that a permanent sinus is formed there from which a perennial flow of pus continues,—in some cases living microbes or worms are found to be generated in the spot. The physicians belonging to the Old School strongly advise their patients for operation. In a few cases, operation closes up the flow and in other cases it cannot. Those cases that are not benefited must be very fortunate, because fistula generally comes in as a manifestation previous to the Tubercular and those patients who are benefited by operation must have to pay the penalty of getting Tubercular manifestations either in the chest or in the brain or in the intestines, according to the susceptibility of the patient. You know a chain is torn at the weakest link. So the Tubercular manifestation

must appear at the weakest spot of the system. However, *Berberis*, *Calc. phos.*, *Silicea*, *Tuberculinum bovinum* are the remedies that may be required after this sort of suppression. I have seen cases ending in lung-Phthisis and death in a few cases as an effect of this sort of so-called treatment. I shall come to comparison later on.

* The systems in which a continual flow of pus sets in either from a sinus or a *fistula in ano* are, as a matter of fact, in a most deplorable condition, in as much as they cannot stop the discharge and cure the ulceration. Under this condition the Allopathic physicians and surgeons are under an impression that if the ulcerated spots are duly operated upon, the patient will be all right but they do not see to the reason behind. Healthy systems have the ability to naturally cure the ulcerations. Those surgeons *suppress* the flow and think that their patients are cured, whereas we *cure* the patient as a patient and so the ulcerations are *necessarily* cured. The disease force is driven inward and the influx is arrested on account of the suppressive treatment and the result is that the patient must develop morbid symptoms in some other sphere of the body according to the susceptibility of the individual patient lying dormant in him. You should remember the fact that those that have a tendency to Tuberculosis have the fistula as a protection, and if the fistula is suppressed, a sure chance is there that the patient takes a death-ward course by virtue of the manifestation of the Tuberculosis of the active form. But the pity is that in these cases people run after operation as a curative method.

After the operation and suppression of the *fistula in ano*, lots of people develop Tuberculosis of the lungs and can be met with the few remedies above referred to. Of course, there may be a few others but the three or four which have been mentioned above, are mostly indicated. They are Berberis, *Calc. phos*, *Silicea* and *Tuberculinum bovinum*. A Berberis patient has the eccentricity of developing the kidney and bladder symptoms as above referred to. Moreover, the urinary symptoms must be there. In Berberis patients, if there is a suppression of fistula and anal diseases, the chest must be affected with a dry cough and slow fever. *Calc. phos* generally comes in before *Silicea*. I tell you that *Silicea* Tuberculosis is very hard to be cured, though only a timely relief may be expected. The individual symptoms of these two deep-acting remedies must have to be sought for. In *Silicea* cases, offensive pus is actually expectorated. Both the remedies are extremely chilly and *Calc. phos* is more affected by dry cold. All the remedies are aggravated from movement. Berberis has a dry cough, whereas *Silicea* cough is easy, moist and expectorating offensive pus, as I have already told you. It is *Calc. phos* only which is aggravated on thinking of its disease.

Mind.—Berberis mind is depressed and indifferent. It is full of fears. Its nature is weeping. The patient cannot remain alone or in the dark.

The mind of the Berberis patient remains confined to his pains on the small of the back because even a slight jerk or a soft push violently upsets him. That is the reason why a Berberis patient is always very

careful when stepping into a carriage or descending from it; careful stepping during a walk is also necessary, so you are to remember the soreness and sensitiveness in the small of the back of a Berberis patient as you should remember the peculiar stench in the urine of *Benzoic acid*. There are rheumatic pains in both the remedies, which, when suppressed, may bring in heart disorders.

Female organs,—I would like to give in a case from which you will be able to understand the condition of our females who are so unfortunate as to be the patients of this remedy.

Case Report,—Sreemati.....Roy, aged 16 or 17 turned highly depressed and perfectly indifferent ever since her marriage. The reason was not known to any body except her husband who by and by broke his mind to his mother. The fact was that she would not lie in the same bed with her husband who tried his utmost to persuade her, but to no effect. She would lie four or five cubits off his bed even on the floor but would not touch his bed. The husband observed that she would soil her clothes almost every night by involuntary urination during sleep. By and by the husband, though very much loving and highly educated, was unable to tolerate. The good mother i.e., the patient's mother-in-law tried her utmost by worship and prayer but was unsuccessful. In these cases many are under the impression that the involuntary urination or the persistent refusal to lie in the husband's bed are wilful and in this case too the poor girl was made the scape-goat. However, I was informed of all this by the husband. It was

found that she had the habit of involuntary urination from the childhood. On further enquiry, I came to know that the father of the girl suffered from Gonorrhœa long before her birth. During voluntary urination she felt some pains but not during the involuntary act during sleep. The mouth corners were cracked and she was chilly and I first prescribed *Nitric acid* which was given in 200th and 1000th potency but to no effect. After this I administered *Medorrhin* 1000, which stopped only the involuntary urination during sleep but the main ailment was not in the least improved. At last, I thought of *Berberis* and a few doses of 200th started the curative process and 1000th finished the cure. I could select *Berberis* having been informed of the local soreness of the parts. After the cure, she had children.

There are many cases of this type in our society where the females are unwilling to go to their husbands and this unwillingness is generally explained as pure and simple naughtiness of the wives.

Potency,—6, 30, 200, and 1000. Higher Potencies are also beneficial.

BISMUTH.

Bismuth is an *acute* medicine and its mental symptoms are manifested only in *acute* diseases. It is used only in cases of acute nature and never in chronic diseases.

Its action is generally found in the digestive

organs where an intense irritation with the catarrhal inflammation sets in. The mental symptoms are,—the patient must have a company and cannot remain alone; full of anxiety and restlessness and so he sometimes lies down, sometimes sits up, sometimes walks along, finding no relief in whatever position he takes up.

It is very often indicated in cases of Cholera and Infantile cholera. The tongue is thick, very thick and clayey with much thirst for a great quantity of water each time which the patient immediately vomits up but he can retain the food-stuffs for some time more. It is remarkable that the liquid substances are immediately ejected but the solid ones are somehow retained for hours. Apart from this, tympany, a sense of fullness and burning with a violent nausea are there. Cold drinks are much relieving though they cannot be retained. There are offensive eructations too and stools are also of similar nature. There is hardly any power of digestion. Nausea predominates and every discharge is very much exhausting.

A few comparisons are to be introduced. In *Antim. crude* all the symptoms, viz, the condition of the tongue, sense of fullness, tympany, etc. are all there, but *Antim.* has no thirst and in place of anxiety and restlessness of Bismuth, *Antim* has somnolence. *Phosphorus* has a great desire for cold drinks but they are not immediately ejected as in Bismuth, but only after they get warmed up in the stomach. Moreover, *Phos* has a goneness or an emptiness in the stomach instead of fullness of Bismuth.

There is hardly any chance of confusion with *Ars* because though there are a few symptoms common between them, *Ars* has a peculiar type of thirst for a small quantity of water each time. Moreover, Bismuth has a *desire* for cold drinks but *Ars* has no taste for it. *Ipecac* is thirstless and has a clean tongue, and mentally *Ipec.* is a bit depressed but it has never the anxiety and restlessness of Bismuth. A confusion is possible with regard to *Verat alb*, because there are many symptoms common between them, yet though both are highly exhausted, *Verat alb* is characteristically cold, in and out, whereas Bismuth is hot.

Gastralgia,—In a particular case of Gastralgia though Bismuth was selected according to the totality of symptoms, yet it could not give anything more than a timely relief, but could not cure. After sometime *Phosphorus* was administered and the case was permanently cured with 10M. The reason is that Bismuth has no depth.

Gum-pains,—It has also gum-pains which are relieved by keeping cold water in the mouth. There are many remedies which have the similar modality and they are *Coffea*, *Chamomilla*, *Bryonia*, *Puls*, *Causticum*, *Sepia*, *Natrum sulph*, etc. Of course, the symptom totality in each will decide the selection.

Potency,—30 and 200 and still lower potencies may also be needful.

BORAX VENETA.

Anti-Psoric }
 &
 Anti-Sycotic }

Borax has its central action upon the nervous sphere and it brings an unnatural irritation on the covering portions of the intestines and the stomach and generally manifests the following symptoms, viz, vomiting, diarrhœa, salivation, ulcerations in the mouth, etc. But with all these there must be *nervous* symptoms, otherwise Borax is out of place. The main symptom of nervous character is that the patient gets terrified in the *downward* motion. There is much fear, specially from sounds, more specially when they are sudden; fear, anxiety and startlings up are its features and they indicate the nervous weakness of the patient. Any disease condition in which the above nervous symptoms are not present, this remedy can not be expected to produce benefit. It has been found that the remedy is more indicated in children's cases.

Borax Child,—The Borax child is a nervous patient and this nervousness is mainly manifested as I have already said, in downward motion and in sudden sound. The child does not get terrified on any amount of movements on the plain ground but during downward motion. Suppose, somebody goes down the stairs with the child on the lap or on the breast, it manifests fear, startles up and weeps. When mother attempts to put the child on the bed from her lap, that very small amount of motion from her lap to the bed will upset the child and will make it stiffened, so that the mother understands that the

child has got so much terrified. The main point to be borne in mind is the *downward motion*. One may ask the reason of such a fear in the child. The immediate reason is the cerebral anæmia but the true cause is the abnormal weakness of the nerves. The Borax child cannot be caressed or fondled in such a way that there may be a down-ward motion as the mother or the dear relations of the child are fond of doing. It is dangerous for the Borax or *Gels* children. The second item is not only the sound but it must be *sudden*. Suppose the child is on the mother's lap, when the mother may get a sneeze which will invariably make the child startling up but the second or third sneezes will not do so. A gun-shot sound from a distance will do so,—the first sound is only objectionable but the successive ones are not so.

The above constitutional symptoms, if present, the child will get benefit and be cured of any disease symptom, as I have already mentioned. I have seen adult cases of deeper nature, viz., Rheumatism, menstrual disorders, *Cancrum oris*, even mental aberrations are much benefitted and in most cases cured, if the above constitutional peculiarities are found in the patient.

Borax is a type of salt and is on the same plane with *Natrums*, specially *Natrum mur* and *Natrum carb* which have also the same type of mentals ; but it is to be remembered that only the *murate* is hot and the others are chilly.

Apthæ.—There are ulcerations and apthæ, specially in the children ; in the lips, in the cheeks, in the

tongue there are fissures and ulcerations with intense sensitiveness, and they bleed even on touch of food articles; the babies would not suck and they leave the breasts as soon as they attempt to suck them. The mouth cavity turns up hot and dry, and the children have a good deal of thirst also. During dentition Borax children get salivation. It is also remarkable that as an attendant symptom of apthæ, the children have generally an offensive diarrrhœa; their growth becomes stunted and they commence to emaciate.

The following remedies are to be compared with Borax, viz, *Mercurius*, *Bry*, *Sulphuric acid*, and *Arsenicum album*. Borax tongue and mouth cavity are remarkably dry, but in a *Merc.* case the child has salivation and offensive mouth; the tongue is coated and there must be tenesmus during stool. In *Bryonia* cases, the tongue is equally dry and so the child would not suck but if the mother can wet its mouth by pressing her breast, it can happily go on sucking. *Bry* children do not like movement. *Sulphuric acid* has sour vomiting, intense weakness and salivation. The *Sulphuric acid* child gets apthæ after having suffered from some long continued disease but never as an acute condition. It is a notable fact that *Sulphuric acid* children much like *Hepar sulph* ones must have a sour smell, however they are washed. *Nitric acid* has much sensitiveness, salivation, stitching and pricking pains and bleeding even on a soft touch. They have fissures in the corners of the mouth and a remarkably pungent smell in the urine; in fact, all discharges

of the *acid* are excoriating. In *Ars.* cases, there are anxiety, restlessness, intense thirst but inability to drink water except in small sips, relief from warmth, want of appetite, nausea, offensive stools which are scanty each time, etc. Of course, all the remedies have the tendency to bleeding but only *Merc.* has an aggravation from the warmth of the bed, whereas *Ars.* has a relief from it.

With regard to *urination* the Borax child has a constant desire for it but it weeps along before the urine comes out. Upon this point, the three remedies ought to be compared, viz., *Lyco*, *Sanicula* and *Sarsaparilla*. The *Lyco* child, of course, cries before urination but it has no general timidity as a Borax child has. A *Lyco* child has a good deal of irritation after its sleep breaks up, and it kicks the mother or the attendant and that is all. Moreover, the urine contains red sands. *Sanicula* child, of course, has a fear during downward motion but its feces and urine are generally involuntary (*Aloe*). Then again, it wastes and withers, so that it looks like an old man. In *Sarsaparilla* there is too much pain *after* the urination is complete, sometimes intolerable. Urine comes in drops when sitting and is naturally evacuated when standing. A *Sarsa.* child also looks old like a *Sanicula* one.

From the above it will be seen how nervous is the Borax child. Sometimes it is seen that during the sound sleep the child will suddenly wake up and clasp the mother or anybody lying with it and if there is none he will press upon a side pillow or the railings of his bedstead. There is hardly any other remedy that is more nervous than Borax.

The *nose* is full of crusts, not only in the children but also in the adults, in case they are Borax patients. They always try to remove the crusts and throw them away.

Sexual organs,—The most important symptom of Borax either in the male or in the female is that they have hardly any desire for sexual intercourse. At least it is far less than ordinary. Borax, *Natrum carb* and *Sepia* are alike in this sphere. The females of these remedies are generally barren. The reason lies in this that they eject the male ejaculation and that is the peculiar tendency in the said remedies. Not only so, the organs themselves have the tendency to drag down. The female organs are felt slack and relaxed so that the patients feel a goneness in the parts and always fear that the uterus will come down through the vagina and they have to protect the parts carefully.

Leucorrhœa,—Borax females have a good deal of leucorrhœa and its nature is white, transparent, slimy and profuse. The patients say that it is just like nasal secretions. There is one peculiarity that the leucorrhœal discharge is rather *hot*. *Bell.* has also the hot flow but it is due to the congestion and irritation of the parts. The leucorrhœal flow of Borax generally starts two weeks before the monthly course.

Menstruation,—The peculiar characteristic of the Borax menses is that the female has a violent bearing down pain during the time unless and until a few skinny substances are discharged when relief comes for some time. Even where the menstrual discharges

are scanty, those substances must come out and before that there must be bearing down pains as stated above. Moreover, the patient feels and fears that the abdominal contents would issue through the vagina. Apart from all those, an intense nervousness, fear of sounds and noises and specially during downward motion must be there. Borax has generally scanty menses but instead, the leucorrhœal flow is profuse, even slides down to the feet. *Alumina* has also profuse leucorrhœa but *Alumina* discharges are more excoriating and flow more during the day with amelioration from bath.

Breast milk,—Borax has a few characteristics with regard to the breast milk. It is too much thick and of bad taste. As soon as the child sucks up a particular breast, the female feels a peculiar emptiness in that breast, ameliorated by pressure, and feels simultaneously a pain in the other breast. The following case is in point.

Case Report,—An eminent Allopath, practising in his Dispensary on Strand Road, Calcutta called me in April, 1928 for the treatment of his infant son. When I refused to take fees from him being a colleague, he actually wept aloud saying,—“Nobody consents to take fees from me and yet I find my child running towards death.” His good wife Sreemati Aduri Bala requested me in a piteous tone to accept my ordinary fees. From their mental condition I could not refuse and took down the child's symptoms and conditions which I reproduce in their own words. 16th April, 1928.

“This is our third son and his name is Nanda

Dulal. Before this we lost two sons and one daughter,—the first son in the 9th month, the daughter in the 3rd and the second son in the 4th month of their ages. Each one of them pined and pined and died emaciated. None of my children would suck my breast and every time we got them examined in the Medical College and Charmaichael Medical College Hospitals, and each time it was declared that it was due to the defect of the Thyroid glands. Lots of Thyroid Extract were used but to no effect. Various types of prepared foods, indian and foreign, were used but every child used to emaciate from the first or second month and by and by succumbed. The present child is aged three months and twelve days and this also appears to take up the same way. Would you kindly do the needful"? I consoled them and said that I would do as far as a man could, and God willing, child would be all right.

I commenced thinking within my mind,—“How is it? None of the children liked to suck the breast. What is it due to”? And I apprehended some defect in the breast milk itself. Accordingly, I asked the Doctor and he said that the breast milk had been examined and found quite normal. But this statement did not remove my doubts. Then I gathered the hereditary and the constitutional symptoms of the doctor and his wife. And I ascertained that the marasmus of all the children was due to the hereditary miasms, though the non-sucking of the mother's breast might have been a contributory cause. However, I myself got ten to fifteen drops of breast milk upon a small quantity of water in a pot, and found that the milk

did not, as it should, mix up with the water but it at once settled down below the pot. Then again, I myself tasted a quantity of it and found that it was badly salty and of filthy smell. Not only that,—there was a child in a neighbouring shop who was put upon the lap of Aduri Mata in order to see whether it would tastefully suck the breast. Now what did we find? After a sip or two the child left the breast, vomited the milk and cried aloud most irritably. The Doctor was an educated gentleman and so he looked blushed at the idea that he did not put the breast milk to such test before. However, I now enquired about the true cause of the marasmus.

At the age of 21 the doctor had an attack of Gonorrhœa and his innocent wife also was affected by it. The treatment adopted was only by injections. However, at the 25th year he got the first son. Each of the children was found to have a susceptibility to cold and coryza and a sort of breathing difficulty on the slightest cold exposure. Except the daughter none of the sons would urinate sitting. Moreover, the urine itself was offensive in each case. The interval between the successive pregnancies of Aduri mata was increasing by and by.

Sreemati Aduri bala had a very painful type of menses and had white discharges as well. Both the discharges were offensive, hot and burning. Moreover, she was intensely nervous and timid, so much so that at a sudden sound or at the happening of anything unusual, she would at once forcibly press some body near her and her heart used to violently palpitate.

Now, the description of treatment in all its details will be necessarily very long, nor will it be so much necessary in this connection. The child was given *Medorrhinum* 10M. and after a period of three months 50M, both times in single doses. Under the action of the remedy the child commenced to thrive satisfactorily. The good mother was kept under Borax from 200th, 1000th, up to 10M. After the 1000th potency the child evinced a desire to suck the breasts, though sucking was not allowed on account of the fact that they were under the action of different remedies and which were acting in a very satisfactory way. It is needless to add that another daughter born later duly sucked the breast. This daughter also commenced emaciation. The doctor himself and his wife having been under my treatment in a constitutional way, the treatment of this daughter was delayed. One word may be added that the Gonorrhœal flow of the doctor reappeared under my treatment after ten years of suppression. But I do not go into details.

* Sycotic parents generally get one or two or at the highest, three issues. Moreover, the pregnancies are delayed and stopped.

Skin.—A peculiarity of Borax skin disease is that scabs are profusely formed. This nature also belongs to *Mezereum*, but *Mezereum* has scabs over the eczema in the head, and as soon as the scabs are raised a quantity of offensive pus comes out and even vermins are found to be bred there. But Borax scabs are characteristically dry and no pus is found under them. Then Borax hairs are found to be tangled and

if the bunches are cut off, the tanglings occur again. Hence the difficulty of combing the hair. The eyelashes also are matted together. Scabs are also formed in the nostrils. This nature of Borax should be remembered. Of course, Borax skin diseases have also profuse pus and even a small cut must suppurate as in *Hepar Sulph.*—the difference is that *Hepar sulph* has an intense tenderness which Borax has not.

The Borax children get emaciated early and they are so much timid that every sound startles them up. Moreover, they get sores in the mouth cavity, lips and tongue; they have a susceptibility to diarrhœa and habitual indigestion. Such children cannot be expected to thrive well. Now, a comparison is to be made of *Sulph*, *Calc. carb*, *Psorinum* and *Sanicula* with Borax.

Comparison.—The emaciation of Sulphur has its origin from the Psoric miasm and generally starts after the suppression of some skin diseases. The *Sulphur* children generally dislike bath and in fact if a bath is forced upon them they get cold and coryza attended with fever. A *Sulphur* child is never clean and methodical and is rather fond of remaining dirty and unclean. Cold air, free air, lying on the cemented floor are refreshing, yet it would not like bath. A covering over the body is never liked by it. A *Psorin* child is also dirty and unclean like a *Sulphur* one. It remains tolerably all right and plays about during day time but during the night it would not sleep but weep and murmur. It has a voracious appetite but in spite of that it would not thrive. It has stools very much offensive. Cold air and cold exposure

bring in tonsillitis in the *Psorin* child. *Sulphur* and *Psorin* are complementary to each other. Moreover, if the well-selected remedies do not act satisfactorily, *Psorin* may be interpolated. A *Calcarea* child being fat and plump appears to be naturally growing well but its bone tissue is characteristically ill-nourished; there are sour vomit, sour stool and profuse sweat in the head and forehead so as to wet the pillow during night. The child is of lazy temperament. All transitions, viz, dentition, learning to walk and to speak are all delayed. A *Sanicula* child has a fear during downward motion just like Borax, is fond of fresh open air and of lying on the cemented floor and is averse to covering in the body just like *Sulphur*. Moreover, the dirty smell cannot be removed from its body however goodly washed it may be. Though *Sanicula* has also, like *Sulphur*, ulceration in the anus, yet *Sanicula* is characteristically constipated. Lastly, a *Sanicula* child looks like an old man and has wrinkling and folding of the skin at the neck like *Sarsa* and it steadily emaciates. Now, a few other remedies like *Abrotanum*, *Iodine*, *Sarsa*, *Natrum mur*, etc. should also be compared in this connection. Of course, emaciation is there in each of them but *Sanicula* and Borax have the same mental condition and it should be borne in mind that though *Sulph* and *Psorin* are like Borax regarding skin symptoms yet *mentally* Borax and *Sanicula* are alike. A hot feeling during sleep at night is to be found in all the three viz, Borax, *Sanicula* and *Sulphur*, and profuse sweating of the head is in Borax as in *Calc. carb.*

Modalities,—During downward motion, on sudden sounds, during hot days and immediately before urination,—*aggravation*; in winter, towards the evening, and on pressure,—*amelioration*.

Relationship,—*Acetic acid*, Liquors and Vinegars are inimical to Borax.

BOVISTA.

This remedy is not of much use because its action is neither deep nor extensive. Moreover, a few stray symptoms can only be given but a good picture cannot be made of this remedy.

Female organs,—Profuse bleeding generally aggravated at night and many times between the menses, say, at a week or ten days' interval, is found. The colour of the blood is black and is generally found to be mixed with clots attended with bearing down pains. Excoriating leucorrhœa is also found in this remedy which also aggravates at night. Moreover, before and during the menses the females get indigestion and diarrhœa and during the period of flow they must have to loosen their clothing.

Colic,—It has a colic which just like *Colocynth* gets ameliorated by pressure and doubling up to the front but the difference is that in *Colocynth* food aggravates, which is rather the ameliorating feature in Bovista.

Circulation,—It is a venous remedy and so on account of delayed circulation the females of this remedy look plethoric. They also feel themselves full and obese. It has also awkwardness, so that

things held by the hands easily fall down. *Apis* also has it but it is highly hot, whereas *Bovista* is chilly.

It has a *stammering* too and on account of the disorder in the nervous sphere, words are jerked away. The patient also writes, as if involuntarily, one word for another. It has also stringy and sticky discharges like *Kali bi*. *Bovista* has the sweat peculiarly offensive like onion, specially in its armpit. There is an extreme itching at the point of coccyx, resulting in ulceration.

Modalities,—Diarrhoea and palpitation aggravate in the morning ; general aggravation is found from cold air and cold food. It has also an aggravation during summer and at New Moon.

Case Report,—Sreemati Labanya Prava Debi, aged 4 years, daughter of my eldest daughter, Sreemati Gouribala Debi, commenced to stammer in the beginning of 1933. She would repeat the first word of her speech or sometimes simply open her mouth without being able to speak at all. Her father, my eldest son-in-law, Dr. Ram Krishna Chatterjee then commenced his practice only for sometime past, grew much disappointed on this. By and by the stammering grew more intense. But there were no symptoms at all and Sreemati Labanya Prava was quite healthy in all other respects. In a routine way *Stramonium* 30 was given in two doses, which produced only a small effect and that also only for a few days. The remedy was tried in 200th potency but to no effect whatever. At last it came up to my mind that Labanya Prava frequently stumbled down and was awkward, as things generally fell down from her

hands, and my attention was drawn to Bovista, which was given in 6th potency, two doses. After a fortnight or so, the effect of the remedy seemed to wear off and so 30th was given and she was completely cured. The stammering did never return since then.

BROMIUM.

Anti-Psoric }
 &
Tubercular. }

Bromium and *Iodium* are almost identical. Our illustrious Dr. Hering has said that blue-eyed patients belong to Bromium and the black-eyed ones to *Iodine*; otherwise both the remedies are similar. I know from my own experience that *Iodine* works much deeper and so in all chronic cases, *Iodine* is more useful than Bromium. Moreover, though both are equally useful in patients of Tubercular diathesis, yet Bromium is to be thought of in symptoms of acute type, whereas *Iodine* in chronic ones, its action being far deeper and proverbially slower.

Nature.—As there are medicines like *Acon*, *Bell*, *Ars*, *Calcarea*, etc., which are useful in diseases originating from *cold* exposure, Bromium is to be thought of in those originating in *heat* exposure,—e. g., being confined in a hot room, abnormal covering, exposure to heat in hot days, etc. When the patients are thus affected and the disease symptoms have come in, the patients may feel chilly and may desire for warmth, though the cause is different. We know the *Aconite* patients after the cold exposure, so long as the fever

is on, want cold and the Bromium patients under such circumstances want warmth; then again in *Camphor*, the patient wants cold *in proportion* he feels cold and wants heat and covering in proportion to the degree of heat. These peculiarities of remedies ought to be carefully borne in mind.

Another important thing with regard to the nature of Bromium is that almost all its disease symptoms are to be found in the left side, viz,—left throat, left ovary, left testis, etc. Of course, its Tubercular symptoms are found in the right chest, still it cannot be denied that it has a prominent left-sidedness.

Mind,—All the remedies belonging to the *halogen* group, viz, *Bromium*, *Iodine*, etc. are all anxious, restless and timid,—they are all apprehensive of something terrible which may happen. Bromium is intensely anxious and timid, does not desire company because he is always apprehensive of some injury by anybody. Little children coming of Tubercular parents who are emaciated, dry and have swollen glands in their body or within the abdomen seem to resent even a look at them. One of those remedies may have to be requisitioned in their cases, of course, symptom-totality must decide.

Sensorium,—In Bromium patients, sensorium is also highly excited. He is always apprehensive and not only so,—after meals, he thinks also that he will turn mad or get apoplexy. Looking at any running thing, e. g., the running train or a stream he gets vertigo and nasal bleeding.

Argentum nit has also much apprehension but

it relates to *the future* whereas in Bromium or *Iodine* it is for *the present*.

Croup and Diphtheria,—Both the disease symptoms are very serious in their nature. In many cases it is seen that a Croup patient dies of suffocation in one night. Then again, it is very difficult sometimes to distinguish between a Croup case and a Diphtheria case. As it is most difficult and inconvenient to distinguish between the remedies that are generally called for in these cases, it is desirable that we should be prepared with those remedies which are generally required.

I have already told you about the difficulty of distinguishing a Croup from a Diphtheria, as the diseased spot is the self-same; in Croup there is predominance of cough, and in Diphtheria the high grade of inflammation, separation of membranes and decomposition with a high grade of fever. There is another kind of Croup which is termed 'membranous Croup' and it is absolutely impossible to distinguish between a membranous Croup and a Diphtheria. It is fortunate for us that we are not to be guided by the *names* of diseases. Our only guide is the symptom-totality.

A Bromium Croup begins after an exposure to high heat, in other words, if after the exposure of high heat there is a cold exposure, a *Bromium* Croup may begin in the patient pre-disposed for it. It has hoarseness which is also accompanied with its Croup or Diphtheria and the patient *feels cold* at the spot and along with it the patient may feel that his throat is full of down or anything of soft nature. The

breath is also felt cold. Bromium aggravation is generally found during damp cold climates. Though its disease commences on taking cold after being heated, yet *during* the disease he avoids cold and cold air which are highly aggravating. Let us compare.

Comparison.—*Acon*, *Spongia*, *Hepar sulph*, *Bromine* and *Iodine*. Where Croup begins after exposure to dry cold air, *Acon* symptoms generally come in. The *Acon* Croup generally begins in the evening, at least in the first part of the night attended with high fever, dry skin, restlessness, thirst for cold water, with anxiety specially for the dry coughing and the patient feels special difficulty during *expiration*. After *Acon*, generally *Spongia* comes in. It has also dry cough and during coughing it appears as if some body is sawing over a board, difficulty of breathing is also there, specially during *inspiration*. The aggravation is generally before or during mid-night. After *Spongia*, *Hepar sulph* may come in, if the cough turns loose ; it has aggravation from mid-night to morning. *Hepar sulph* has also aggravation as in *Acon* from dry cold but there is no chance of confusion between the two, because *Acon* has a dry cough, high fever, much thirst, restlessness, anxiety and dry skin, whereas *Hepar* has a loose cough with sweaty skin without any restlessness or anxiety during fever ; moreover, *Acon* wants cold during fever but *Hepar* is exactly opposite, because not only the coughing aggravates on cold, the patient himself does not want it. After *Hepar* some of the *halogens* may be indicated. *Bromium*

may come in after *Spongia* or *Hepar* if the coughing is not ameliorated. Bromium symptoms are,—fair-skinned boys, wanting to be on the lap, and vehement walking, great difficulty of breathing and have to take in the breath for a long time. The face is rather hot; loose cough, and the exciting cause is exposure to cold after being heated. After *Hepar*, *Iodine* may come in,—black boys who hold the throat with pressure just before coughing and weep, fever and restlessness almost like *Acon* but the *Iodine* patients desire much cold. The face is cold specially when there is no fever. *Iodine* aggravation is in damp yet hot days, in warm room and from covering. *Lyc* is complementary to *Iodine* and may be required if symptoms correspond.

Glands,—Bromium has a considerable action on the glands and the special feature of the remedy is that the glands are hardened,—they do not go on to suppuration as in *Bell* or *Merc*. The pace is also slow but steady, and by and by it brings in emaciation attended with a low type of fever and leads the patient deathwards. The glands of the whole system may be affected, they are enlarged and hardened and the patient is dried up and enfeebled, with palpitation. Bromium has the peculiarity of attacking the glands of the left side in the human organism. In the enlarged glands the patient feels a heat.

Breathing,—I have already told you about the sawing breathing of this remedy but it has rattling also, when the patient feels that his breath will be clogged or arrested. Like *Ant. tart* it has flapping

of the *alæ nasi* also but the nausea and sweat in the forehead of *Antimony* are absent.

Female organs,—The remedy has characteristically passing of high-sounding flatus through the vagina as you find in *Lac. can*, *Lyco*, *Nux mos*, *Sanguinaria*, etc. Moreover, the left ovary is hardened and made painful.

Stomach Ulceration,—Bromium has ulceration in the stomach and the symptoms are pains in the stomach, vomiting and diarrhœa, immediately after eating. Moreover, continued emaciation, enlargement of glands, discharge of blood with stool are there. The peculiarity is that the patient cannot tolerate any hot or warm drink. *Phosphorus* also has this disease symptom but *Phosphorus* has a great desire for ice-cold drinks, whereas Bromium has no such peculiarity.

* The ulceration in the stomach is a development of the deep Tubercular miasm and the indications are the pains in the stomach immediately after eating and specially the presence of blood with vomit or stool. It is a tedious and in most cases an incurable development.

Modalities,—From cold exposure specially after being heated, in damp hot days, during rest, in the first part of the night and lying to the left,—*Aggravation*; on movement and in sea-voyage,—*Amelioration*.

BRYONIA.

Bryonia is a polychrest and it is used in various disease conditions. It is used in acute cases and during acute aggravations in chronic cases. We should make a fair picture of this important remedy.

Picture.—Each and every important remedy has a peculiarity of its own. For example, violence of *Acon*, suddenness of *Bell*, bodily restlessness of *Rhus tox*, mental restlessness with fear of death of *Ars* and so on. Bryonia has also a few peculiarities:—(1) Coming in of its symptoms slowly and gradually in all the disease conditions where it is indicated, viz, Rheumatism, fever, etc.; (2) Dryness is another peculiarity,—mouth-cavity is dry, rectal canal is dry, cough is dry and so on; its thirst is also peculiar, the patient wanting a big quantity of water but at long intervals; (3) Aggravation from movement is a great peculiarity of Bryonia; in any disease where Bryonia is indicated the patient wants to keep still, because movement greatly aggravates his case; (4) The fourth characteristic of Bryonia is its amelioration from pressure, so that a Bryonia patient wants to lie on the very side which is painfully affected. Here the reason why he wants to lie so is of course two-fold,—firstly, the amelioration comes from pressure and secondly, movement being lessened thereby, necessarily a relief comes.

The exciting cause of Bryonia diseases is the coldness after hot days. During hot days after iced drinks are taken, or towards the evening on lying upon cold stones or cemented floors or on exposure

to cold winds, its disease symptoms originate. Oftentimes Bryonia diseases come in upon suppressing of perspiration during heat. As physically, so mentally, —just on being pulled down after the high heat of anger, the patient gets the occasion for the Bryonia symptoms to come in. Thus far regarding the exciting cause.

When the disease symptoms are on, far from having a desire for warmth or covering, a Bryonia patient wants cold, open air and fanning. Now to the disease symptoms where Bryonia is indicated.

Fever,—There are various types of fever in Bryonia, viz, Intermittent, Remittent, Typhoid, Rheumatic, etc. Be it of any name, if the Bryonia symptoms are there, it will cure.

Intermittent,—A few words regarding this type will not be out of place. All Intermittent fevers have been given a name by the Allopaths and the people following them, as *Malarial*. It is a name only but for its cure, the remedy to be selected depends on the totality of symptoms in each individual patient. Of all fevers, the Intermittent type is very obstinate, because it generally appears in deep Psoric and Tubercular patients and therefore it appears to be very much tenacious. People foolishly believe that this type is the easiest of all, because it can easily be *suppressed* by the use of quinine. They do not know what is called a *cure* and what is a *suppression*. Of course, Intermittent fevers can easily be suppressed in that way for some time, but it appears again with a good deal of complicacy, with enlargements of spleen and liver, with disorders in the heart region and in most

cases it brings in T. B. developments. This sort of suppression is actually doing havoc in our society.

The Intermittent type of Bryonia fever has no fixed time of coming and going. A few days before, the patient feels heaviness of the system and does not want to move, then appear want of appetite, constipation, headache and a general malaise ; after a few days, the real type appears and the fever comes on with a chill, headache and thirst. After some time, the chill goes off and hot stage comes in with an increase of headache and thirst. The patient lies down still almost unconscious because movement aggravates and if he attempts to rise up, he gets nausea and vomiting ; he does not desire to keep any covering on, rather wants open air and fanning. The hot stage of Bryonia fever is most tormenting, because all the pains and aches aggravate at the time. Then, after some time, sweat appears and by and by all symptoms abate and the fever goes off.

Remittent,—The Remittent type of its fever comes in very slowly and insidiously. First two or four days, the patient feels want of appetite, a feeling of exhaustion, heaviness in the head, constipation, a sort of malaise, and then on the fourth or fifth day the thermometer may read 98.5° in the morning and 99° or 99.5° in the evening ; by and by, the temperature rises a bit higher and higher daily and along with it all the pains and aches, that are characteristic of the Bryonia fever, get prominent, viz, the peculiar thirst, wanting a big quantity of water at long intervals, a sleepy mood, but the most prominent of all is the absolute stillness with which the patient lies,

because movement aggravates the Bryonia patients. Violent constipation, dry and white-coated tongue, headache relieved by pressure, etc. are there. This is the type of uncomplicated Bryonia Remittent fever but complications may arise, e. g., Pneumonia and Typhoid condition.

Pneumonia.—Along with the Bryonia fever may come Pneumonia as a complicacy. You may find it Pneumonia, Bronchitis, Broncho-Pneumonia or Pleurisy, for any of these may accompany the fever but always remember that nothing is there in a name, for the treatment always depends upon the totality of individual symptoms. If there is Pneumonia or any of the other complicacies, you will always find a dry cough, local stitching pains which are highly aggravated on movement, difficulty of breathing, headache ameliorated by pressure and a desire to lie on the affected side. Generally the cough is dry and so nothing is raised, but if any, it is of brick-dust colour.

* The duty of a true Homœopath is always to *abort*, meaning thereby, to cut short the fever process before the development of any *ultimate* like Pneumonia, Bronchitis, or Typhoid. If he is unable to do so, it declares that he himself is unable to prescribe according to law, for the law itself is infallible. The Homœopathic Law of Cure never fails and so it can be said with confidence that if the ultimate is allowed to be produced, though the patient has been kept all along under a Homœopath, it declares his failure and never of the Law. Being a Homœopath one can not say that a particular fever will take a *course* of so many days, because as soon as the true remedy

is prescribed, the fever *must* abate and the course must be *cut short*. Of course, the time required for a perfect cure may be more or less in different cases, as it depends upon the condition of the Vital Power in individual patients.

Typhoid,—If the Bryonia fever is not cut short at the commencement, then there is every chance of the on-coming of a Typhoid course, and the following symptoms generally come in, viz,—drowsiness, patient lies still because any the least motion aggravates, the mind gets befogged, the patient frequently says that he must 'go home', because he feels as if he is away from his home. This mental aberration is in many cases the first symptom of the Typhoid condition he is entering into. Then there may come a muttering delirium, but invariably in all Bryonia cases there is an air of slowness and stillness. The case is generally aggravated in the early dawn, say, 3 or 4 A. M.. The child patient is found to be chewing something, even though there is no dentition as yet. Adult patients generally try to sit up for the purpose of "going home", and on the very attempt, nausea comes in. Apart from all these, there may be a delirium regarding the daily household works. A Bry. patient, also like *Bell* and *Calc. carb*, sees visions as soon as he closes his eyes. But you must have to remember that Bry and *Calc. carb* are inimical to each other.

You will find some patients during the delirious stage show a good deal of restlessness and in place of constipation they may have loose stools; the tongue again, instead of being dry and coated, takes

up a brownish hue and becomes rough and long and the end of it becomes tri-angular red ; the stool may be bloody or pure blood ;—if this picture comes, *Rhus tox* may come in and you know Bry and *Rhus*. have a complementary relation. In some Typhoid cases of *Rhus*, nose-bleed is found to appear, a symptom which is rather relieving.

A confusion may come in between Bryonia and *Rhus tox* in some cases. For example, in the first stage of Typhoid, as in Rheumatism also, Bryonia may show restlessness, though the movement aggravates all the same. Then again, *Rhus* patients may also desire to lie still. Where the confusion is imminent, you may remember that Bry wants open air, even fanning ; moreover, Bry has constipation and *Rhus* loose stools ; Bry tongue is thick and white coated, whereas *Rhus* tongue is long, blackish and rough with its characteristic tri-angular red tip ; so that you can easily distinguish between them. *Rhus* may follow Bry and *vice versa* and they are complementary to each other.

Comparison,—Now the Bryonia fever picture being complete, it should be compared with a few remedies, viz, *Acon*, *Bell*, *Rhus*, *Alumina*, *Chamomilla*, *Gels*, *Nux. v*, *Phos*, and *Kali carb*.

Aconite,—has also fever from exposure to cold, and during the fever, like Bryonia patients, wants cold and has a good deal of thirst, but the difference between the two remedies is so palpable that only the mere neVICES or the dull-brained physicians would make a mistake. The main point is that *Aconite* is violently restless and has a great fear of death,

whereas Bryonia is not only not so, on the contrary the patient lies still, because the slightest movement brings in an aggravation and has no fear of death; *Aconite* has the thirst and asks for water very often and for a big quantity of water each time, whereas Bryonia wants it at long intervals, though the quantity of water asked for is profuse in both the remedies. The main point is that the *Aconite* case is rather violent, comes all on a sudden and like a storm goes away after some time. But the Bryonia course is slow, very slow. *Aconite* fever is rather continued, having no ebb and flow or cessation or delirious symptoms like Bryonia.

Belladonna,—You may confuse *Belladonna* with Bryonia, as Bell. may also have a continued fever for some days together with sweat in covered parts, thirst, drowsiness, etc. But to distinguish between the two remedies the following points are to be remembered, viz.—(1) The *courses* of the fever in the two remedies are quite different. The *Bell* fever comes all on a sudden, and after a period of a few hours or a few days, goes away suddenly, whereas Bry fever is slow. Secondly, the *nature* of the fever is also different. *Bell* has everything violent, Bry just the opposite,—because *Bell* has violent heat, violent delirium and Bry has no violence of any kind. Moreover, *Bell* is rather sensitive, Bry is not so and rather welcomes pressure. *Bell* wants covering and has sweat on the covered parts and its sweat does not bring in relief, rather aggravates, whereas Bry does not want covering and is dry, but gets a good deal of relief on the appearance of sweat. Bry has constipation, thickly coated tongue

and has thirst for a big quantity of water at long intervals, whereas Bell tongue is dry, red and cracked, technically called "straw-berry" tongue and it has no characteristic constipation; *Bell* may have thirst but for a small quantity of water wanted often. On account of the violence of heat in *Bell*, the patient may have brain-congestion and a violent type of delirium; in fact, instead of violent delirium, when the *Bell* patient turns drowsy and still, it should be understood that *Bell* is no more indicated, and *Bryonia*, *Apis* or some other remedy may come in.

Rhus tox and *Bryonia*,—are complementary to each other. Main difference between them lies in this, that *Bry* has aggravation from motion and *Rhus* has just the opposite and therefore the *Rhus* patient must be restless though he does not get relief from being so. Restlessness of *Rhus* is physical (mental,—*Ars*). Moreover, *Rhus* cannot tolerate cold and all the symptoms are aggravated from cold, whereas, though *Bry* gets fever from cold exposure, yet when the fever is on, *Bry* rather wants cold and cold air. Of course, *Bry* rheumatism wants warmth for relief. Then again, *Bryonia* has characteristic constipation, whereas *Rhus* has loose stools. It has been seen that after *Bry*, *Rhus* comes in and after *Rhus* *Bry* symptoms may also come in. In Rheumatism *Bry* has characteristic aggravation from motion, but in *Rhus* the first movement aggravates but continued motion rather brings in relief. *Bry* has morning aggravation, whereas *Rhus* aggravates during night and from noon to 3 or 4 P. M.

Alumina,—This remedy is complementary to *Bry*.

When the acute symptoms of Bry are found to appear every now and then, and Bry cannot completely cure on account of its want of sufficient depth, *Alumina* comes in. Of course, it is needless to add that *Alumina* is indicated and complements Bry in chronic conditions only.

Chamomilla,—The disease symptoms coming in as a result of anger are found in both *Chamomilla* and Bryonia, yet the remedies differ widely, in-as-much-as Bry is patient, keeps still and is relieved from pressure, whereas *Chamomilla* is impatient, sensitive and violently irritable, wanting always to move and roam about on the lap of somebody. Bry has characteristic constipation, *Chamo* must have offensive loose stools.

Gelsemium,—The fever of this remedy has the nature and course of Bry fever, and to a superficial observer, the distinction may not be apparent. The differentiating points are the following :—

The facial appearance of *Gels* is reddish, Bry has it colourless. Though the *Gels* patient is, like Bry, averse to movement but the reason is that the patient feels his body heavy in *Gels*, whereas Bry patient has positive aggravation from movement. Then, Bry has constipation, *Gels* has neither of the two, viz, constipation or loose stools. Bry tongue is white-coated and dry and the patient has a good deal of thirst, whereas the *Gels* tongue is generally clean, reddish and is never dry, and the patient has no thirst. *Gels* has no sweat, Bry has profuse sweat and has relief from it. *Gels* has evening aggravation, Bry has it in the morning. *Gels* is chilly and so wants covering, whereas Bry rather wants cold and

fanning. *Gels* has a fear in downward motion, *Bry* has rather a relief from it. *Bry* feels a nausea and may vomit as well, on his attempting to sit up,—*Gels* has so such peculiarity. Lastly, *Gels* has profuse urination whereas *Bry* is dry and has it scanty. As there is a chance of confusion between the two remedies in the first week of Typhoid fever, I have given these differentiating points in details.

* If there is a mistake in your selection of the remedy during the first week of Typhoid fever, you may lose the great chance of *aborting* the fever process and thus curing the patient at that very stage. So, you are to carefully remember the differentiating points of remedies likely to be indicated during the first week,

Nux vom.—Though *Nux vom* is complementary to *Bry*, yet the differentiating points are many. The main difference lies in this that *Bry* has hardly any urgency to stool and when it has any stool, it is dry, thick and as if half-burnt; whereas *Nux* has frequent urgency to stool, though almost ineffectual and when the stool comes out at all, it is scanty and the patient feels that a good quantity has remained unpassed. Moreover, *Nux* is chilly and so wants warmth and cannot tolerate cold, cold air and cold food, and during the fever it must have covering and feels chilly on slightest movements. Then, *Nux* is highly sensitive and cannot tolerate even ordinary light sound or scent, and often gets angry even on inoffensive words. *Bry* is never chilly, on the contrary, it wants fanning and cold air during the fever; its aggravation on movement is general and not

like *Nux* in which chilliness only is increased, as also Bry is never sensitive like *Nux*. *Nux* wants warm drinks, Bry cold ones. These are the main points of difference, though there are a few others.

Phosphorus,—Bry and *Phos* look alike but Bry has aggravation from motion, whereas *Phos* cannot but be restless and is rather relieved from movements. Both want cold food and cold drink and are relieved thereby, though only in *Phos* the water is ejected as soon as it gets warm in the stomach. Both like to lie to the right, but Bry likes to lie on the affected side which *Phos* cannot (and it is convenient also that Bry has generally right-sided Pneumonia and *Phos* has it left-sided.) Bry has an aggravation from eating, whereas *Phos* gets relief from it. Lastly, Bry has characteristic constipation, *Phos* has characteristic diarrhœa.

Kali carb,—It has Pleurisy, Pneumonia, Bronchitis, etc., like Bryonia and has also stitching pains like it. But the difference lies in this that Bry has the stitching pains on movement only, whereas *Kali carb* has the pains *irrespective of* movements. It is important to note that Bry cannot lie except on the affected side for two reasons. First, on account of the relief it gets from pressure as also due to the fact that movements are avoided from lying on the affected side, which are unavoidable if it lies to the other side; but *Kali carb* can never lie to the affected side on account of the intense sensitiveness of the parts affected. Lastly, *Kali carb* is chilly whereas Bry wants cold, though the pains, etc, are relieved from warmth and warm applications.

Mind,—Bry is not a deep remedy and is therefore hardly ever required in the treatment of chronic cases. Yet, the mental symptoms, as manifested during its acute diseases, are given below.

The Bryonia patient does not want anybody near him and he wants to remain alone, because he fears the movement which may be possible in course of conversations with the company. Moreover, a bit of fear and anxiety for the disease he is suffering from, may also be found.

Headache,—Apart from the pains in its head associated with disease symptoms, the head itself is affected with pains and aches quite independently of its diseases in other parts. The Bryonia headache is generally felt on first movement after rising from bed in the morning and may also appear as a precursor of many of its diseases that may be on-coming viz, Fever, Pneumonia, Bronchitis, etc. In any case, its head pains on movements, on speaking, in the warm room and in the light, as well as after food. The position which the Bryonia patient likes during his head pains is lying still with a rag tightly bound over the head, in a dark room,—the room must be noiseless and cool. The patient feels as if the contents of his head would burst out. Of course, throbbing pains are also there which are not experienced, unless the patient moves. The bursting pain is characteristic but when the patient moves, the throbbing pain comes in, which stops and the bursting pain continues as soon as the patient lies still. *Bell* headache is characterised by throbbing pains and due to its violent blood congestion, the

patient becomes sensitive and cannot tolerate any binding on the head. Moreover, *Bell* has no aggravation from movement.

Bry headache, as I have said, generally commences in the morning; and for the exciting cause, it is mostly found that intense mental labour or quarrelling or violent altercations and other manifestations of anger,—any of these is there. There are a few other remedies which have the headache from the same exciting cause, viz, *Staphysagria*, *Chamo*, *Colocynth*, etc. A *Staphy* patient has vehement anger and he suffers from headache on account of his *suppressing* the manifestations of wrath. *Chamo* is intensely sensitive, so that he cannot bind down the head but he has relief from movements. *Colocynth* is highly nervous and its headache is never associated with inflammatory symptoms. Apart from other things, a Bry patient may have headache on a cold bath during perspiration.

* For selecting a proper remedy in a particular disease condition, the exciting cause has not much value except in the very beginning. The totality of symptoms that are manifested and the individuality should stand bold in the physician's mind.

Tooth-ache.—Bryonia tooth-ache consists of *stitching*, tearing and cutting pains, aggravating during eating and all forms of warmth, e.g., warm food, warm drink, warm room, etc. They are also aggravated from smoking and movements, and are ameliorated from cold food, cold drink, and by lying still, in a cool room, on the affected side. A few remedies ought to be brought in for comparison, viz, *Kali carb.*

Chamomilla, *Merc.*, *Puls.*, *Clematis*, *Coffea*, *Bismuth*, *Causticum*, *Sepia*, *Silica*, *Natrum sulph* and *Staphysagria*. Except *Kali carb* each of these remedies has aggravation from warmth and therefore they have been taken for comparison.

Kali carb,—It has tooth-ache only during eating but the modalities are directly opposite of *Bry*; *Kali carb* has aggravation from cold and relief from warmth; then again, *Bry*. has dry mouth, whereas *Kali carb* has it moist, even sometimes offensive saliva runs away from mouth. But the nature of the pains is the same in both remedies, viz, stitching, tearing and cutting.

Chamomilla,—Its tooth-ache is generally found amongst the children and females and though its modalities almost tally with those of *Bry*, yet there is a difference in this that the patient of *Chamomilla* is highly sensitive and wants constant movements, whereas *Bryonia* has no sensitiveness, has relief from pressure and aggravation from movements. A *Chamomilla* child wants to roam about on some body's lap, but a *Bry* child will not tolerate it.

Merc. sol.,—In its tooth-ache, there are various pains, all of which run towards the ear. There is salivation which is offensive, the tongue is moist and coated, and all the peculiar modalities of *Merc.*, viz, aggravation at night, from warmth of the bed, from heat, on hot days, from the touch of anything hot or cold and during rains are there. Moreover, you know, *Merc.* has profuse sweat and a desire to lie to the left.

Puls.,—*Puls.* tooth-ache aggravates in warm room, from warm or hot food and drink, and during hot

days ; it has relief from cold food and cold drinks, specially when they are kept in the mouth ; it has relief from open and cold air and slow movements, the latter being directly opposite to what is found in Bry.

Clematis,—It has modalities almost similar to *Merc.*, because it has also aggravation from bed-heat, in warm room and warm or hot food and drink ; *Clematis* tooth-ache is also relieved by anything cold being kept within the mouth and when the cold air is drawn in within the mouth cavity ; it has also serious aggravation of the pains as soon as the patient lies on bed at night, and they are a bit tolerable during the day. Though the nature of the pains is like that of Bry, yet you should remember that the Bry pains are aggravated on movement and relieved by pressure from lying to the affected side.

Coffea,—The tooth-ache of *Coffea*, *Bismuth* and *Chamomilla* is aggravated by warm drinks, and water as cold as ice gives the patient relief so long as it is not warmed up ; this is also found in other remedies, viz, *Puls*, *Causticum*, *Sepia*, *Natrum sulph*, etc. But in *Coffea*, *Bismuth* and *Chamomilla*, the modality is characteristic. *Coffea* and *Chamo.* are badly sensitive and even the slightest pain makes them highly nervous. *Coffea* has characteristic insomnia. In any case, amelioration from pressure and aggravation from movements, as found in Bryonia, are not there in any of the remedies, though the relief from cold water is in all. *Bismuth* cannot remain alone and is highly anxious and restless. So it stands just opposite to Bry. The pains of *Causticum* are rather paralytic

and many of its symptoms are relieved by taking cold water; moreover, as a patient, *Causticum* is highly anxious and dejected and is aggravated by dry cold but relieved in rains. *Sepia* is indifferent, having weeping mood, fear to remain alone and badly constipated and its tooth-ache though relieved by holding cold water in the mouth, yet the tooth-ache starts from cold exposure. *Sepia* also stands opposite to *Bry* because *Sepia* likes movements and exertion. *Silica* stands absolutely opposite to the above group, in as much as the tooth-ache starts from exposure to dry or damp cold and the patient cannot tolerate cold water in his mouth. The relief comes from warmth and in warm room. As a patient *Silica* is much timid and anxious and is so much chilly that it wants warmth even in the head. *Natrum sulph* is sycotic and has aggravation from rains and in rainy weather, though it has local relief from cold water and cold air. In tooth-ache *Natrum sulph* patient wants movements though he has hardly any relief (*Rhus*). Last of all, in *Staphysagria* the tooth-ache aggravates from the touch of food-stuffs, but has relief from masticating,—the peculiarity lies in this that not-with-standing so much sensitiveness, pressure gives good relief. Though both *Bry* and *Staphy* have relief from pressure, yet the latter is aggravated from cold and relieved from heat.

Digestive Organs,—It must have to be noted that though a *Bryonia patient* desires cold water for his thirst, yet in digestive disorders warm drinks bring him relief. As a patient he may desire cold water

but it aggravates his cough, his rheumatic pains, his nausea or his abdominal pains ; and in all these cases it is warm drinks and warm fomentations that bring him relief. As a patient he requires cold water, sour drinks though the local pains are ameliorated as above. Then again, *Bryonia*, *Acon.*, *Ars.*, *Phos* and many others want cold drinks but there are points of difference between them, viz, *Bryonia* wants it in a profuse quantity but at long intervals ; *Acon* wants it in a profuse quantity but at short intervals ; *Ars* takes it often but only in a sip each time, because though he wants cold water, yet it does not suit him as nausea is brought on ; *Phosphorus* also wants cold water, cold drinks, even ice-cold ones and in profuse quantity too, and it not only gives him relief but also relieves the digestive condition as well, yet it is ejected as soon as it gets warmed up in the stomach. These differentiating points ought to be remembered.

One word more regarding the *Bryonia* modality. All other pains of *Bryonia* may be relieved by pressure but the pains of the digestive organs are aggravated therefrom and are relieved from warm application. Of course, the main characteristic of *Bryonia*, viz, the aggravation from motion must be present under all circumstances.

Though constipation is the characteristic condition of *Bry*, yet it has diarrhoea as well, which comes in on movements after rising from bed in the morning. Its diarrhœic stools are highly offensive ; of course, the other conditions of *Bry*, viz, its peculiar thirst, its aggravation from movements, its nausea on

any attempt to rise, its desire for lying in a cool room, its dryness of the mouth, e t c, are present. It is generally found that its diarrhoea comes in as a result of suppression of some natural discharges.

Relation,—Complementaries are,—*Alumina* and *Rhus tox* ; though *Kali carb*, *Nux*, *Phos* and *Sulphur* may be needed after it.

Potency,—3, 6, 30, 200 and 1000 are frequently used. Higher potencies may also be useful.

BUFO RANA.

Anti-Psoric,
Anti-Sycotic,
 &
Tubercular. }

Bufo Rana comes up from the glands of toads. It acts mainly upon human minds, which it badly deteriorates and lowers down. At first it brings in low and vile propensities, and by and by, it depresses the intellect and leads a man to think and act like an insane person. The truly tubercular insanity is not to be found in Bufo, but the vile, low and depressed mental conditions are to be found in this remedy. In former days, Bufo patients were hardly to be found but now-a-days, along with the looseness of thought in human mind, lots of Bufo patients are coming up. Bufo patients are proverbially so low that they seem to stoop down on the beastly plane.

Bufo, *Baryta carb*, and many other remedies of this type, are not affected from anything acquired, but they are affected from the hereditary flow. A sinless

father would expect children of pure mind. Then again, the paternal and maternal systems are found not only affected from low and venereal diseases but are also affected by virtue of suppressive treatments, and the descendants coming of from such parents must have highly disordered systems. Bufo and *Baryta* ailments have their key in the disorderly systems of the ancestors. Then again, the descendants of Bufo and *Baryta* must be necessarily more disordered and diseased, but the natural law saves the situation by virtue of stopping the power of procreation in them. You know, Syccosis minimises the number of descendants and where Syccosis and Syphilis are combined, the procreation is generally stopped, and if there are any descendants, they take early exit from this world by untimely death, because the beneficent Nature comes in to save the world from unfit and disorderly children.

Mind,—As I have already told you, Bufo mind is low and is always after sexual satisfaction. On that account, youthful males and females of Bufo are always on the look-out of solitary places, so that they can satisfy their sexual desires in an unnatural way. This mental condition is very important. They are generally found also to be quite shameless and dull in mind. I know of a patient, a boy of fifteen, who was so impudent that he used to masturbate before his mother, and I was successful in curing him with the help of this remedy from its persistent and continued use from 6th upwards to 10M. potencies. He is at present reading I. Sc. and very

often comes to see me with a grateful heart. He has been perfectly cured.

The Bufo mind is as low as timid. Here there is a good deal of similarity between Bufo and *Baryta carb.* On the one hand, the patient cannot remain alone, yet does not want company. It appears as if the patient cannot stand or tolerate other's attention. *The mind is weak, low and stupid.* The nerve centres are disordered and debilitated by and by, and epilepsy generally comes in. I think, you know the difference between epilepsy and ordinary hysteria. The main point of difference is that in ordinary hysteria, the patient retains his memory and recollection, so that he is fully conscious of the fact that he had fainting, after it breaks up; whereas, in epilepsy, he is not conscious of the fact. There is another thing, in hysteria, nervous excitement is at the back, whereas in epilepsy it is the nervous depression, which is the cause. I am going to cite a case below.

Case Report,—Sreejut Babulal Basak, aged 32 or 33, was the fourth teacher of Rajagram H. E. School, where I was the Headmaster. He was a man of dutiful nature but he was highly irritable and impulsive. He was under the impression that none of his students could ever appreciate him and so many times he had recourse to beating them almost on trifles. I was almost a novice then, having had the Homœopathic practice for 8 or 10 years behind me and could not have a good initiative into the tricks of treating chronic cases. However, I commenced to observe his conduct and nature, and,

by and by, came to find out the miasmatic wrong within him, which I delineate below.

So far as I could know about his parentage, I found that his father died a natural death and had acquired no venereal disease in his life. His mother had hysteria and died of rheumatic troubles. The patient himself was goodly intelligent and painstaking, and so he endeared himself to all the Headmasters under whom he had worked. But unfortunately either by virtue of bad company or some other exciting circumstances, he took to early masturbation, and after a long practice of it, he got night pollution, vertigo, even sudden tumbling down when walking, palpitation, etc. ; after some time, he came to senses, and the thought, how he could be cured, became the upper-most in his mind, and he placed himself under a good Kaviraj. Having had no benefit, he went under Allopathic hands and used various patent medicines. In this way, he passed up to 25th or 26th year of his age, when he lost his father and he was appointed the fourth teacher of the School, where I also joined as the Head-master after some time.

When I made the records I found these things prominent in him. "Almost constant vertigo, bad palpitation, intense irritability, coming on of epileptic fits every day or every alternate day, sometimes even twice or thrice a day, a desire for constant eating but a small quantity at a time, inordinate desire to take meat and to take daily two or three baths, etc, etc". Along with these things, I observed the three following characteristics in him,—(1) it was found that one of his hands was always put

upon his private parts, (2) his idea that he was not being properly appreciated by any of his students and and if somebody objected and said that he could not properly understand him, on would come his fit of anger and instantly the epileptic fit, and just after it, he used to run outside, roam about a few steps and then again used to resume his class, as if nothing had happened, and (3) he was greatly averse to any sort of music. I practised at the time the Science and Art of Music, and various musical instruments were in my room. The patient used to say,—“The Headmaster is a most qualified and worthy man, the only fault that lies in him is that he practises music.” I found that the patient could not tolerate music of any form. Moreover, the facial appearance would clearly signify that he was a *non compos mentis*, i. e., a man of unsound mind, as if the internal derangement and want of harmony were actualised upon his externals. The soft qualities, love for man and God, could not be found in him. Roughness, and out-of-tuneness were visible in his look.

I studied the above symptoms and selected *Bufo rana* and commenced with 6th with a slow rise up to 1000th. A severe fit of epilepsy came up a few days after the 1000th potency, but after that, all derangements were found to have been simplified. After some time, a few symptoms re-appeared and I gave 5M of *Bufo* and seven months after I had to give 10M. After a long period of two years, the patient was a normal man.

The mentals of *Bufo* are very important. The *Bufo* patient turns by and by rather imbecile and

idiotic and in this *Baryta carb* and Bufo appear to be on the same board. Naturally as a man grows up in age, he loves to mix in company of the people of his own age, but in these two remedies an exception is found, because their mentals are stunted and dwarfed and so they cannot mix up in company of people of their age. Then again, they are found to talk and act like idiots. A Bufo patient suddenly starts up and runs up somewhere quite aimlessly and then returns to his seat. If you ask him the reason of his suddenly going off and coming back, he will only laugh immoderately like an idiot. *Bufo does not want company as also he fears to remain alone.* He cannot tolerate bright and glaring things, a strong light and music. His memory is almost blank, he cannot attend to his studies, being always *restless* and *listless*, and without any plan or method of work, and he does not know what he would do the next moment. A Bufo patient appears to be almost insane. You must have to reply to his questions immediately, or he will lose patience and will flame up to passion. He always fears that you are thinking him an idiot. You know, it is a characteristic of the idiots that they think themselves most intelligent and like others to think them so. Lastly, you should remember that the Bufo patient is quite averse to music, or even a concordant note. But why? Because there is no concordance or harmony *within* him.

Now you should be acquainted with the hysteric or the epileptic fits of Bufo as well as its insane symptoms. The nature of Bufo, I mean, of all its disease symptoms, is *soft* and *slow*. It has no sudden-

ness or excitement as in *Belladonna*, *Cicuta* and a few others. The reason is that the brain of *Bufo* is *slowly* disorganised and the nervous system is also *very slowly* and *gradually* enfeebled. The epilepsy of this remedy is of a peculiar type,—the patient is walking and for a few seconds the fit of epilepsy comes in and, as a result, the umbrella or the stick or the bundle of paper, that was in his hand slips down of which patient is altogether listless ; sometimes the patient is sitting down or may be reading a book, the fit comes up and he suddenly rises, aimlessly walks a few steps and then again comes and sits down, without being conscious of his rising and walking. If you ask him, why did he do so, he will say,—“No, I have been sitting all along, I did not walk at all.” This listlessness is important and this is present during the works he ordinarily does as well as during his insanity. This listlessness or unconsciousness of what he does is the essential feature of his mind. The point is there is never any excitement but rather passivity. In his physical body he may have complete anæsthesia or hyperæsthesia. In sexual matters also, there may be an intense sexual desire or a complete impotence. You are always to remember this listlessness about the *Bufo* patient, as if the matters that are going on are quite unable to excite the nervous sphere.

In *Bufo* there are found various skin symptoms of ring-worm nature and all its discharges, even the leucorrhœa and the menstrual flow, are offensive.

* It is unfortunate that the remedy like *Bufo*, so deep and involving, as it does, the centre of life, is

not much used by the profession. Most of the physicians are more engaged with the acute conditions and acute symptoms. They do not appear to look deep, and so our society is unable to derive the full amount of benefit which this divine Science and Art is ready to give. Unless you look deep and touch the mind by the deep-acting remedies, but always try to remove only the superficial symptoms, the law is that your patient will be more and more affected in his inner and inner organs, and at last the last drop-scene falls down with an Abdominal T. B. or a Lung-Phthisis, or a full-fledged Insanity. In fact, that is the case with *Baryta*, *Bufo*, *Staphy*, *Zincum phos*, *Phosphorus* and a few others.

Modality,—The *Bufo* patient is rather hot and is *relieved* by bath, open air and cool room; *aggravation* after sleep and in warm room. Patient likes to keep his legs in warm water.

Potency,—I have seen the potencies from 6th to C. M. to have been goodly efficacious.

CACTUS GRANDIFLORUS.

Cactus is a remedy of not a very wide range. Its sphere is much limited.

For a comparison, the following remedies may be considered,—*Acon*, *Digitalis*, *Spigelia* and *Gels*.

Characteristic symptoms,—(1) The patient feels that his body has been kept within a cage of wire, and as if each wire is continually being contracted and twisted.

(2) The affected part is full of shooting pains and a sense of contraction,—in the throat, chest, heart, uterus, anus, vagina, urinary organs, etc.

(3) The patient feels as if his heart is being clasped and unclasped rapidly by an iron hand and so has no room to beat.

Modalities,—Aggravation at 11 A. M. and 11 P. M. Palpitation aggravates *on lying to the left* and on exertions ; rest ameliorates.

Mind,—Mental symptoms of all important remedies should be remembered. In Cactus, of course, there are mental symptoms, but they being in connection with and resulting from heart affection, should be taken as only *common* symptoms. You know wherever the heart is deranged, there must be present fear and anxiety. Not only so, the dreams of the heart patient are also full of fears. These are common symptoms and so are of very small help, because wherever the heart is affected, these mental symptoms must be more or less present.

Head,—Due to the derangement of the heart, this remedy has also a derangement of circulation. It has a vertigo, which aggravates on physical exertion, on changing of sides when lying, on bending downwards, on rising up from a sitting posture and on taking a deep breath. On stopping the breath for sometime, the palpitation vehemently increases and the patient feels a pulsation throughout his body.

There is a headache as well, with which is associated a sense of heat within the brain. The headache is ameliorated by pressure with the hands.

During the headache, the head feels enlarged and the headache itself aggravates from light and sound, specially from the sound of speech.

Bell headache has also pulsation, but *Bell* has high fever with red face and a sensitiveness to touch, whereas *Cactus* fever is very low and the headache is ameliorated by pressure, unlike *Bell* which is sensitive to touch.

Derangement of circulation,—The *Cactus* patient has a high grade of irregularity regarding the circulation and due to which there is somewhere congestion, somewhere want of blood, etc. You know that *Cactus* heart is unhealthy, on account of which the remedy has a feeling of contraction throughout the system, specially in the region of the heart. By and by, the heart gets hypertrophied. The following symptoms are important, viz, the feeling of contraction above referred to, inability to lie to the left on account of the palpitation of heart, which increases when the patient lies to that side, a feeling of weakness, rather a benumbing sensation and formication in the left hand associated with a fear that breathing may be stopped suddenly. There is also a symptom which is rather common to all heart cases, viz, the fearful dream in which the patient feels he is raised very high from which he is left unsupported and he wakes up with a good deal of anxiety. Now to compare.

Acon. has almost all the symptoms which *Cactus* has, but the intense anxiety and fear of death are quite unique in *Acon.* A *Gels* patient feels that the work of his heart may stop unless he moves. This

differentiates *Gels* from *Cactus*. Moreover, all the other symptoms of *Cactus* are wanting in *Gels*. *Digitalis* has a peculiar fearful dream, a fear that the breathing may stop, and a few other symptoms; but *Digitalis* heart is very weak and its beatings are very slow, which intermit at the third, fifth or seventh beat. Moreover, a *Digitalis* patient feels that his heart action may fail, if he moves at all (opp. *Gels*),—so that it is not at all difficult to differentiate *Digitalis* from *Cactus*. *Spigelia* has no much similarity with *Cactus*, though the *Spigelia* patient lies to the right with his head raised high up.

In the Rheumatic pains of *Cactus*, the same drawing or contracting pains are there.

Potency,—30 and 200 are generally used, and though I have hardly any experience regarding its higher potencies, there is no reason why they should not be useful.

CADMIUM SULPH.

Cadmium sulph, though not of a very wide range, is very useful in its sphere. Its symptoms are much like those of *Arsenicum alb.*, and I think that *Arsenicum alb.* is more often used where this remedy should be. We should look to the symptom-totality of each remedy before using it in a particular case. A remedy cannot fit a disease of a particular name unless the individual peculiarities call for the remedy.

The symptoms of **Cadmium sulph.** are not at all difficult to remember. If you can remember one

thing, I think the character of the remedy will be permanently impressed upon your mind and you will not have any the least difficulty in using it in a particular case in hand. Mental anxiety, weakness, exhaustion, loss of appetite, nausea, vomiting, etc. are all there exactly as in *Ars*, save and except that *Ars. alb* is highly restless, whereas *Cadmium sulph.* does not want to move and is rather aggravated from motion like *Bry*.

Cadmium sulph. has another use which is very beautiful. Suppose, a patient suffered for a long time from a protracted type of fever, and for some time past, he has got rid of it, but though the patient is quite all right regarding the other symptoms, yet it is found that he is unable to take nourishment, can not assimilate even the ordinary food stuffs and ejects them, even sometimes he may have loose stools too. He is anxious, yet does not want to move along ; it seems that if he can now properly assimilate his food, he will be quite all right in every way. In such a case, Cadmium sulph. does wonders and without which the patient may pine and pine and die. *Psorin* may also be used in this condition, if he is characteristically chilly and gets no appetite.

Digestive Organs,—Cadmium sulph. has a very good action in the digestive sphere. Constant nausea, vomiting of undigested injeſta, sometimes of blackish hue, vomiting aggravated from exertion and movement, and associated with a high grade of exhaustion, even cold sweat on the forehead are found in this remedy and it appears that the functions of digestion are at a stand still. In many cases, on account of acid

risings and violent burning in the stomach as well as the above symptoms, it would strongly impress a physician with the idea that the patient has got ulceration somewhere in the stomach or duodenum. But Cadmium sulph. can cure the patient slowly and permanently. *Ant. t.*, *Ipec* and *Ars. alb.* may be confused with, but if you carefully remember the picture, you shall have no mistake.

Malarial fever, which goes away for some time, has a tendency to relapse every now and then and the patient has the above picture of intense weakness and exhaustion along with the stomach symptoms. Here, you should think of Cadmium sulph or *Carbo veg.* The distinction is quite easy,—Cadmium has predominance of nausea and vomiting, *Carbo* of tympany.

Cadmium has the characteristic exhaustion and weakness, the tendency of relapses and aggravation from movement,—these three are highly characteristic and ought to be carefully remembered.

Potency,—There is hardly any necessity of going up higher than 30th, 200th and 1000th.

Case Report,—Sj. Hari Pada Pal, aged 27 or 28, was cured of Cholera according to the symptomatic indications and the patient was quite all right for the time. He was given his ordinary diet in due course but it was found that he was not assimilating properly and had nausea, loose stools, absolute want of appetite, general burning, etc. I treated him with *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* with, of course, very much scanty indications but the patient did not improve. At last I thought of Cadmium sulph. and administered

it in two single doses of 200, which put him all right in course of two or three days. In this case, there was no restlessness, yet I found no aggravation from movement.

CALCAREA CARB

Anti-Psoric,
Anti-Sycotic,
 &
Tubercular.

Calc. carb. is one of the most useful remedies and is very deep in its action and it acts wonderfully well in all deep disorders of Anti-Psoric, Anti-Sycotic and Tubercular systems. Apart from that, it is also used in many acute diseases and conditions.

* You should know how to use these deep miasmatic remedies. Suppose, a child has frequent sour stools and you have relieved it many times with superficial remedies like *Rheum*, *Nux*, etc., but you are unable to cure it permanently. Here the point is that you should do away with the *tendency* of the child to get sour diarrhoea every now and then. After having relieved the acute aggravation of having frequent sour stools with any of these superficial medicines that may be indicated, you ought to think of *Sulphur*, *Calcarea* or a like medicine having similarity with the child's *constitutional* symptoms.

Modalities,—*Aggravation*,—in cold air, damp air, cold bath, standing or sitting in water, after meals, in ascending and in full moon (*Silica* in new moon), painless hoarseness aggravates in the morning;

Amelioration,—on dry days and on lying on the affected side.

Calcarea carb child,—Fair skinned, fat and plump, and fleshy appearance having weak bone, having a tendency of being fat with head frequently sweaty, specially during sleep when the pillow wets (*Silica*); stool, vomit and sweat,—all sour smelling (*Rheum, Hepar sulph, Sulphur, Mag. carb*); the head and the belly are larger in proportion to other parts of the body; much delay in dentition, in learning to walk and to speak, the dentition is full of various troubles, the cranial joints remain long open and in many cases, there is a curvature of the spine, has a special appetite for eggs, rather a craving for them and has a dislike for milk. From all these, it is apparent that there is no real nutrition going on in the child. If you push milk on the Calc. child, it will have sour stool and sour vomit. If you do not correct the child's constitution, somehow or other it will grow up and may have Tubercular symptoms in its adult life. The child gets frequent cold and coryza because it is much susceptible to cold. Of course, there are Calc. children who are lean and thin but the picture of head and abdomen being larger in comparison to the rest of the body, must be there. This sort of temperament and constitution is called Scrofulous and there are other remedies which are of similar nature and are therefore used for the purpose of correcting the constitution in an early age, viz., *Sulphur, Silica, Phosphorus, Tuberculinum, Lyco*, etc. These remedies ought to be very clearly borne in mind. Then, we should know the use of Calc. carb

in girls and youthful females. Calc. girls menstruate at an early age and the flow is generally profuse and it may continue for days together. The above three things ought to be remembered in this connection,—very early menstruation, profuse flow and continuance of the flow for days together. These three things are the picture of only a first few years. Then the flow decreases much or is altogether stopped and the chance is that in case these females are not treated properly, they get intense susceptibility to cold and by and by they may be affected with Tuberculosis. The picture of this stage is very clear,—menstruation is stopped or very much scanty, there may be a vicarious flow through the nose and vehement susceptibility to cold, cough and coryza with the nasal secretions, profuse catarrh, partial sweats, coldness of the extremities, etc., they feel as if they have wet stockings on. By and by come in palpitation and difficulty of breathing on ascending even a very small height, anæmic condition of the whole system, etc. In this condition you may need Calc. to correct the constitution and put her right. Pictures of different remedies like those of *Sulphur*, *Phosphorus*, *Tuberculinum* may also come in and you should compare between them and prescribe according to the totality. In the elderly females, Calc. symptoms may also come in but you should remember that Calc. is most needful during the stage of growth and development. In the case of advanced adults, if it is found from the history that during the earlier stages they had Calc. constitutions and Calc. symptoms, they should have been treated with Calc., which they

needed according to the totality of symptoms. Now, it would appear that there is a full-grown tree of Calc. carb. and there is every chance of the oncoming of Tubercular manifestations. I have seen that even if the Calc. totality is not clear and yet there is no indication of any other remedy, Cal. carb. may be given with confidence and this will abort the onward process of the dire disease.

Now *Bell*, *Phos*, *Silica* and *Sulphur* ought to be compared with Calc. carb. Little children very often manifest *Belladonna* group of symptoms during their dentition,—viz., high fever, frequent jerking, sleepy mood but inability to sleep, for as soon as the eyes are closed they startle up on seeing some frightful apparitions, vomiting of sour milk and intense heat in the head,—and along with these symptoms there may be convulsions, partial or general. All these symptoms might have frequently appeared in the past and a timely relief might have been brought each time with *Belladonna* in varied potencies. It appears that some deeper remedy is needed and you will be astonished to see the work of Calc. here. Calc. brings in a total change of the whole constitution of the child and there remains no chance of the above totality of symptoms to come in. Calc. carb. is therefore called complementary to *Belladonna* in other words, Calc. can finish the work commenced by *Bell*.

It is not a very difficult thing to distinguish between *Phosphorus* and Calc. *Phos* is generally thin, Calc. is plump, though sometimes thinly built patients also fit in Calcarea. *Phos.* has thin stools like Calc.

but they are not characteristically sour smelling. The main difference is this that Calc. is chilly and wants warmth. *Phos* is also chilly but wants cold in the head and stomach. *Phos* has good appetite and more thirst and is not dull like Calcarea, rather restless and brisk. Un-natural development is found in both the remedies though Calc. is more fleshy, whereas *Phos* is rather long. They meet in this that both have a tendency to Tuberculosis unless their patients are cured during their early life.

Silica should also be brought in for comparison. In order to bring in healthy growth and healthy development in the young ones, both Calc. and *Silica* may be needful, though each according to its own totality. Head-sweat of *Silica* extends to the whole scalp, Calc. has it specially in the forehead; *Silica* perspiration has sour smell as well as offensive, Calc. has it characteristically sour; *Silica* has the foot sweat offensive; *Silica* child is brisk and full of anger, Calc. child is dull and lazy; *Silica* has the tendency to ulceration and therefore *Hepar sulph* precedes *Silica*. Of course, in the ear pus of children, *Silica* may follow Calcarea. Lastly, *Silica* child is timid and cannot tolerate sounds.

Then *Sulphur* and Calc. should be compared, because it is most inconvenient for you to commit a mistake here, as Calc. can never precede *Sulphur*. Calc. may profitably be used after *Sulphur* but *Sulphur* does not follow Calc. Both the remedies have sour stools and sour vomit though the urgency at the early dawn, so as to drive the patient out of

bed is only to be found in *Sulphur*, Calc. has it not; *Sulphur* has the aggravation of stool symptoms from the early dawn up to 8 or 9 A. M., Calc. has it from afternoon to evening; *Sulphur* is full of burnings and wants cool air, Calc. is chilly and wants warmth, though both are aggravated from cold bath. Moreover, a *Sulphur* patient is lean and thin and stoop-shouldered and is rather brisk. Calc. has a tendency to be fat, over-fat, and dull. Lastly, *Sulph* has the goneness in stomach region characteristically at 10 or 11 A.M. and Calc. may have it any time, as all anti-psorics have this symptom in a general way. One word more, where Tubercular symptoms are far advanced, *Sulph*, *Phos* and *Silica* should be used with a great amount of caution, because at such a stage they do more harm than good and even if you cannot cure, you have no right to kill.

Tuberculinum,—If those remedies or some other properly selected remedies do not bring in relief because the Tubercular manifestations are already there, this remedy ought to be thought of and the symptom-picture is given here,—continued emaciation, daily fever, though low and slow, in fact consuming the patient, paroxysms of dry cough during rise of fever, frequent cold and coryza, the patient being unable to ascertain as to where and how he catches cold; temper highly irritable, always wanting to roam about, etc., etc. I have seen and so give you a fact from my personal experience that where this remedy has been correctly selected but is unable to give any relief to the patient, whatever you may say, there is hardly any chance of cure. *Tuberculi-*

num stands as a deep complementary to *Calc.*, *Silica*, *Sulph*, *Phos*, etc.

* Anti-psoric remedies may also be used during acute disorders, if the symptoms call for any of them. Suppose, the patient does not belong to the *Calc.* individualities, yet a few symptoms are there calling for the remedy,—and you may use it, as other Anti-psorics, with a full confidence. Where the patient also happens to have the *Calc.* constitution, it may act deeper and will abort the tendency of the patient to get the like symptoms in future.

Infantile Cholera.—The infantile cholera of *Calc. carb.* is generally very serious. It is a disease which generally manifests during the dentition period of children coming of sycotic parents. The common symptoms of cholera, e. g., vomiting, diarrhœa, intense thirst, etc, are all developed, and you are generally to find a remedy belonging to the Sycotic group. It is a truth of which you will have frequent verifications, as you grow up in your practice. Generally, *Æthusa*, *Ant. crude*, *Calc. carb*, *Croton tig*, *Ipec.*, *Kreosote*, *Thuja* and a few other sycotic remedies come up for selection. *Calc. carb* children cannot stand milk and it is either ejected by vomiting of sour, solid lumps or by sour loose stools. In some cases, the milk is immediately vomited in sour lumps and it is a particular symptom of *Calc. carb.* These symptoms of *Calc.* generally aggravate towards evening but in *Sulph* it is in the morning. *Ant. crude* children may also have infantile cholera and they have the following peculiarities, viz, white coated tongue, absolute want

of appetite and they have such an irritable mood that they will not let you feel the pulse. *Antimony* has a sort of drowsiness. *Æthusa* has also the infantile cholera but you are to remember the following picture. An *Æthusa* child has an inordinate appetite and as soon as it is nursed, it vomits up and falls into sleep, as if from sheer exhaustion. After a few minutes it wakes up urged by its appetite and as soon as it is nursed, the same vomiting, exhaustion and sleep come in and this sequence is oft-repeated unless and until it gets *Æthusa*. *Kreosote* child may have infantile cholera as well, but it gets dried up like an old man; its stomach becomes so much sensitive that it can retain no food whatever, and the food is vomited even a long time after nursing. Moaning and groaning and restlessness continue throughout the night and the child will not sleep unless caressed and fondled. The most painful dentition is to be expected in a *Kreosote* child. The other remedies that are required in a similar condition have hardly any likeness with *Calcarea*.

It is very likely that you may confuse *Mag. carb* with *Calc. carb* in a sour diarrhoea of children. A single point of difference if you can remember, there is no chance of mistake. You will find in *Mag carb* cases that the child has to exert itself violently after stool for the vehement tenesmus it gets as in *Merc.* cases. *Calcarea carb*, though having a sour stool, has rather an involuntary evacuation and hardly any tenesmus after the stool. Moreover, *Mag. carb* children have a very bad temper, even directing your attention to *Chamomilla*,—both are

restless, both are sensitive; *Chamomilla* may also have sour stool like *Mag. carb* but the essential difference is that *Mag carb* is chilly and *Chamo* is aggravated by heat.

You will generally find that a group of remedies, viz, *Nux vom*, *Sulph*, *Calc. carb*, and *Lycopodium* is advised to be used in case of weakness of the sexual organs as a result of excess. But you should carefully remember that no routinism is ever recommended in Homœopathy. Of course, symptoms come either of one or the other remedy of the group, but you should be always careful to select according to the symptom-totality present in the patient. I want to give you the idea where to use the one or the other remedy of the group. In *Nux*, you will get a violent sexual desire but capacity less, and the desire aggravates towards dawn or after a day-sleep; the peculiar constipation of *Nux* is an attending symptom, i.e., frequent urgency to stool but generally ineffectual. *Sulphur* generally comes in after *Nux*, if along with the *Nux* symptoms there is a predominance of night pollutions, along with which, an intense burning in the soles appears, for which the patient is compelled to seek cool places to keep his soles on. Both *Nux* and *Sulph* are aggravated by cold bath, though *Nux* is positively chilly and cannot stand open air, whereas *Sulph* invites it. *Calc.* has the weakness of the organ, which is generally relaxed, though mentally he has the strongest desire; in case, there is an excitement, yet during an embrace the patient finds himself unfit for the act,—either the organ gets totally relaxed or emission takes place too soon.

Not only so, on the following day he gets headache, vertigo and intense weakness of the knee-muscles (*China*, *Selenium*). *Lycopodium* has no excitement at all, almost no orgasm in the part; more useful towards the old age, and if there are attending symptoms like fullness after meals, specially, during the afternoon, and constipation, *Lycopodium* is all the more indicated. *Dioscorea* has also the pollution in the night and the appearance of the symptoms on the following day like Calc., but the latter is deeper, and the former is rather superficial.

Nervous System.—We do not always care to note the action of Calc. on the nervous system; mind is very much weak, and due to that, a Calc. carb patient cannot undertake any work that requires even ordinary exertions. This mental weakness the patient himself is fully conscious of, and he fears that he will go mad or is going mad and the neighbours are looking upon him with a great deal of suspicion, just as they do upon an insane person. Sometimes he feels that some body is walking along with him. As soon as he closes his eyes, he sees visions of things and people, but when he opens his eyes, those things seem to flitter away. *Bell* also has this sort of seeing apparitions and both *Bell* and Calc. get frightened from them, and the two remedies are complementary. *Petroleum* has also this sort of sensation that as if some body is always with him. As also in *Anacard*, as if some body is peeping over the shoulder from behind. *Thuja* should also be brought in for comparison, in which the patient feels as if somebody is always with him and moreover, he

gets vertigo on closing his eyes. In acute cases and conditions, generally *Bell* is useful but in chronic cases, the other remedies should be remembered and other symptoms in each, along with that peculiar sensation, will decide the choice. *Bell* and Calc. carb are generally called for in rather acute brain disorders as in Typhoid fevers, but the other remedies come in when the disorder appears as a settled condition of the brain.

You should expect disorders of sleep in a mental patient of Calc. carb. You know from the above that as soon as he closes his eyes he sees fearful visions. Moreover, before the on-coming of some impending mental aberrations, sleep appears to be altogether banished, and a constant fear of going insane as also that people have a suspicion in their minds that he is going mad,—this symptom is generally present. You will often find this type of insomnia as also the horrible visions in females, during their child-bed fevers.

There are cases of hysteria and even epilepsy in Calc. In these deeper types of diseases affecting the central spheres of the nervous system, you should always look to the *constitutional* totality of the patient. In a Calc. epilepsy you will meet an aura in the patient, as if something is rising from the abdominal or navel region, and immediately after the sensation the patient loses his consciousness; sometimes the patient feels as an aura that a small rat all on a sudden is coursing up on the arm. Some fright, sexual excesses or the re-percussion or suppression of some skin diseases may be had in the

history of these cases. *Sulphur* also may be needed in this condition and you know *Sulph* precedes *Calc.* Sometimes where dyspeptic symptoms are at the bottom of the epileptic fits and the same aura of a rat running up on the arm is present, *Nux vom.* may also be needed as also *Lyc.* Here also, the order is, first *Nux vom.*, then *Sulph*, afterwards *Calc.* and if necessary, *Lyc.* In the latter two remedies, sexual excesses are generally the cause. I tell you one thing that during the acute aggravation, i.e., when the fits are going on, you should not think of those deeper remedies but you should rather allay the condition with superficial remedies like *Bell*, *Hydrocyanic acid*, etc., and when the patient comes on a calmer condition and looks ordinarily well, you should administer *Calc.* or any of the other remedies, for the purpose of obtaining a perfect impression and an enduring effect. This is the rule of treatment, where a particular disease symptom appears every now and then or at intervals.

Now, I intend to put in a case of a female patient and her treatment. You will get almost a full picture of *Calc.* there.

Case Report.—Sreemati Hari Sundari Batabyal, aged 20 or 22, fair and fat and obviously healthy looking. She is the daughter of a Deputy Magistrate and the wife of a contractor making a very good income every month. She was very happily and richly brought up and bred up in childhood, as also no less richly treated in her husband's house. Fortunately she had never been under straitened circumstances, but for some reason or other she was

the most miserable creature in the world. You will find from the description and the treatment that followed that the case was a typical one and that you will also realise that the Homœopathic method of cure, which can give peace and happiness to such a patient is a veritable blessing of the Almighty. The following are the words of Sreemati Hari Sundari as given by herself, the unnecessary portions having been omitted by myself. 1921, 13th March.

"My father's place was at Behala, a suburb of Calcutta, but my father having been a Government employee of a rather high position, I was all along with him. The native place was badly malarious and so the whole family was all along with him. As he was posted in several Districts of Bihar, we were all more Beharees than Bengalees. Since I grew up in age, I remember to have frequent colds with difficulties of breathing, many times in the year. My father arranged for lots of treatment but to no effect.

I consumed more than hundred phials of a type of red Syrup but the susceptibility to cold did not leave me. I had all along caries in the teeth, which I still have. I felt that I was growing fat and, in proportion, chilly and sweaty. I was never apt for household works, as I was always tired. At the 12th year, I had my first menses and suffered for a long time from profuse flow. I was placed under the Civil Surgeon of Patna, a European I. M. S., who arranged for a few patent medicines, and it was found that my menstrual flow commenced gradually to

lessen and lessen until it finally stopped. Some-time about this time I was married and my husband having been a big contractor at Lucknow, I was also kept there. This time I grew abnormally fat. My father suddenly died of heart failure, and a few months after my mother also died of Apoplexy. These melancholic events told very heavily on my health. However, there was practically no treatment for the cessation of my menses, as many declared that it might have been due to pregnancy, so that my husband did not take much care. I think it was in 1919 or 1920, a *Vaid* of Lucknow saw me and declared, "the patient has got tumour in the uterus and probably she will go mad." I was much terrified, and followed his treatment for four or five months, but to no effect. I could not tolerate bath at the time nor can I do even now. A constant fear was there in my mind that perhaps I was going mad. This feeling added to the *Vaid's* prediction had made me much anxious. The condition of my system at this time may be put in a nut-shell, thus,—body badly corpulent, profuse perspiration even when at rest or lying, the perspiration being sour and sometimes even offensive, acidity felt after every meal, and milk, meat or fish could not be tolerated. Severe palpitation on ascending and susceptibility to frequent cold, open air is refreshing but could not be tolerated if slightly cold, bath highly aggravating. All these are still there but I think that I am more prostrated than formerly."

The husband of the patient, in course of his contractor's business, took charge of constructing a

stone bridge near about the E. I. Ry. Station, Gomoh, in the province of Bihar. I was then at Dhanbad where I used to practise both Law and Medicine under the special permission of the Hon'ble High Court of Patna. The patient was thus placed under my treatment. Upon the totality of symptoms as above, first of all, I thought of *Sulphur* and administered it in a single dose of 1000 in the evening of 16th March, 1921. I waited for a full month but to no effect. Of course, from the very beginning, I fixed upon Calc. carb as being the patient's medicine but I thought of giving *Sulphur* more on the principle of "preparing the soil", as well as for the purpose of anti-doting the so-called treatment of various nature previously followed. On 27th April, I put a dose of Calc. carb 1M., dry on the tongue, but up to the 18th May, no effect having been forthcoming and having a great confidence in my selection, I gave the remedy in 10M on 19th May. Eight or Ten days after, the curative effect commenced. A great deal of pain in the small of the back and abdomen, frequent bearing down pains attended with small fever appeared and after a day or two a few dark clots of blood began to come out ; after then, flow like that of healthy menses continued for five or six days more. After a month or so, another menstruation showed itself but no more after that. On the 3rd September Calc. carb 50M was given in the evening and on the following morning. Ten or twelve days after this there commenced a healthy flow and from that time on, regular menses continued.

You know that I could obtain no history or no

clue with regard to the heredity of the patient and there was nothing in the patient's own life history. But wonder of wonders,—on the 4th December information came that the patient's whole body was thick with violently itching eczemas except in the face and head. On the information slip was written,—“Now I can fairly bathe but cold bath is intolerable due to eczema. If in any way cold water touches the eczema portion, on will come the violent fits of itching, which make me restless and in order to relieve the fits I must have to sprinkle rather hot water over the parts. Please do the needful”. I sent *Rhus tox* from 200 to 1000, which reduced the troubles very much though could not cure the patient completely. I had to give *Bacillinum* 1M, which completed the cure.

After the cure of the patient I had to take up the treatment of a rickety son named Jogeshwar of hers but as description would be out of place here I refrain from giving the details.

Typhoid fever,—At the first onset of the fever, it is generally found that it tallies with *Bell* symptoms, i. e., intense heat with red face, patient is sleepy but cannot sleep and just startles up on entering into sleep as if terrified, throbbing carotids, etc, etc. If you administer *Belladonna*, the fever course does not stop but only the intensity of the fever is a bit calmed down, a slower course is taken up and typhoid symptoms supervene; on closing the eyes the patient startles up as if horrified and cries aloud, tympany comes in with occasional loose stool of sour smell, lies almost unconscious with occasional restlessness,

and the patient stretches his hands as if to catch something in the air (with the above group of symptoms if there is constipation, 4 to 8 P. M. aggravation, etc., *Lycopodium* may be needed). Many children who get fever with frequent convulsions and are everytime relieved by *Bell*, are permanently cured, if Calc. carb be given. In Typhoid fevers of Calc. carb, sometimes urticaria appears on the skin. Even when there are no fevers, Calc. carb patients may have urticaria every now and then. In acute conditions of urticaria, *Apis*, *Ars*, *Rhus*, etc. may be needed, but the chronic tendency to get urticaria may need Calc. carb,—of course, totality of symptoms must decide the choice in every case. Even ringworms that specially appear in the hairy parts of the mouth may require this remedy, though *Mezereum* and *Cicuta* have also that. Calc. has its use in abscesses, specially in deep abscesses. These abscesses do not appear or mature up externally but have the tendency to suppurate within the deep muscles. Calc. cures the predisposition of getting abscesses and the blood is purified and does not manufacture these things. In this sphere it should be compared with *Hep. sulph.* *Hepar* has characteristically intense tenderness and profuse pus. A case of a bad type of abscess is given below.

Case report.—On 13th November, 1929, the treatment of a child of two years, the grand-son of Dr. Haridayal Chakravarty of 52, Sarada Chatterji's lane, Bentra, Kadamtollah, near Calcutta, was entrusted to me. The child had got a big abscess just over the heart-region, a big swelling like a small pillow but

without colour, with extreme tenderness attended with a continued fever ranging between 103.5° and 104.6° , the child having been highly restless and anxious. The child was first taken to the Medical College Hospital, and out of curiosity of the case, a few surgeons assembled there and examined it. They declared in so many terms that they could do nothing as operation was impossible, considering the dangerousness of the spot as well as the condition of the child. Dr. Haridayal babu, the child's mother and father were much disappointed and anxious and they called me in. They wept aloud before me when I was examining the child, having been extremely terrified at the announcement made by the worthy surgeons. At the sight of the abscess I was none the less terrified, but having always had a deep and undaunting confidence in Homœopathy, I started upon enquiring about the child's individual symptoms. The affectionate grand-father Dr. Haridayal babu had already given, rather in a routine way, *Bell* 30 and 200, but to no appreciable effect. Just as I asked for the symptoms, the good mother volunteered to say,—“Father, the child really floods its pillow with sweat of his head during sleep at night, would not take cold bath, gets frequent sour stools, and I do not know why, its urine gives a white colour to the cemented floor”. Moreover, I observed that the child was plump and fleshy. I at once jumped upon *Calc. carb.*, and gave IM, two doses, two hours apart and stopped. Wonder of wonders, the fever heat commenced daily to decrease and on the seventh day the fever came down to normal and the tremendous big swelling was

no where. It is needless to tell you that the real wonder lies with the Law of Similars. You will get cases like this very frequently in your practice and you will wonder every time if you will scrupulously follow the curative law.

I cannot refrain from giving you the description of the treatment of a barren woman as in the following.

Case report.—Wife of Sj. Bishwa Nath Roy of Mirjapur, very near our native place, aged 25 or 26, having had no issue up-to-date was placed under my treatment. I was at the time working as the Head Master in the Rajagram A. S. School and used to live in the attached Boarding house. The husband on his way back from Vishenpur came to me and gave me descriptions of all the inner and outer symptoms and condition of his dear wife and wailed over her barrenness. So far as I could gather, I had a pre-sentiment in my mind that she had been a Calc. carb patient. I thought within myself that the barrenness is a disorder in the female organs and why should it not be removed by virtue of a remedy used in high potencies, which is truly homœopathic to the case. Then I asked the husband what was the present condition of her menses and he replied,—“Oh, the flow has long been stopped and her abdomen is bulging out and many people say that she has got a tumour there.” Of course, the information about the suspected mal-growth did not upset me or my prescription of Calc. carb, because the malgrowth, if any, must have been the *result* of the disease but the constitutional remedy as it was, must remain all the same. Accord-

ingly I gave for her Calc. carb. 10M, two doses, to be given to her in two consecutive mornings. After twenty-five or twenty-six days, she had the return of her menses and the flow was re-established and it continued naturally every month. After the fourth catamenia, information came that she was *en cient*, and she gave birth to a healthy child in due course. I just forget to mention that in the eighth month of her pregnancy I gave her another dose of the remedy in the same potency, ostensibly with the view of correcting the disorder, if any, in the child within the womb. It was a happy news to learn that she gave birth to a healthy child which remained all along quite healthy and had the transitions, viz, dentition, learning to walk and to talk, the proportionate growth and development of all its parts quite natural and healthy.

* You should know that the prophylactic treatment of the child still in the womb is quite possible,—in case the parents are miasmatic. *Calc. carb*, *Lycopodium*, *Psorinum*, *Medorrhinum* and, in fact, most of the deep-acting and miasmatic remedies may be used in the light of symptom-totality of the parents. How to proceed in these cases and how to collect the symptom-totality as a true guide to the proper selection have been given in my book "Chronic Miasms and their remedies to meet them" which you may consult and study for benefit.

CALCAREA CHARACTERISTICS.

The *Calc. carb* patient is chilly and wants warmth and warm room. Being weak and timid he gets tired and exhausted on the slightest exertions. Fair, fat and plump, much more sweaty specially in the forehead (in the whole head, *Silica*) with cold extremities and sweats in palms and soles. The *Calc.* child wets the pillow during sleep with its head-sweats and has rather a painful dentition. There is a characteristic delay in getting out the teeth, in learning to walk and speak, and it has sour stools and cannot digest milk. The *Calc.* child characteristically cannot assimilate milk and its preparations. The bone development is anything but normal, the bones getting soft and the spinal column curved; it gets tympany often and characteristically cannot tolerate cold, and gets frequent coryza. The *Calc.* child often gets convulsions during fever (*Bell.*, during acute symptoms and *Calc. carb.*, in order to cure the tendency to convulsions). It often gets loose sour stools (constipated, *Lyc.*). The *Calc.* patient, specially the females, have palpitation on ascending even a few steps. The first menses rather come on early and go on for a few months with rather a profuse flow each time, and then the flow is stopped and as a result thereof a vicarious flow through the mouth or nose may appear and if not cured at the stage, lung-phthisis may develop. The little children are found to manufacture worms, have restless sleep and have terrible dreams and make peculiar movements of the mouth during sleep. They often get milky urine or at least produce white colour upon the floor when dried up.

Potency.—During acute symptoms 30 and 200 seem to work nicely well, but with a view to change the constitution and the abnormal miasmatic tendencies much higher potencies, even to highest, are often needful.

CALCAREA ARS.

Calc. ars. is a combination of the two deep-acting remedies, viz, *Calc. carb* and *Arsenicum alb.* If in the constitution of *Calcarea*, a great deal of prostration, weakness and exhaustion appear as a result of long suffering from disease symptoms, the *Calc. ars.* patient is likely to be manufactured, provided, the following characteristics are found. (1) *The heart violently palpitates on ascending even a small height.* (2) *The patient cannot tolerate even the slightest cold and cold air.* (3) *Violent exhaustion from even the slightest exertion.* It is hardly ever indicated in acute diseases.

Headache.—*Calc. ars.* has a peculiar type of headache in this that if the patient lies pressing over the side of the head which aches, the headache will, after some time, pass on to the other side. Then again, if the patient changes side, the same thing will occur, i.e., the ache will again turn to the other side. So that, a continual change of side is the characteristic of the *Cal. ars.* headache. *Lac. can.* has it but in this remedy, the headache changes sides *irrespective* of the patient's lying on the affected side.

Kidneys.—I will give you one thing which must be remembered of this remedy. If in the course of a continued fever or Typhoid, it is found that the patient has got a great deal of tenderness and touchiness in the region of kidneys, you should certainly think of this remedy, if, of course, some other remedy is not clearly indicated. Always remember high grade of tenderness in the kidney regions, so that no touch is possible.

Malaria.—If on account of Malarial fevers coming off and on, and perhaps each time the usual suppressive treatment has been followed and the case has turned deep chronic, in that case you may think of Calc. ars., provided, the following symptoms are present, viz., great prostration, dry cough, much sweat, sour undigested loose stools, palpitation upon the slightest exertions, so as to indicate weakness of the organs, swelling of the extremities, bloodlessness, etc., and more specially, if you understand that the patient was of Calc. carb base. It is needless to add that the patient is chilly and has neither desire for milk, nor can he digest it.

Epileptic fits.—Of course, you need not expect that Calc. ars. can ever be the remedy for Epilepsy, but if you find that the constitutional symptoms of the remedy are there in your patient, you can rely upon this deep-acting remedy for the cure. As an aura, the patient feels a pricking sensation and a gone feeling in the heart region.

I expect you to remember the characteristic make-up of this remedy as given in the beginning.

Potency,—6, 30 and 200th are the potencies generally used. But the higher potencies may be used in deeper chronic conditions.

CALCAREA FLUORICA.

It is one of the Tissue remedies of Dr. Schuessler. We also use those remedies but on our own Law of Similars. Whenever there is a similarity between the symptoms of the patient and one of those remedies, we use it. So, our use is purely *Homœopathic* and not upon the basis of "Tissue-remedy" principle.

It is remarkable that Calc. fluorica patient is always aggravated from cold and he does not want cold and cold air, and when the climate turns cold on account of change of season, as also during rains, the patient is aggravated. He wants to keep himself in warmth. Moreover, movement gives him relief and rest aggravates.

If with these modalities any patient has a tumour or any mal-growth which has no tendency to cure, i.e., it is neither absorbed nor does it suppurate but goes on hardening and hardening, Calc. fluorica may cure. *Silica* comes in as a complementary which is also chilly but timid.

In Rheumatism, specially in the small of the back, this remedy is highly useful on condition of the patient's having those modalities. *Rhus tox* might have been previously used in the beginning but it

could not complete the cure when this remedy may be thought of. The first movement is aggravating but a continuous movement brings in relief,—this symptom is found in both.

The gum is diseased, painful and the touch of food particles gives intolerable pain, a symptom which is found in this remedy.

Potency,—When given on Homœopathic principles, 30th and 200th are generally used. I have no experience with the higher potencies of this remedy.

CALCAREA IODATUM.

It is a combination of the two deep-acting remedies, viz., *Calcarea* and *Iodine*. So that the remedy acts very deeply. It is often needful in the Tubercular sphere. It is a remarkable fact that most of our remedies act only superficially in the tubercular system but if selected on Homœopathic principles, this remedy has a sustaining and deep action.

It is unfortunate that such a deep combination has had no proving, so that finer symptoms have not been developed. However, you are to remember that the *Iodine* element produces an inordinate appetite which is actually an important characteristic of the remedy. Calc. iod. patient is tired and exhausted. It has profuse sweat and it acts upon the glandular system of the human body. The acute disorders do not need such a deep-acting medicine, and they

can be met with *Bell*, *Merc*, etc. but where a deep tendency is to be met, the deeper group of remedies, viz, *Iodine*, *Calc. iod.*, *Baryta*, *Hep*, etc. are to be thought of.

Case Report,—Sj. Shyam Sundar Adhikary, aged 31 or 32, an inhabitant of Lakhmikantapur near Lakhmipasa, East Bengal, came under my treatment in May, 1930. He was a B. A. student at the time. He came of a rich family and was brought up and bred on a very rich style. I must say that his wealth was really a curse for him, because he placed himself under the Allopathic treatment of various physicians of Calcutta having been led up under the impression that the high style and gorgeous demonstration of that method of treatment must be effective, but as a matter of fact, he had been losing and losing all the while.

A dry cough, daily slow rise of temperature towards evening, extreme exhaustion, free perspiration specially when lying during night, the intense desire to walk about, which lessens the sweat but highly exhausts, tendency to frequent colds and cough, swelling of the throat glands and soreness there, aggravation within closed doors, etc, etc, were the symptoms and conditions. In 1925, 1928 and 1929 he got right-sided Pneumonia, every time during the winter and any how he could keep his skin and bone together and did not die. Of course, every time Allopathic treatment was followed. I quote his own wordings from my Case Diary.

“Actually there is no number of the Cod-liver Oil phials which I have consumed during the con-

valescent periods after Pneumonia under the advice of the attending physicians. But the extreme weakness of my right chest and the deep tendency to take cold could not be removed. Wonder of wonders is that I myself want cold but cannot stand it. Moreover, I desire extreme cold foods even as cold as ice but I am aggravated thereby. I have no mental ease and do not feel myself comfortable at any time and you will kindly see that I am gradually wasting and wasting."

Upon the above condition and the totality of symptoms Calc. iod. was the only remedy that could be selected. At first 30th and then 200th evinced a continual improvement and the slow fever was stopped after five or six weeks, after which the improvement was rather accelerated. After the fourth month a dose of 1000th potency was needful. The dates having not been recorded in my Diary cannot be quoted here.

Due to want of provings, the higher potencies cannot be used. However, it is peculiar that the Calc. iod. patient, though so very chilly, has an inordinate craving for cold drinks and cold foods. I have extensively used 6, 30, 200 and in a few cases 1000, and I think the 200th is most effective. Of course, this is my surmise and opinion and need not be strictly followed.

CALCAREA PHOS.

This remedy is composed of two of the most deep-acting remedies, and is specially useful in infantile cases. It should be considered regarding patients of very young age and of adults, specially young men and young women. It is desirable that it is more extensively used.

Patients of younger years are found in many cases lacking in their physical and mental developments due to the sycotic miasm inherited from their ancestors. If symptoms agree, this remedy may be very much beneficial in their cases. The following peculiarities should be remembered.

(1) These patients are found to suffer much during their dentition, get emaciated and their transitions are much delayed; in other words, the dentition is delayed, the development of power to speak and to stand is also much delayed; the abdomen gets sunken (the abdomen gets distended like an inverted saucer,—*Calc. carb*). They also suffer from offensive diarrhœa and accumulation of flatus.

(2) The skull bone is found to be very thin, and fontanelles do not naturally unite; in some cases, they unite and again open.

(3) The spine is so weak that the child cannot keep the back straight. This weakness is specially felt in the neck portion of the spine. Sometimes the spine gets inclined towards the left. The child cannot keep the head straight due to the weakness of his neck.

(4) A sort of colic pain is found in the Calcarea phos children, which comes up after every eating. There is a frequent desire for food with inability to digest.

(5) During school days, the Calc. phos children, male or female, are found to suffer from a headache.

(6) The disease symptoms aggravate from thinking of them (they are relieved from thinking of them,—*Camphor*).

These are the important characteristic symptoms of Calc. phos, and they should be carefully remembered.

Nature,—The system is weak and bloodless, abdomen is concave and the transitions, viz, the dentition, learning to sit, stand and walk, and the development of mental faculties are all belated ; the fontanelles remain open, the skull bone remains thin and soft for a long time. This type of constitution is called Scrofula or Rachitis. Enfeebled body and mind, no desire for work, the patient keeps idle all the time. Aggravation from even the slightest cold, from movement and from physical and mental labour ; there is a relief from warmth and remaining idle. Though there is a constant desire for eating, yet the patient loses all the time (*Abrot, Iodine, Nat. mur.*) The animal heat is wanting, and hence a constant desire for warmth. Calc. phos has also rheumatic pains aggravated from cold.

A *comparison* should be made with a few remedies.

Calc. carb,—The patient of this remedy is fair and

fat, whereas that of Calc. phos is thin, though both have soft bones and want of natural growth, the abdomen of Calc. carb is bulging, whereas that of Calc. phos is concave. Calc. carb stools smell sour and are whitish in colour, whereas those of Calc. phos are warm, badly offensive and come out with a good deal of flatus. These are the main distinctions which ought to be remembered.

Iodine,—Both *Iodine* and Calc. phos, are alike in voracious appetite with steady emaciation of the patient, but the characteristic difference lies in this that *Iodine* is hot and therefore wants cold, whereas Calc. phos is chilly and so always wants warmth.

Nat. mur.,—Like Calc. phos, the *Natrum* patient eats a good deal but steadily emaciates. The difference lies in this that *Natrum mur* wants cold and has characteristic constipation, whereas Calc. phos desires warmth and has characteristic loose stools.

Psorinum,—Both are chilly, and both emaciate in spite of abnormal appetite and a good deal of eating. But a *Psorin* patient has characteristic skin diseases, whereas Calc. phos has no such peculiarity. The emaciation of *Psorinum* comes in characteristically after the suffering of an acute disease, whereas that of Calc. phos is a constant factor. Both have offensive stools, though *Psorinum* is a highly dejected patient.

Silica,—*Silica* and Calc. phos look very much alike. But *Silica* has disproportionately large head which has always a profuse sweat. Moreover, there

is offensive perspiration in its palms, soles and armpits. Of course, both are chilly.

Baryta carb.,—The point of being late in learning to walk is in both the remedies, but the difference lies in this that in Calcarea, on account of the want of proper development, the legs themselves are weak, whereas in *Baryta* there is no such *local* weakness but due to the patient's weakness in the brain, he does not know *how* to walk.

The Disease-symptoms of Calc. phos children.,—The child is very thin with abdomen sunken or concave, the head a bit large in proportion, the bones all soft and thin, specially the cranial ones, the fontanelles are open or unite very late, dentition delayed and slow, the child is very late in learning to walk, neck so thin and weak that he is unable to make the head erect, the spine also is very weak and gets inclined, specially, towards the left; the child frequently wants to eat and has colic after eating and it cannot digest any form of milk which it vomits, has frequent stools of green and undigested type accompanied with offensive flatus; generally affected by cold or damp cold, so that it wants to remain in warmth and has no desire for movement. The totality of all these symptoms and conditions is called "Marasmus", and Calc. phos can remedy it. If Calc. phos does not complete, Silica may be given as a complementary.

Symptoms in Adult age.,—From mental labours headache comes in the young boys and girls. In this headache patient does not want to move but to re-

main still and alone. Any sort of pressure on the head aggravates but washing the head with cold water relieves (pressure and warmth relieve,—*Mag. phos*).

Rheumatic pains are found in this remedy to come in during cold and damp days. The pains may be fixed at a particular place or may change the locality. The legs and the small of the back are particularly affected. It is to be remembered that even the slightest change of seasons, specially from warm to damp, is highly aggravating in this remedy.

For the purpose of getting the broken bones united, if *Symphytum* does not complete, this remedy should be thought of.

Modalities,—Apart from other things noted above, its aggravation from damp cold is a great characteristic.

Potency,—6, 30, and 200 are mostly used.

CALCAREA SULPH.

Calcarea sulph belongs to the tissue remedy group of Dr. Schuessler and has no satisfactory proving. It is used more in the light of clinical symptoms as observed by some of our renowned physicians. So, no implicit reliance can be placed on it, as on other remedies that are well proved.

Its work seems to stand on the mid-way between *Hepar sulph* and *Silica*. Where in an inflammation you desire evacuation of the pus, and hasty cure, you are to use one of the remedies, viz, *Hepar sulph*, *Mercurius*, *Calcarea sulph* and *Silica* according to the individual totality of the case. It has generally been observed that the low potencies of the remedies help the formation of pus and the higher ones minimise it and help cure. Sometimes high potencies abort without the formation of pus at all.

You should carefully differentiate between the remedies of this group. So, let us compare *Bell*, *Merc*, *Hepar*, *Calcarea*, *Silica* and *Sulph*. So long as there is hardness, and pains are throbbing, aching, stitching, etc., the spot being red,—it is *Bell*. *Bell* may abort the whole thing without any suppuration, but in case there is a tendency for pus-formation, then *Hepar sulph* high, i.e, not lower than 200th, is to be given. *Hepar* high may also abort within two or three days. Both *Bell* and *Hepar* want warmth, are aggravated from cold, and both have sensitiveness in the affected spot. But suppose the course of pus-formation is evidently on, and if warmth ameliorates locally, it is still *Hepar*, but if cold ameliorates, it is then *Merc*

sol ; but in this case, i.e., where the formation of pus is to be accelerated, any of those remedies should be used low and a dose should be given every three or four hours. The result will be that the boil or abscess will burst and pus is evacuated. Now in order to hasten cure, *Hepar* or *Calcarea sulph* may have to be used. *Hepar* has intense sensitiveness, and *Calcarea sulph* has yellowish, thick and lumpy pus. If the process goes on and on, and the pus gets thinner, *Silica* may be thought of. *Silica* works very slowly and so it is requisitioned in case of old and persistent sinus. You know *Silica* is chilly, and there is hardly any sensitiveness on the spot. *Calcarea sulph* patients like cold.

In order to cure the *susceptibility* to get boils and abscesses *Calcarea sulph* is excellent, of course, if the symptoms correspond. It can cure also sinus as *Silica* can, but the modalities are opposite. For the cure of susceptibility, the remedies, viz., *Anthracinum*, *Pyrogen*, *Calcarea sulph*, *Hepar sulph*, *Silica*, etc, may be needful according to the individual peculiarities.

Potency,—30, 200 are in general use. But higher potencies may also be needed.

CAMPHOR.

Camphor is a wonderful remedy. Its symptoms and peculiarities should be very carefully understood and remembered. This remedy having an antidotal relation to most of the remedies of our *Materia*

Medica, should be kept, unless potentised, quite separate from other homœopathic remedies. The mother tincture or crude camphor should always be kept in altogether a separate room.

Icy coldness of the whole body, a perfect picture of collapse and *sinking of strength*,—all these come *suddenly*. The collapse and coldness come all on a sudden and sometimes cannot be accounted for. For example, in Cholera, the number of evacuations, either by purging or vomiting, may be very few or sometimes the evacuation has not yet begun, yet the patient has coldness and exhaustion to a wonderful degree.

The coldness of Camphor should be properly understood. The patient is so cold that if you touch him, it seems as if he is a dead man. But the wonderful peculiarity is that in spite of this tremendous coldness, the *patient cannot tolerate covering*. Tongue is cold, breath is cold, the whole body is cold, yet absolute aversion to covering. *Carbo veg* and *Secale* have also coldness but *Carbo veg* has this peculiarity that its extremities are cold, from elbow and knee downwards. Moreover, *Carbo* has cold sweat on the forehead and requires constant fanning and has distension of the abdomen. *Secale* has intense burning,—he feels as if sparks of fire are falling upon his body and he gets relieved from slowly moving the hand over the body. These three remedies are averse to covering in spite of their coldness, but there is a shade of difference between them. *Secale* is not only averse to covering but wants heavy fanning, the reason being that the patient feels want

of oxygen, which seems to be supplied by the outer air by fanning. Of course, sense of burning is there in all the three but *Secale* has it highest. *Carbo veg* has it with want of oxygen and difficulty of breathing and Camphor has extreme coldness externally. One peculiarity of Camphor must have to be remembered, viz, when Camphor patient has heat in the body, then he wants heat and covering, but when he is cold in his body, he wants more cold and gets relief from cold. The desire of Camphor for cold is in proportion to the coldness of his body.

Cholera,—Camphor has cholera,—it is a fact which is generally well known. Two things you are to remember in this connection. In Camphor cholera, the attack is *sudden* and there is intense coldness in the patient's body. A confusion is possible with *Cuprum met* and *Veratram alb*. But if you remember the main characteristics of the three, you cannot possibly make a mistake. Camphor is intensely *cold*, *Cuprum met* has violent *cramps* and in *Veratram* the evacuations are *profuse*. Where the patient's attack is sudden and there is hardly any evacuation or only very scanty, it is Camphor. Where the patient violently screams on account of the severe cramps in his abdomen and in the muscles of his legs, there *Cuprum* is needed, but where the purging and vomiting are profuse, *Veratram alb*. is to be thought of. Of course, exhaustion and coldness are in all the three remedies. But the main characteristics of each are to be remembered and selection made accordingly.

Remittent Fever,—The remittent fever of Camphor is something wonderful. The patient is doing his usual work, no premonitory symptoms are there, all on a sudden a violent shivering comes on and he throws off the coverings of his body, opens all the windows and has a violent desire for open air ; but as soon as the hot stage comes in, he closes the windows, takes warm clothings on and has a violent desire for heat. After some time, small sweat appears in the forehead and armpit, and the fever goes off. You should note that a Camphor fever patient is *tubercular*. In Camphor fever, mother tincture is almost useless. So far as my experience goes Camphor 200 is highly useful in fever cases.

Coryza,—Camphor has coryza but the proper time for its use is very hard to be detected. During the time when the patient feels cold after the exposure and so long as he does it, Camphor will be suitable. But as soon as the *reaction* comes in and the patient feels hot, Camphor is out of place, when perhaps *Acon* or *Bell* may be needed according to symptoms but Camphor never.

Cramps,—In cramps, Camphor may be needed when the patient is cold, exhausted and cannot tolerate any covering notwithstanding the coldness. The condition of the patient of Camphor cramps must be taken to be very serious.

Nature and Constitution,—The Camphor patient has an intense susceptibility to cold, and so long the coldness is there he cannot tolerate any covering. This is the characteristic of Camphor which must have to be always remembered.

In measles and scarlet fever cases, where the patient has the characteristic coldness, exhaustion and aversion to covering, Camphor will do much in getting the eruptions out. In spite of the coldness outside, there is a sense of violent burning inside. The coldness and extreme sensitiveness to cold are characteristic. There is sometimes insatiable thirst but the water drunk is instantly vomited.

It is a pity that Camphor is hardly ever used in chronic cases. The reason is that its nature is very difficult to be detected.

Potency,—In cholera and for the purpose of aborting acute cold and coryza, the mother tincture should better be used. In other cases it should be given in potencies, 30th and 200th. For the purpose of changing the constitution higher potencies are needed.

Case Report,—A case of Camphor is related. S. J. M. A., B. L., a Deputy Magistrate of Bihar, aged 43, came under my treatment in 1923 when I was at Dhanbad. His worthy and accomplished wife was very much anxious for his treatment. According to their request, the treatment was continued under strictest secrecy. His good wife gave down the case.

“Though my husband is not at all irritated, yet he appears to be very much dissatisfied with everybody in the family. As a matter of fact we have not been able to ascertain as to what he wants. Sometimes he would insist upon opening all the doors and windows during the night sleep and then again he likes to close them down. My little children are

highly affected on account of his whimsical desires. Every moment he would change his likes and dislikes. He is very much chilly. Nasal coryza and infiltration of his lungs are a constant feature. He came to Dhanbad with the intention of keeping here for a year, but in course of 2 or 3 months he likes to change the arrangement and go somewhere else. Sometimes during cold days of winter he would go along for a walk absolutely bare-bodied, and then again during hot and sultry days, he would pile up clothings. As a special feature, cough, coryza, difficulty of breathing are his constant companion, but he would not follow the directions of any physician for more than a few days only. Lots of Cod Liver Oil and other Patent medicines have been stocked in the house but he would not use any of them for a length of time. On slightest labour he gets too much sweat and takes a long time to evacuate the urine."

The patient himself gave the following :—

"In fact I myself do not understand what I want. Thirst I have none. When I see people drink water, I feel I shall drink also but I have no desire for it. I find one peculiar thing that when I sit in Court, I must have to wear and then again take off my coat and shirt for three or four times. I can tell you the reason for this. When I wear them and keep them on for some time, I just feel a hot vapour rising within me, and in case I do not put them off instantly, I get difficulty of breathing and a sort of anxiety. Then again, after fifteen minutes to half an hour, I get a chilly feeling and horripilation, even shivering and trembling of the extremities ; sometimes

there will be a sneezing and watery secretion from the nose, so that I must have to cover again. The pleaders, muktears and the clerks of the Court take me as a curious sort of man. There is another disease symptom from which I suffer off and on. It is the pain in the posterior part of my head, which is very troublesome, but it is ameliorated by nose-bleeding which comes up four or five days after suffering from the pain. It is aggravated from mental labour, and relieved by rest and bleeding”.

On the above symptoms and peculiarities three remedies will come to your mind, viz., *Ars.*, *Tuberculinum bov.* and *Camphor.* But *Ars.* has no relief from discharge, rather there is an aggravation from it. Moreover, the mental condition of *Ars.* is not so changeful as described above. I gave *Tuberculinum bovinum* 1M but no benefit was obtained. At last I made a fair study of the case and fixed upon *Camphor* and by 1000th, 5M and 10M potencies of the medicine, I could cure this wonderful patient in course of a year.

Of course, every body is conversant with the use of *Camphor* in acute cases, but its use in deep chronic cases is hardly ever known, and so the case is described in full and put in here.

I think I should add one thing regarding this remedy. You know crude *Camphor* is highly exciting in sexual sphere, but the constitutional patients of *Camphor* are found to have any of two extremes, viz., absolute impotence or abnormal excitement.

CANNABIS INDICA.

This remedy is prepared from our indigenous hemp. *Cannabis sativa* is also a type of hemp. None of them has any deep action, though symptoms are sometimes found.

Mind,—The mental condition of *Cannabis Indica* is to be noted. The mind of the patient has a peculiar type of buoyancy. It seems to be engaged in various types of fancies and imaginations, so much so that the patient appears like a mad man. Where he should remain silent and sober, the patient would laugh and be merry, whereas when he should lament, he would laugh immoderately. The patient feels that he hears some body speaking and sees the appearances of many persons who are long dead. Another peculiarity is that he cannot put all these thoughts into order and most of them are lost into oblivion.

There is another peculiarity that a small time or a small distance appears to him to be very long.

Head,—There is a peculiar condition that is felt by the patient in the head,—the skull is going off and coming down again, as if the brain is opening and shutting. It is a very curious symptom but it has been actually obtained in patients.

Gonorrhœa,—The remedy is frequently used in Gonorrhœa. The symptoms are,—*before, during* and *after* urination there is felt a burning; frequent urgency to urinate; the quantity of urine is profuse; and after the end of urination drops of urine are found to evacuate; pus that is discharged is yellowish; and there is frequent excitement of the

sexual organ. But it has no depth of action, and so cannot permanently cure.

In the beginning of insanity if the mental symptoms appear as stated, it may do some good.

Modalities.—Cold water, open air, bath and rest are relieving; sometimes the patient feels better when walking but very soon gets tired.

Potency,—6,30,200 are in general use.

CANNABIS SATIVA.

This remedy also is prepared from a kind of hemp growing in Europe and America, and it has more extensive use than *Cannabis Indica*.

There is a curious mental symptom of this remedy, which is that the patient feels that something is dropping down from a particular portion of his body. This abnormal sensation may be felt in any organ or in any portion and it is troublesome for the patient.

In *Gonorrhœa*, if the peculiar symptoms of this remedy are found in a patient, it can cure and minimise the time of suffering. The main symptom is pain and soreness in the urethra for which the patient has to walk with legs apart. There is violent inflammation and consequent burning, while urinating, extending up to bladder. The burning is aggravated towards the end of urination or just after its finish. It should be noted that in *Gonorrhœa*, mere burning is a *common* symptom, and a prescription should not be made unless a special characteristic is found. The

special characteristic of this remedy has been given above. Sometimes bloody urine may also be found.

In the first stage of Gonorrhœa, if there is restlessness with fear of death, *Aconite* is to be given ; in case of bloody urine and intense tenesmus, it is *Merc. cor* ; but if the above special characteristic is found, this remedy is to be given. There are many who make a confusion with *Cantharis* at this stage. But in *Cantharis*, the peculiar characteristic is that the patient has persistent and frequent urgency to urinate, attended with severe burning during the time. If you remember this, there can be no confusion between the remedies.

After *Cannabis Sativa* has done all that it can do, *Merc. cor* or *Merc. sol* or *Arg. nit* may come in, according to the-then symptom-totality. Where there is no burning, but pus-like things are discharged, *Arg. nit* may finish the case.

This remedy is hardly ever used in any other sphere than in the first stage of Gonorrhœa.

Potency,—6, 30 and 200 are in general use.

CANTHARIS.

Anti-psoric }
 &
Anti-sycotic }

Cantharis is a remedy prepared from a Spanish fly, and is much useful in its sphere. It may be taken as an anti-psoric remedy.

Its peculiar feature is the acute and violent burning. Though the sphere of its action may be any organ or any portion of the human body, yet the

central sphere is the urinary organ. Its essential feature is (1) intense *acuteness*, and (2) violent *speed* of its action. *Constant urgency to urinate and violent burning with cutting and stitching pains, before, during and after urination attended with a violent tenesmus all through.* The patient expects that even if a small quantity of urine comes out, he may obtain relief and he goes on straining, but a drop or two of blood or bloody urine comes out, which is so *burning* and *hot* that he feels as if molten lead comes out. Then, again, intolerably constant urging with tenesmus and burning makes the patient shiver and shudder, sometimes he loses the consciousness. This is the picture of Cantharis, and all these symptoms are due to the violent inflammation in the urinary organs.

Gonorrhœa,—In some cases of true sycotic Gonorrhœa, symptoms of Cantharis are found. Whenever the patient is of a good and robust constitution, he generally shows the symptoms of this remedy, when attacked with Gonorrhœa.

In other diseases where Cantharis is indicated, you must find a condition of inflammation. For example,—In a case of erysipelas, you will find, if Cantharis is indicated, violent burning during urination, frequent urgency to urinate with tenesmus, attended with lots of blebs and violent burning in those blebs on being touched by hand. In any other case of eruption, the same condition is found, namely excessive burning, when touched by hand.

In blood dysentery if the above urinary symptoms are found along with mucous stool, like scraping of the intestines, Cantharis may be indicated. The

violence of Cantharis cases is noteworthy and is also found in *Merc. cor* and *Aconite*. The points of difference are,—you know, in *Merc. cor.*, more blood is found than in Cantharis, and in *Aconite*, violent restlessness and fear of death are noted.

Comparison.—I think there is a chance of confusion of this remedy with *Apis* and *Ars. alb.* So a bit of comparison may be necessary. In *Apis*, though there is an inflammation in the urinary organs, it is never so violent as in Cantharis. An *Apis* patient has rather drowsiness, whereas a Cantharis patient has the restlessness, even like that of *Ars. alb.* In erysipelas and the like inflammatory diseases, *Apis* has stinging pains, so that the patient has sudden and violent crying very often. In Cantharis cases, burning is more prominent, specially when the inflammatory spot is touched by hands. In *Apis* erysipelas, the swelling is more prominent, whereas in Cantharis it is the burning in the vesicular blebs which is characteristic. In *Ars.* cases, there is a blending of weakness, exhaustion and fear of death with hardly any inflammatory condition. In *Rhus tox.*, the patient is violently restless and wants warmth, both locally as well as constitutionally.

The thirst of Cantharis is peculiarly characteristic. It has violent thirst but with hardly any desire for drinking. Why? Because the Cantharis patient must have to invariably feel a cutting pain and burning in the urinary sphere immediately after drinking water. So, the patient must have to desist from drinking in spite of his thirst for water.

Case report,—A gentleman, a manager of a certain Colliery near Jharia, fell ill of a high fever. He was a lover of Homœopathy and used to keep Homœopathic medicines with him. Up to the fifth day, he used a few remedies of his own selection but without any benefit, and so called me in from Dhanbad. He had high fever with violent burning all over his body, and had a great thirst yet drinking no water. Burning and tenesmus during urination and the urine was coming in drops only. According to the said totality, I would have selected *Apis*, but when I enquired as to why he was not drinking though he had so much thirst, he replied,—“Immediately after drinking, I feel an extreme cutting pain as well as burning in my urinary organs and that is the reason why I do not drink water in spite of my thirst”. Upon this I gave him *Cantharis* 200 on two consecutive days and the fever subsided and went off. This symptom of *Cantharis* is highly characteristic.

Urinary stone,—There is another use of *Cantharis* though it cannot be called a truly *Homœopathic* use of the remedy. When stones come out from the bladder during urination of any body, they give so much pains of violent nature that none can stand to see it, and unless some relief is immediately given, the patient may get stunned. Hereafter a few globules of 30th potency are given in an ounce of distilled water and a small quantity of it every hour, it is found that after two or three such doses the patient slides down into amelioration and sleep. Of course, if some other remedy is found to be truly Homœopathic to the case, it may be used and relief must come. But where no

such remedy can be found, it is far better to use Cantharis in that way than to use the various poisonous injections of Old School.

Burns.—You may use Cantharis, mother tincture, four to eight drops put in an ounce of water immediately after burning, over the spot burnt. Blebbing is thereby prevented and the violent burning is at once relieved. But suppose the immediate use of the above nature could not be had, in that case, Cantharis of sixth, thirtieth or two hundredth may be given to the patient by mouth, and thereby lots of troubles can be prevented, resulting from the burns.

By the bye, I would strongly recommend the application of Methylated spirit over the burnt spot *immediately* after the burning, in case Cantharis ϕ can not be had. It will be doing a great deal of good by preventing blebs and formation of ulcers. Just soak a piece of cloth with the spirit and pressingly hold it over the burnt spot until the sense of burning ceases, and that is an end of the affair.

Potency.—The potencies from 6 to 1000 are in use, though the 30th and 200th are mostly useful.

CAPSICUM.

Capsicum is a remedy of not much wide use, yet its picture should be made and remembered. The Cspaicum patient is fat and lazy, so much so, that he is even unwilling to make any the least move-

ment, and wants to kill the time lazily at home. He is exhausted on the slightest exertion and easily loses his temper. The Capsicum patient, specially the young ones, are very much chilly, cannot tolerate open air or cold bath; moreover, the patient would not listen to wholesome instructions,—dull, fat, unclean and lazy, wants to pass the time quite retired.

It is a remarkable fact that the Capsicum patient has hardly any *reactive* capacity. It is obvious that such a patient must have great weakness of the nervous system and so no remedy can produce proper reaction in such a constitution.

The first and foremost symptom of the remedy is *burning*, which may be partial or even whole-bodily. Suppose, the patient has indigestion and diarrhœa. In that case, he must feel the burning in his stomach and intestines; if he has piles, there must be burning, with itching and soreness, over the parts. The peculiarity of Capsicum burning is that it is never relieved by heat or warmth, as *Arsenicum* burning is.

Digestion,—Capsicum has diarrhœa, more often dysentery with blood and mucus. The peculiarity is that during evacuation, intense *burning* and *tenesmus*, and *after every stool there is thirst and after every drinking there is shuddering*. After the stool, the patient feels a pain in the small of the back. *Merc. cor* has also tenesmus like it but no such burning. The peculiar shuddering of Capsicum after drinking is characteristic.

Tonsillitis,—The peculiar condition regarding the tonsillitis of this remedy is that the patient feels the greatest pains in the throat when *not* swallowing, but far less during the act. This is very peculiar. *Ignatia* has also this peculiarity but in *Ignatia* the patient feels the relief when swallowing *hard* substance. Then again, the mentals of *Ignatia* are different. Capsicum has hoarseness also which is rather persistent and keeps on more or less all the time.

Cough,—Its cough is of a peculiar type. When the patient coughs, he feels a soreness in almost all the parts of his body. Of course, *Bryonia* and *Natrum mur* have also the soreness when coughing, but it is felt only in the head. Moreover, other symptoms in them, e. g., constipation, thirst, etc. decide the choice. Capsicum has also thirst but the patient gets a sort of trembling or shuddering as soon as the water is drunk. Moreover, an excoriating vapour comes up from his throat during the cough.

Intermittent fever,—It has intermittent fever but may be indicated in other types as well. In any type of fever it has burning and thirst before the fever comes in, the peculiarity of the thirst is that the patient feels a chill or rigor immediately on drinking.

Gonorrhœa,—In old cases of Capsicum constitution, if there are a few drops of gleet discharge after urination, the remedy may do good even if the other symptoms of Gonorrhœa are not found.

Potency,—The remedy is not of much use, because the apt constitution of Capsicum is hardly found. However, potencies from 6 to 200 are in general use.

CARBO ANIMALIS.

Deep Anti-psoric
&
Tubercular. }

It is a remedy belonging to the carbon group and it has been prepared from animal charcoal, whereas *Carbo veg.*, another remedy belonging to the same group is coming from vegetable charcoal.

**Carbo animalis* acts very *deeply* and so necessarily, *slowly*. It is generally seen that medicines that act deeply must act in a slow pace. There are many remedies of this character, viz, *Iodine*, *Sepia*, *Tuberculinum bovinum*, etc.

The patient of this remedy is also found to be very slowly manufactured. From the history of patients that are found to-day to need *Carbo animalis*, it is generally seen that during earlier years or in childhood, *Calcarea phos* or some such remedy was needful, but without proper treatment or from negligence the remedy that would cut short the disease course could not be used and so the totality of a deeper medicine like this remedy has been ultimated. In short, *Carbo animalis* patients are manufactured, and so cured, very insidiously and slowly.

Nature,—The first and foremost peculiarity of this remedy is that the patient is very much chilly and gradually becomes more and more chilly and

susceptible to cold. He seems to be continually losing his animal heat on and on, and at last there comes a chance of closing the scene by the on-coming of Cancer or Tuberculosis or some such destructive ultimate.

If there is any inflammation in any part of the body of the Carbo animalis patient,—it may be a boil or an abscess,—the peculiarity is that it has not the tendency to suppurate; it is hardened and indurated, and forms a hardened mass. In *Hepar sulph* or *Merc sol* or *Anthracinum* and in many others, suppuration comes in as an indication of Nature's effort for a repair. In Carbo animalis, there is no such effort. The glands also, if inflamed, have never the tendency of suppuration but will get hardened and hardened. In *Belladonna*, *Lachesis*, *Merc*, *Hepar*, etc, the condition is just the opposite. This peculiar nature of Carbo animalis should be remembered. There is a small soreness but *violent burning* in the inflammatory spots.

Its **ulcers** are found to be of the same nature. They have no tendency to get cured. Violent burning and foetid pus are there and the edges get indurated but there is no tendency to repair. The ulcers of Carbo animalis are generally of cancerous type, because there is violent burning, stitching or pricking pains, discharge of ichorous pus without any the least effort for a repair. A case is in point.

Case report,—The wife of a certain pension-holding Sub-ordinate Judge, aged about 47 or 48 years, had a tumour in her left ovary. She was taken to Calcutta and the tumour was operated. But

unfortunately there was no healing up of the operated spot. After a long stay at Calcutta she was advised a change to Purulia ; but still there was no improvement and the operated spot continued to ooze an ichorous fluid for a few months also there. She was placed under my treatment. I collected the following few symptoms, viz, the patient was very weak and enfeebled as well as extremely chilly, so that she used to keep on a warm dress over her body ; for a long time before the tumour was formed, she had been experiencing occasional burning and pricking pains in her left ovary. On account of her extreme chilliness and constitutional weakness, *Apis* was out of place, and *Carbo animalis* was fixed. In course of six or seven months not only she was cured of her constantly discharging tumour, but she could as well regain her health of younger years as she thankfully reported to me.

Heart and Circulation,—There are various remedies that act in this sphere but this remedy has an important peculiarity with regard to its actions. The peculiarity is that the patient gets intensely exhausted from the discharges even when they are scanty. For example, during the menses the females feel so much exhausted that they appear as if dead,—the exhaustion and weakness are highly disproportionate to the quantity of blood discharged. This is a great characteristic of *Carbo animalis*. Moreover, the menstrual discharges are offensive and burning. The discharge comes often and continues for a long time attended with a burning from the ovary to the thighs. Lastly, there is a violent orgasm of blood

towards the *head* accompanied with difficulties of breathing and profuse perspiration of the *fore-head*,—the patient must have to be fanned during the time. Apart from this orgasm of blood, the profuse perspiration and the difficulties of breathing, there are palpitation and even intermittent beatings of the heart. *Intense weakness* governs the whole case.

Points to be remembered in connection with this remedy are,—chilliness and weakness continuing to be greater and greater, violent burning along with the chilliness and sticking pains, the orgasm as described above, the tendency of its boils and abscesses to become cancerous, etc.

Potency,—It is a deep anti-psoric, and though 30th potency is used where the weakness is most intense and prominent, the 200th or higher seems to be most efficacious.

Relation,—Its complementary is *Calcarea phos.* Though *Carbo veg* and *Phosphorus* have many symptoms of this remedy, yet no confusion can arise, as there are various differentiating points. Though its stitching pains and burning are found in *Apis*, yet *Apis* is highly hot, whereas *Carbo an.* is chilly. (See comparison between *Carbo veg.* and *Carbo an.* in *Carbo veg.*).

CARBO VEGETABILIS.

Deep }
Anti-psoric }

This remedy has been prepared from vegetable charcoal and is a deep anti-psoric. It is used both in acute and chronic cases. It is more used than

Carbo animalis because its symptoms are more found than those of the other remedy.

The main characteristic which should always be remembered with regard to this remedy is,—*violent internal burning with external coldness, and in spite of this coldness the patient anxiously desires for fanning.*

Suppose, a patient has got Pneumonia or Typhoid fever or Diphtheria or a disease of any name or description, but if the following totality is present, this remedy can instil life even when the patient has reached the door of death. That totality is,—the patient's life hanging in the balance, heavy and frequent breathing, profuse cold sweat on the forehead, intense burning within but ice-like coldness without, specially from elbow and knee downwards, voice faint, pulse intermittent and almost *nil* and the patient anxiously and in a faint voice cries,—“fan me, fan me”. I tell you with as much confidence as I can command that if the said totality is present, this remedy can call the patient back into life, and if the remedy fits the whole patient it can fully cure him, otherwise it brings in a reaction and invariably points to some other remedy which can cure. *Carbo veg.* condition is really terrible to look at, and its action is also wonderful.

Carbo veg. has the peculiar efficacy of removing the trail of some disease-symptoms from which the patient might have suffered previously, e.g., Pneumonia, Typhoid, Pleurisy, etc. The Pneumonia or the Pleurisy from which the patient suffered has been cured, but some defect dates back from it, e.g., a

soreness is felt where Pleurisy developed, or a certain weakness is felt in the part. Of course, if some other remedy is indicated on the totality of symptoms, that remedy is preferable, but if not, Carbo veg. should be given.

In chronic cases where the patient is found to slowly proceed in a destructive course towards death, Carbo veg is sometimes indicated and can bring back the patient from the jaws of impending death. In such a case, Carbo veg should be thought of when principally there are found two things, viz, chronic indigestion and loss of blood from some organ or part. It is a case of burning candle at both ends. Here if a full-fledged totality of Carbo veg is found, it can really work wonders.

Case Report No. 1.—Sj. Sarada Charan Banick, aged 19 or 20, a student of Midnapur College, an inhabitant of Bidyadharpur in the district of Midnapur came under my treatment in 1922. In 1917 he had had Pneumonia in the right side, went home from the College and took recourse to Allopathic treatment. The Pneumonia was got over in 18 or 20 days, but he could not regain his former health,—time and often he used to feel a pain in the affected spot. Moreover, his former appetite did not return. By and by he saw that he was getting more and more susceptible to cold and nasal coryza attended with a difficulty of breathing and profuse sweat. He came back to Midnapur and placed himself under the College Physician who took careful measures and prescribed Cod Liver Oil. In 1918, at the beginning of winter, he got a relapse and was cured in course

of 15 or 16 days. This time also he felt that he was not perfectly cured ; not only that,—the susceptibility to cold began to grow more and more intense. Anyhow he lived carefully and could anyhow go on with his studies, but in 1921 he had a bit more mental labour in order to prepare himself for the I. A. examination, and began to feel feverishness time and often. Moreover, he got epistaxis in November that year and was much reduced. Without finding any relief from treatment, he placed himself under my care on the 13th January, 1922.

I recorded the following symptoms and condition :—

“Fever goes on more or less continually, though the patient feels worse towards evening. The right chest feels sore and sensitive, and stitching pains are felt all over the spot. The mental condition is deplorable, nothing suits and everything brings in irritation ; no desire for bath but the patient smears his body with a wet towel and washes the head with cold water at an interval of three or four days ; coryza is all along there ; heavy sweat comes up on the slightest exertion, specially on the forehead ; intense weakness which is further aggravated by occasional bleeding from the nose ; there is hardly any desire for food and the stomach feels full on even the smallest diet.”

On the above symptoms I prescribed *Kali carb* and gave it commencing from 30th slowly rising up to 1000th, but unfortunately no relief came though an aggravation appeared more or less after every potency, specially after 1000th. On the 11th June, I gave *Carbo veg* 200, which brought on some relief, and on the

27th June I gave Carbo veg 1000th, three doses under the graduated scale, and the result was simply wonderful. On the 19th August I saw the patient and was persuaded to give *Kali carb* once more, because in spite of so much improvement, a few symptoms, viz, aggravation of cough towards the latter part of the night, evacuation of a sufficient quantity of sticky mucus from the chest, etc., were still there. On sufficient thinking I fixed upon Carbo veg instead of *Kali carb*, specially with a view to avoid the aggravation which *Kali carb* is sure to bring in. I gave Carbo veg in 1000th again. Towards the end of November, the patient was all right except the susceptibility to cold, specially the terrible fear of taking cold. Now I gave *Tuberculinum bovin.* 1000th and finished the cure.

Case Report No. 2.—Sj. Prasad Pada Basu, an inhabitant of Naraharipur, Khulna, a middle class cultivator came under my treatment in 1933. He was a man well-versed in Hindu Shastras, and remained at home all along. In 1925 he got indigestion and acidity, and took to *Kaviraji* treatment for the disease and got cured for the time, but, as ill luck would have it, one evening he had a fit of incessant coughing and finally vomited a quantity of blood. The whole family got terrified. He used a *Kaviraji* patent medicine named *Basa Kushmandakhanda* and got tolerably well except a steady and continued emaciation. However, in 1927, during the depth of winter, he had cough and coryza attended with a continued type of fever from which he got well after 39 days. At first *Kaviraji* and then Allopathic treatment were followed. He had also left-sided Pnenmonia along with the fever. After he was

cured, he began to feel acidity with burning in the chest and a type of slow fever aggravated in the afternoon and evening. As a special feature he suffered, at this time, from distension of the abdomen, in spite of a good appetite. Allopathic treatment was again had recourse to, but having had no benefit he came under my treatment. I give below the details of his case from his own mouth.

“Dear Sir, my main complaints are extreme weakness and tympany attended with daily rise of temperature in the after-noon or evening. Coughing is almost incessant and the quantity of mucus is also much, but the peculiarity is that during the fever the cough is generally dry, and mucus that is raised is only towards the latter part of the night. Moreover, the mucus is so much offensive that I feel as if my whole inside has been putrefied. I have hereditary Piles and I am sure that as soon as my Piles have commenced to bleed, the blood with sputum has stopped. Along with all these, burning is a prominent symptom in me, felt within and without, and though there is profuse sweat, the burning is not relieved at all. But I feel better only from constant and hard fanning.”

I examined the chest but nothing was found. There was slight tenderness in the liver. The extremities got cold during the night. The patient liked pungent food and he had constipation. The bleeding from the Piles was rather of oozing character and never active. The patient was actually chilly and he wanted fanning only to relieve the burning. There were both eructations as well as downward winds which were offensive. The eructations were distinctly relieving.

Upon all those symptoms and condition, I gave *Carbo veg* not only on the strength of the present symptoms but also upon the fact that those symptoms were rather a trail of his previous illness. By the bye, I should mention here that the return of the bleeding from his Piles was a great relieving feature at the time and it helped the cure. More than two years were taken to cure him perfectly from the blending of the two deep miasms, viz, Psora and Sycosis that were residing in him.

The constitutional symptoms of this remedy are more important and useful than the acute ones. You should carefully bear in mind the dulness or the inertness of this remedy,—the patient wants to doze all the time. Of course, sometimes he has anxiety but the dulness and dozing condition are the characteristics of his body and mind. It seems as if he has lost his *will* to do anything. Moreover, the symptoms of *Carbo veg* come on slowly and insidiously, i. e., just in keeping with the above condition of his mind and body. The menstrual discharge is also very slow, neither does it stop, nor is the flow profuse. The ulceration is also very slow and heals up only after a great deal of time. The patient himself is indifferent and listless as if he cannot direct his attention to the affairs, good, bad, indifferent, before his eyes. So, remember the nature of *Carbo veg*. That is the reason why *Carbo veg* children are very slow to learn.

Head-pains,—You should carefully note the head-pains of *Carbo veg*, which come on as soon as the head is exposed to the cold blast of air, when it is sweating. You know the forehead of *Carbo veg* patient sweats

profusely, even during the Typhoid fever, Cholera, Diarrhoea, Heart disease, etc, and the patient wants fanning, but never the cold blast, which has the tendency to stop the sweat and bring in the headpains as a result. The patient wants to keep his head covered up.

It has already been said that the blood discharge of Carbo veg is slow and is rather of oozing character. Here a comparison with a few remedies is necessary, e. g., with *China*, *Arsenicum* and *Ipecac*. If the case is very recent, and not much weakness is there, but a small difficulty of breathing, then *Ipecac* is needed. Just note that *Ipecac* has not much weakness, and coldness or cyanosis is out of question. It is difficult to differentiate between *China* and Carbo veg, because the nature of discharges, tympany, desire for fanning, etc, are common in both the remedies ; but Carbo veg has intense burning within with coldness without,—a symptom which is never found in *China*. You can easily distinguish between Carbo veg and *Ars*, because the fear of death and restlessness are remarkably present in *Ars*., whereas Carbo veg is dull, apathetic and indifferent with hardly any fear of death. Of course, both the remedies have burning, though *Arsenicum* burning is relieved by heat, whereas Carbo veg wants fanning. *China* patients want fanning during their blood discharges, and so it is used as complementary to Carbo veg, but the symptoms like decomposition, putrid smell with internal burning and external coldness, are never to be found in *China*.

Diarrhoea,—Carbo veg is found indicated in diarrhoeas, whether acute or chronic. During Cholera if there are

tympany, passing of offensive winds, cold sweat in the forehead and desire for fanning, specially want of reaction,—it is Carbo veg and Carbo veg only that can save the patient. In most cases it can cure by itself or brings out a totality of symptoms indicative of some other remedy. Under such a condition there is found generally a difficulty of breathing for which the patient earnestly desires for fanning and the extremities from elbows and knees downwards must be very cold. Here you must have to distinguish between *Veratrum album*, *Cuprum met*, *Secale*, *Camphor*, etc. The comparison is given below.

Ordinary diarrhoea, whether acute or chronic, must have distension of the abdomen as one of the symptoms, where Carbo veg. is indicated. There might have been a history of taking rich and indigestible things in profuse quantities or of night-keeping and other disorders with ineffectual urging for stools, when *Nux vomica* might have relieved for the time. In *Nux vomica* cases, over and above those symptoms there may also be acidity, acid eructations, mental irritation, chilliness, etc. In these cases if *Nux vomica* does no good or cannot finish cure, you are to think of Carbo veg, *Lycopodium*, *China*, *Phosphorus*, etc., each of which is complementary to *Nux vomica*. Each one has tympany,—*Nux* has acid eructations which *China* has not, but *China* stools invariably consist of undigested particles of food; moreover, *China* has a terrible weakness due to profuse stools but this weakness is only the acute condition as it has not the permanent, old and organic weakness as Carbo has. The characteristic difference between

China and Carbo is that Carbo has a relief for the time being from eructations, whereas *China* has rather the opposite condition, viz, far from getting any relief, *China* has rather the aggravation from them. Then, *China* has not the offensive wind as Carbo has. Lastly, *China* is chilly and has not the internal burning with external coldness as is to be found in Carbo. *Lycy* has rather constipation with tympany and acidity, though in Carbo the accumulation of wind is in the lower abdomen, whereas in *Lycy* it is in the stomach. *Lycy* has the acidity but not the offensive wind as in Carbo. *Phosphorus* has watery stool, goneness in the abdomen, abnormal appetite with occasional distension, yet *Phosphorus* must have cold drinks whereas *Lycy* must have them warm or hot, and *Phos* must have more thirst than *Lycy*. *Lycy* has the afternoon aggravation but *China* or Carbo has not any fixed time aggravation, though Carbo is generally worse towards the latter part of the night. Carbo has bitter taste, *Lycy* has it sour. With all these it is only Carbo that has the violent desire for or rather cannot go without, hard fanning with profuse sweat in the forehead, though of course, *Phos* & *Lycy* are relieved for the time being from fanning or open air.

In acute diarrhœa or Cholera, Carbo has to be compared with *Camphor*, *Cuprum*, *Secale* and *Veratram album*, for each of these has coldness and cyanosis. In *Camphor* there is the coldness at the very start, the attack being very sudden, and this coldness is not at all due to any purging or vomiting but to the very poison of the terrible disease; moreover, *Camphor*

has severe cramps of the heart muscles and the consequent difficulty of breathing, but Carbo veg has no such cramps. The reason for the coldness in Carbo is the profuse discharges like purging, vomiting and sweating, and though the heart gets exhausted and weak, yet there are no cramps. In *Cuprum* there is predominance of cramps with its coldness and cyanosis, but in *Cuprum* there is no profuseness of the discharges, nor is the coldness due to anything except nervous depression after so much irritation. *Veratram* coldness is certainly due to the violent discharges which are characteristically profuse in the remedy. *Profuseness* is a special point in *Veratram*, even the thirst is always for a profuse quantity of water. *Secale* has burning and coldness, and so may be confused with Carbo, but the restlessness, the bending backwards of the fingers due to cramps and violent thirst, differentiate it from Carbo. Instead of restlessness, Carbo has a dulness and want of reaction. It has no cramps but has tympany, profuse sweat on the forehead and coldness of the extremities with internal burning, and with all these there is a persistent desire for fanning.

Hoarseness,—Carbo veg has hoarseness which comes in or is aggravated from *damp* but *warm* atmosphere. Suppose, during rains there have been already so many showers and more expected, but there is an atmospheric heat, which brings in or aggravates the hoarseness. Further, Carbo has characteristically evening aggravation of hoarseness though in some cases the morning aggravation is also found. *Causticum* has characteristically the aggravation of hoarseness in the morning but *Causticum* is aggravated in *dry* cold,

whereas Carbo in *damp* heat,—a point which you must carefully remember. In *Phosphorus* there is evening aggravation of hoarseness, and Carbo and *Phos* are complementary. However, in Carbo, it is generally a painless hoarseness, whereas in *Phos* the patient feels more or less soreness in the throat.

Asthma,—The totality of symptoms upon which Carbo veg. is used in Asthma are the following,—violent difficulty of breathing, wheezing in the throat and rattling in the chest, the difficulty of the mucus being raised, burning within the chest, coldness of the whole system, profuse sweat in the forehead and for which the patient is anxious for fanning and wants to open the doors and windows. In Carbo cases there is hardly any coughing, on account of its want of reaction, and if there be any, the mucus is not raised thereby. You are here to bring in *Antim tart* and *Ammon carb* for comparison. *Antim tart* has also want of much coughing and like Carbo veg. the lungs appear to have a paretic condition, so that when the patient coughs, it appears from the rattling sound that a good amount of mucus will come up, but none is raised ; moreover, the blueness, coldness and profuse sweat on the forehead are also there, but the difference is that *Antim tart* has nausea and vomiting which get ameliorated on lying to the right ; moreover, there is flapping of the nostrils, as well as drowsiness is also there. *Ammon carb* has also drowsiness, rattling in the chest, blueness and coldness of the system with aggravation in a closed room and amelioration in open air, but the peculiarity of *Ammon carb* is that the heart is more affected and disordered than the lungs, so that even the smallest



movement aggravates ; moreover, the nostrils get closed up during sleep, so that the patient frequently wakes up suffocated. *Ammon carb* has the aggravation in winter, during rains and towards the latter part of the night and has not the aggravation in damp heat as *Carbo veg* has, nor is there any desire for fanning. *Kali carb* and *Phosphorus* also belong to the same group but no comparison is needful here.

* It must be noted in this connection that in cases where the Asthma is intended to be permanently cured, the above use of *Carbo veg.* or *Antim tart* will not be sufficient for the purpose, though of course, they can wonderfully mitigate the suffering when in acute condition. The patient who has the tendency to get Asthma at intervals must have to be classed as *sycotic*, and a deeper and constitutional medicine must have to be selected for him for his perfect cure. A deeper remedy of anti-sycotic type must have to be given. In cases where *Antim tart* or *Carbo veg.* is required for the purpose of meeting acute condition of the disease, none of these can bring in a true cure, *which Nat. sulph can do.* Of course, *Carbo* and *Antim tart* are also anti-sycotic remedies but they have hardly any depth. I have met very many times many obstinate cases of Asthma with *Natrum sulph.* *Tuberculinum bovinum* is to be thought of where there is tubercular heredity and Asthma is only a preliminary link.

Glands,—Both *Carbo veg* and *Carbo ani* have a good action over the glands of the human system, though there are many differentiating points to look to, before one of them is to be selected in a particular case. We shall deal with those points here.

Both have a profound action over the glands or rather the glandular system, but the main difference lies in this that *Carbo veg.* runs towards the pus-formation and decomposition, whereas *Carbo ani.* has no such action, and goes on indurating and hardening the glands after inflammation. Moreover, the action of *Carbo veg.* is not so extensive as that of the other. Of course, the inflamed gland of *Carbo ani.* may sometimes suppurate but if you operate, the edges get hardened, the ulcer does not heal up and an offensive pus goes on discharging. In *Carbo ani.* there is every possibility of the inflamed glands in the breasts and uterus of the female patients running into Cancer, but in *Carbo veg.* there is hardly any. There are a few words more regarding them, which are noted below.

(1) In *acute* condition, the weakness and exhaustion of *Carbo veg.* are remarkable, as has been already said. *Carbo animalis* is hardly ever needful in such acute conditions. You should also note that *Carbo ani.* is weak and exhausted wholly *irrespective* of the quantity of discharges. There is a formidable and dangerous exhaustion even where the flow is scanty,—that is the nature of *Carbo animalis.*

(2) Where the glands are affected on account of Syphilis having been lying in the system for a long time, it is *Carbo ani.* that is required, and here *Carbo veg.* is never indicated. The picture of *Carbo ani.* here is this,—glands are hardened and full of burning, the patient losing all the time on and on with violent exhaustion and weakness and sometimes there are found copper-coloured eruptions all over the body.

(3) Towards the last days of Phthisis where the

lungs have been mostly decomposed, and violently offensive pus and mucus are coming forth, and the patient is actually on the door of death,—*Carbo ani.* may sometimes save the patient's life, and *Carbo veg* is quite out of place here. Here the patient is brought to such a deplorable condition that just on closing the eyes he has dreadful dreams and feelings of suffocation and is compelled to wake up. You cannot think of *Silica* here though the patient complains of coldness and chilly feeling in the head, which is a characteristic of the remedy. *Carbo ani.* has exactly the same characteristic and nicely fits all other conditions. *Silica* acts *destructively* here, and *Carbo ani.* can still repair. You know that *Carbo veg* has rather a *hot* feeling in the head with profuse sweat on the head and forehead.

(4) Regarding eye-sight, *Carbo veg* is rather short-sighted, and *Carbo ani.* is long-sighted

The above points, if carefully remembered, will certainly facilitate the use of the remedies.

Modalities,—Aggravation in closed doors and in damp heat, and amelioration from fanning.

Potency,—The lower potencies like 3, 6, 12 should not be used. 30th potency and higher ought to be used. In deep and long-protracted chronic cases, the work of higher potencies is wonderful.

CAULOPHYLLUM.

Caulophyllum is a vegetable medicine, and though it has no extensive use, yet it is most important in its sphere, viz, in the uterine diseases of females, where it cannot be substituted by any other remedy. The remedy should be fully proved in its higher potencies, so that mental symptoms may be obtained. It is generally used in the case of girls, pregnant women and mothers.

The main characteristic of *Caulophyllum* is that its labour pains are disorderly and are directed in different directions, except in a way which would successfully bring in parturition. They fly in all directions and sometimes are absolutely false pains. There are sufficient pains but they are *spasmodic* and *disorderly*, so that the parturition is not furthered. Pains are sometimes intermittent, and the patient gets irritated and impatient. Whenever this type of pains is there, whether in the 7th or 8th month or after full pregnancy and in proper time, you need not wait to see whether it is really a labour pain or not, because there are false pains of this nature even in the earlier months with a tendency to abortion. Anyhow, you should immediately use the remedy in any potency from 6 to 200 and you will see that if the pains are false, they will be stopped at once, but if they are really labour pains, they will be properly directed *downwards* and healthy parturition will be the result. Then again, we have successfully treated and cured the most troublesome after-pains of this nature with the help of this remedy. Its action is immediate and very nice. But you should always remember

the *nature* of its pains, which is disorderly, directed towards many directions but *never downwards*, and so not at all helping the child-birth; and along with this type of pains, the female is impatient, highly irritated and shows by her movements that she is unable to stand the pains any longer. If the *nature* of the pains is there, then, in any type of uterine disease, viz, painful menstruation, painful leucorrhoea, after-pains, labour pains, true or false, you may confidently use the remedy. There are tremors during the pains of this remedy as observed by our worthy Dr. Nash.

Rheumatic pains,—There are rheumatic pains of this remedy in smaller joints of the human system and the nature of the pains is erratic,—a point which you must have to remember.

Comparison,—You should compare this remedy with *Puls*, because in both the pains are directed towards many directions and there are tremors during the pains in both. But *Puls* is tearful, Caulophyllum is angry and irritated. Moreover, *Puls* has scanty discharges, Caulophyllum has profuse. Lastly, *Puls* is highly hot, whereas Caulophyllum is rather chilly.

Relation,—*Coffea* is inimical.

Potency,—From 6th to 200th.

CAUSTICUM.

Deep Anti-Psoric
&
Anti-Sycotic. }

This remedy is a type of Potassium and is very much deep in its action. Its work is slow but very

searching. It acts very nicely in Psoric and Sycotic spheres.

Nature & Symptoms,—The weakness and exhaustion go on persistently and end in paralysis, which is generally partial, i.e., in relation to either lower limbs, or vocal organ, or urinary organs, or face, or some other organ or organs of the body. *Soreness* and *burning* are the features. There is the *sense of contraction* in the muscles affected with rheumatism. At first the patient *feels* that the muscle has been contracted but at last it is *actually* shortened.

Cough,—It is dry, and associated with it there is a pain in the small of the back. A peculiarity is that on coughing a drop of urine comes out involuntarily. There is a sense of soreness and a sort of ulcerative feeling in the throat and chest. On coughing nothing comes out, or whatever comes out, the patient is compelled to swallow down. The fit of coughing is ameliorated by drinking a small quantity of cold water. Its hoarseness aggravates in the morning and in *dry* cold.

Piles,—The same soreness with a feeling of ulceration is there, and the piles aggravate on cold and cold water.

Constipation,—The urgency to stool is generally ineffectual and the evacuation is better on standing.

Mind,—The mind of Causticum is deeply sad and dejected. The patient feels as if a black cloud is hanging over his head, so that he is always apprehensive and fears that something terrible will come about in future. The mental condition is given below in details.

Growth & Development,—There is hardly any natural growth and development in this remedy. Time to time the patient feels neuralgic pains in his head and temples, and his system gets enfeebled day to day. It appears that growth and development are in an arrested condition.

Modality,—Invariable aggravation from *dry cold*, specially from exposure to dry winds as also from bath in cold water. Amelioration in rains and from warmth.

In Mental diseases, Rheumatism, Paralysis and in all chest diseases, even of the Tubercular form, this remedy is most beneficial, in case its totality is present.

Mind,—*Sad, dejected, anxious and apprehensive*; the patient fears that something terrible will happen in future, and for that he is anxious and full of fears; he feels as if he has committed some wrong and he apprehends some punishment in future. He fears in the dark and apprehends that he will find ghosts and evil spirits; as soon as he closes his eyes for sleep he sees terrible visions and dreadful figures. This symptom is also found in *Bell, Sulphur, Calcarea, Argentum nit.*, etc.; but in Causticum it is a deep characteristic. In everything he is full of dejection and despair, he finds no hope in anything and looks upon only the dark side of it;—*disappointment, dejection, fear, anxiety and apprehension*. Causticum has also a good deal of irritation in his mind but the previous condition is his characteristic mental feature. More he thinks upon all these, more he is anxious and full of apprehension and fear.

Case Report,—A case of Insanity of Causticum is

given here. Sj. Shiba Das Roy, aged 22 or 23 years, was much perplexed and dejected due to the recent death of his father and specially on account of the heavy burden of worldly affairs. His already weak mind became all the more anxious and apprehensive. By and by from constant brooding and brooding he got dump-founded and in course of two or three months became fully insane. Apart from other symptoms his chilliness, fearful and apprehensive mood and the aggravation of his mental condition just before sleep, a fact which we got from his wife, guided me to give him Causticum 1M,—every month a dose. His insane symptoms were all removed, and he could now commence to look after his worldly affairs.

As a result of suppression of skin symptoms, many dreadful disease conditions may come, even insanity. In a few such cases, Causticum totality was found, and by virtue of that remedy the skin symptoms re-appeared with the result of cure. In a particular case *Sulphur* had to be used as a complementary to Causticum, which produced the desired results.

Nervous Sphere,—Paralysis is the main thing regarding the nervous disorders of Causticum. Generally, a *partial* paralysis, i.e., paralytic condition with regard to tongue, eyelids, half of the face, or a particular hand is its peculiarity. The *exciting* cause of Causticum paralysis is an exposure to the dry cold of winter.

Case report,—In 1919, when I was at Purulia practising both Law & Medicine under the special permission of the Hon'ble High Court, a case of partial paralysis came under my treatment. In

January of that year, at about 2 P.M., when I was seriously engaged in arguing a case in the Sub-ordinate Judge's Court, an immediate call came up from the Railway Station. The worthy Judges used to show me favour by postponing the running cases, when urgent cases required my attendance. The case under argument was thus kept suspended, and I had immediately been to the Station and came to know that a gentleman was travelling from some station of the E. I. Railway and came up to Purulia after changing at Howrah. The good wife had an urgency for urination after having got into the B. N. Ry. carriage but could not satisfy the call immediately. But at Adra she was unable to retain more, but to her surprise, she found that the urine was not coming out though she attempted several times. Now she preferred coming down at the Purulia Station for treatment. It was just possible that she had exposed herself, during the train journey, to the extremely chilly and dry cold winds of January, and which might have been the exciting cause of the local paralysis of her bladder. On this supposition I gave her a dose of Causticum 30, and to the wonder of both husband and wife, she could immediately pass the urine in a big quantity. This type of paralysis in the bladder may appear in Causticum in both ways, viz, (1) involuntary passing of urine with an inability to retain it, as also (2) absolute stoppage, as in the above case.

Rheumatism.—Though the Causticum patient cannot tolerate either extreme heat or extreme cold, yet he gets Rheumatic pains on exposure to cold

winds. Cutting, sawing, tearing, burning, etc., are the pains over the Rheumatic spot and they are relieved by warmth and warm applications. Moreover, exhaustion and weakness, and other conditions of Causticum mind must be there.

Hysteria & Epilepsy may also be cured by Causticum when they originate from any sudden fright. Moreover, any disease of the nervous sphere may be met by Causticum, in case it originates from cold bath or exposure to cold winds.

Digestive functions,—Appetite is there but as soon as the patient sees the food-stuffs, the appetite goes away and he cannot eat. This symptom is specially found in the pregnant women. *Phosphorus* has goneness in the stomach and the patient must eat in order to relieve the goneness, and actually he obtains relief in many respects by eating. *China* has also good appetite, even inordinate, but the appetite goes away when the food articles are given. Causticum has one peculiarity, which is that he cannot eat sweet things. Moreover, he wants much pungent and rich food stuffs. He has hardly any thirst but when he drinks, he obtains much relief. After eating he gets a feeling within his stomach, which is generally called "burning", but it is like a slaking of lime inside the stomach. This burning feeling is relieved by taking cold water. Then again, during fits of dry coughing he obtains immediate relief by taking a sip of cold water. So, the want of thirst but a good deal of relief from drinking,—is a peculiarity of Causticum, which should be remembered.

The *desires*, etc, regarding food-stuffs of the Causti-

cum patient have already been said. After eating there are many troubles that come in. Eructations, nausea, vomiting, tympany of the abdomen as if it would burst, water-brash, etc, appear after eating, i.e., during digestion. In many cases there may be griping exactly like that of *Colocynth* with the same modalities as in *Colocynth*. Then again, it has *constipation which is due to paralysis of the rectum*, and so, sometimes the stool passes off involuntarily (*Aloe.*) and sometimes it cannot be evacuated even with much effort. The stool is smeared with mucus and therefore it looks bright. There is one peculiar symptom of Causticum, which is that *the patient can evacuate the stool and urine better in a standing position*. Due to paralytic condition a drop or two of urine involuntarily comes out on coughing or sneezing. The patient has enuresis, specially in the first sleep, which aggravates on cold days, and ameliorates during summer.

Piles,—It has piles as well as fissures, and there are stitching pains, itching and burning in the anus. There are throbbing pains as well, and the burning and itching aggravate during night. The Causticum piles are remarkably troublesome,—the patient can walk with much difficulty due to sensitiveness of the spot, which is so much that even any thought or a bit of attention towards the disease is painful.

The desire for coition, specially in the females, altogether goes away. It is only found for one or two days after the menstruation. The peculiarity is that sometime before, and specially during the menstruation the patient gets intensely morose and dejected. There

is a sufficient flow but after the period some blood continues to ooze.

Hoarseness.—The hoarseness of Causticum generally comes in the morning like *Carbo veg*, and goes away after the patient walks and moves along for a few hours. This goes on for some time, and if it is not removed, the hoarseness stays on for all times. It should be remembered that this hoarseness is sometimes a symptom premonitory to Tuberculosis of Causticum. So, it should never be neglected.

Cough.—Its cough is generally dry, though the patient feels that coughing with some effort will bring out the sputum but, as a matter of fact, nothing comes up, and the patient continues coughing and coughing unless and until he takes a sip of cold water, which at once allays the fit. One peculiar thing is that a drop of urine comes out involuntarily on coughing. The sound of the cough is hollow as if the patient were coughing into a barrel. The cough is ameliorated by a sip of water, which must be very cold, and is aggravated by sitting with a forward bend. During the cough the patient feels a weight and soreness over the chest. The patient and his cough are relieved by warmth and bed-heat, and are aggravated by cold winds.

Tuberculosis.—I have already noted that hoarseness is the first indication or the premonitory symptom in Causticum before actual Tuberculosis comes in. At first there is morning aggravation of the hoarseness, which gets ameliorated as the day advances, and then, by and by, it continues day and night. Dry cough gradually appears as an attending symptom and there

is a line of soreness from the throat to the chest. By and by, the characteristic symptoms of Causticum appear, viz., soreness, rawness and burning in the chest. A drop or two of urine involuntarily comes out after every cough. On coughing nothing comes up but the patient feels that a good deal will come up if he coughs with more effort, but as a matter of fact he can raise nothing. At last he is compelled to take a sip or a few sips of intense cold water, and the fit is relieved. The patient gets emaciated and exhausted and takes a destructive course. *Carbo veg* and *Sulphur* are in good relation with this remedy.

Case Report.—Sj. Radha Nath Das, aged 22 to 24, had various patches of eczema and scabies at the age of 12 or 13. Very many patches of ring-worm were also there, and all these skin diseases were suppressed by external ointments. After the suppression, he felt uneasy and discomforted in many ways. However, when he was 18 or 19, he commenced to feel a sense of contraction in the chest, as if he had to make some effort in order to breathe, and along with it he got hoarseness for which he had to distinctly make effort to speak. By and by it was found that during the morning hours he had absolute hoarseness which would get relieved towards noon. During the next winter he got fits of dry coughing with the increase of hoarseness. He approached the Civil Surgeon who declared that Tuberculosis was threatening, and prescribed Cod Liver Oil. He followed his instructions and had been to the hills of Bhowal for a change and felt better for the time being. But as soon as he

returned home, all the previous symptoms re-appeared along with intense susceptibility to cold.

After he had come to me for his treatment, I noted down all the above symptoms and condition, and marked his mental condition to be very much apprehensive and fearful. Upon all these, I gave him *Causticum* 1M and he was wonderfully improved. After some time a terrible aggravation of all the previous symptoms came in, so that I had to use *Belladonna*, and he got some relief. Then I repeated *Causticum* in the same potency but to no effect. I could not dare give him *Sulphur*, as the stage of that remedy had already passed. After much study I prescribed and gave *Tuberculinum bovinum*; an improvement came in, but it did not last long. A serious break-down showed even after the higher potency of that remedy was used. At last the patient slowly but steadily advanced towards death which closed the scene, two years after *Tuberculinum bovinum*.

Growth and Dentition.—During the dentition and development period of the little ones, *Causticum* has a predominance of convulsions and skin diseases of varied nature. They generally make delay in learning to speak and walk. Even after they learn walking, they have the tendency to fall down very often,—the reason does not lie in the weakness of the legs but in the weakness or rather the paralytic condition of the nerves that direct and control the muscles of the legs. They have other symptoms as well, viz, constipation, in which they can pass stool better by standing, involuntary urination and enuresis. Moreover, during sleep they are found to be much restless.

Menses,—The girls of *Causticum* generally get early menses of scanty nature,—the discharge is only in the day-time, which stops during night.

Warts & Styes,—*Causticum* has the tendency of having warts and styes of various nature, which are generally of weeping type, and discharging blood and watery fluid. The styes in the eye-lids are very much troublesome. You know, styes and warts are always sycotic.

Causticum manifests its action more in the right side of human organism. Remedies like *Apis*, *Lycopodium*, etc., act more in the right side, and some again as *Lachesis* and many others in the left.

Relationship,—*Sulphur* and *Carbo veg* are complementaries. *Phosphorus* has the inimical relation, and so should never be used before and after *Causticum*.

Potency,—From 30th to C. M., according to the gravity and chronicity of the case.

CHAMOMILLA

Chamomilla is not a deep-acting remedy, though it is sometimes absolutely needful in acute diseases, specially in the case of young children. When it does not prove sufficient, some other deeper-acting remedy may be necessary after it.

Mind,—Unless the mental condition is obtained, *Chamomilla* does not at all give any benefit. The mental characteristic of this remedy may be given in the few words, viz, very much impatient, ungentle,

whining restless and angry. The Chamomilla patient has not the least endurance,—having highly impatient and irritable mood. The only relief seems to be from movements and so the little patient wants to be carried in laps of others. The child wants different things but refuses and repels them when given. Unless this mental condition exists, you should not expect any relief from the remedy. But you should also remember that it is a very *quick-acting* remedy, so much that you can expect the favourable change within ten minutes of its administration. Then again, if any disease symptom is produced *as a result of* wrath or anger, e. g. Convulsion, Colic, Diarrhoea or Jaundice, etc., Chamomilla does good.

Though it is more often indicated and used in the case of young children, yet it is sometimes highly useful in the case of adults as well.

It has been found that many physicians are in the habit of using *Cina*, simply because it is a case of worms, and *Aconite* in all fever cases, or Chamomilla in all children-diseases, but it is a great mistake. In every case, the totality and individuality must have to be sought for.

During the dentition period of children it is indicated by the predominance of its mental characteristic. The disease symptom during the period may be convulsion, cramps, diarrhoea, or fever, but in any case the mental, symptoms of Chamomilla, as given before, must be present, or Chamomilla cannot do any good. One peculiarity of this remedy should always be remembered,—viz, in the gum-pains of young children, cold water and cold are always relieving, whereas the pains

in other parts of the body, viz, in the ear, eyes or other limbs, it is the application of heat that relieves.

* Before coming to comparison with the similar remedies, one thing is to be understood that the truly healthy children do not get any trouble during the dentition period. There are many who seem to be of opinion that children must suffer because of their dentition but the fact is not so. The fact is that those that suffer during the time are wrong and unhealthy within their system by virtue of their heredity, and not due to dentition. The dentition and the other transitions during the infant life, viz, learning to walk, learning to speak and so forth, are all healthy affairs, and unless they are unhealthy, they are never to suffer during those transitions. There are various remedies which may be indicated in those times, and Chamomilla is one of them. Now let us come to comparison of this remedy with a few allied ones, viz, *Cina*, *Coffea* and *Belladonna*.

Now to compare between *Cina*, *Coffea* and *Belladonna*. The temper or the mental condition of *Cina* is just like that of Chamo., and sometimes differentiation is difficult,—the *Cina* child almost always keeps on boring into his nose, grinds his teeth during sleep and constantly swallows down, so that it appears that he feels something in his throat which he tries to swallow. Moreover, the *Cina* child has generally abnormal appetite. All these symptoms are absent in Chamo. Moreover, the *Cina* child does not want caressing, even he resents loving touches; Chamo wants love and always desires being carried on the lap. *Coffea* seems to exaggerate even the slightest pains and so gets

vehemently restless and cannot sleep. But the Chamomilla mind is never found in *Coffea*. *Belladonna* is generally indicated in children's diseases but the main characteristic of *Belladonna*, viz., the disease symptoms come suddenly and go away suddenly, ought to be remembered. Another point is that the child feels sleepy but cannot sleep,—and if he does sleep, he suddenly startles up. Chamo has no sleep at all and Chamo's mind is not found in *Bell*. Lastly, the gum-pains of *Belladonna* are ameliorated from heat.

I have already told about the efficacy of Chamomilla, specially in children's diseases, viz., earache, colic, gum-pain, fever, etc., and I have emphasised the mental condition of the remedy. For a clear picture of this useful remedy, you are to remember that the Chamomilla child constantly wants *change*. When it wants being carried about in lap, it is found that sometimes it wants father's, then again mother's, then again some other's laps, and cannot rest without constantly changing the person. Not only does it desire being carried about but also not by a particular person but always by different persons. Secondly, only in the gum pains, Chamo has relief from cold and cold water, in other pains whether located in the ear, abdomen or elsewhere, warmth and heat give relief. This ought to be specially noted. Lastly, it is quite unsuitable, unless the intensely irritable mental condition with a constant desire for change is there. Even in labour pains, you can very well use the remedy, and most successfully, when the above type of mental condition is present. I want to give here a short Case Report.

Case Report,—Sreemati Urmila Debi, the sister of S^r. Rabindranath Das, a pleader, got troubles from ineffectual labour pains, and I was called in. As soon as she saw me with my medicinal bag and stethoscope, she uttered very much hard words against our profession, which can never be expected from a female in a respectable family. At once Chamomilla flashed into my mind, and to the wonder of the family, a few doses of Chamomilla in the 6th potency successfully brought in the delivery. In these cases, you are to note the extreme irritability, anger and angry utterances of the female. One peculiar mental feature is found in Chamomilla labour cases, which is that she desires any how to get away from the labour pains and delivery and flee somewhere else. The pains are cramping, distressing and quite ineffectual,—so much so that she says, “I cannot stand them”.

Modality,—Chamomilla has practically no symptoms from 12 in the night till morning. Its aggravation commences at 9 A.M., and specially from 9 P.M. to 12 in the night its symptoms appear, viz., fever, gum-pains, etc. The gum-pains are aggravated from warm drinks, warm food-stuffs, warm application and in warm room, and ameliorated from cold drinks and cold. The other symptoms have general amelioration from movements, and in the cases of young children, from being carried in laps. The rheumatic pains are relieved from slow walking and aggravated in bed and from touch,—even a look or a bit of attention is aggravating. Open air may be relieving but winds cannot be tolerated. In ear-ache, even open air is not tolerable. However, the general relief comes from

open air and slow movements, and aggravation from heat or warmth. Chamo. patients do not like warm or hot food.

Diarrhœa,—Its diarrhœa generally appears during dentition. The stools are characteristically hot, offensive and excoriating. There is generally griping in the abdomen before stool, which goes away after evacuation. The stool smells like a decomposed egg. But with all these, there must be the Chamomilla mind, otherwise it cannot be thought of. The action of Chamomilla is not deep enough to cure by itself and has generally to be complemented by *Sulphur*.

Cough,—It has cough which appears after exposure to dry cold winds and the young ones go on coughing during sleep. It has also cough after a fit of anger. The same amelioration is there from movements, so that the adults take to walking, but the little ones want being carried in laps, but the Chamomilla mind must be there.

During Chamomilla pains, patient has restlessness, so much so that he prefers death. *Ars* has similar restlessness but it has a fear of death.

Chamomilla has *partial* sweat. During and after eating, the upper part of the body sweats, as also during sleep. There are other remedies which have partial sweats, viz., *Belladonna*,—in covered parts only, *Calcarea carb*,—in the head, specially forehead, during sleep, *Silicea*,—in the head, *Pulsatilla*,—in half the body, either right or left, *Thuja*,—in uncovered parts, in all portions of the body except head and during sleep, the sweat stops as soon as the patient wakes up, and *Sambucus*,—so long as in waking condition

but perfectly dry during sleep; so that *Thuja* and *Silicea*, and *Thuja* and *Sambucus* are opposite in sweat symptom.

The relief of gum-pains from cold water is also to be found in *Bryonia*, *Coffea* and *Pulsatilla*.

Lastly, the most important thing is that unless *Chamomilla* mind is there, the remedy cannot be used under any circumstances whatever. The remedy can never be thought of in patients of calm, sober, and tranquil nature.

Potency,—6, 12, 30 and 200 are always used. The remedy is not deep, and so higher potencies are hardly used.

CHELIDONIUM.

Anti-psoric.

Chelidonium maj, though an anti-psoric remedy, is not so deep-acting, and therefore generally needs the help of a complementary like *Ars*, *Lyc*, *Sulph*, *Merc*, *Sepia*, etc. It seems to act more on the right side of human organism, and so *Lycopodium*, which has exactly the same affinity, acts as a nice complementary. Both the remedies act especially on the liver.

The main characteristic of *Chelidonium* is a dull pain in the inner side of the right scapula. *Lycopodium* has also this symptom, though not so prominently as *Chelidonium*; *Kali carb* has also a dull pain in the same region. In any disease condition, whether in spleen, urinary organs or in other organ of the system, if the above dull scapular

pain is found. Chelidonium must be thought of. A case in point is given below.

Case Report,—In the Lohagarh Raj family, a case of renal calculi came under my treatment, and before that the patient had all along been either under Kaviraji or Allopathic system of treatment and getting benefit for the time being. Various injections and lots of patient medicines were used but to no permanent good. After 8 or 10 years of suffering, the patient left all those and came under my care. I was then at Dhanbad.

Within the right scapular region he had all along been feeling a dull pain, for which he used various ointments and hot fomentations. Inveterate constipation he had, to relieve which he used to drink hot water or hot milk. Towards the afternoon he used to feel a pain in the liver region as well as in the urethra, and though this pain used to go away after 3 or 4 hours, but the scapular pain used to continue all along. The tongue was thick, coated and moist; and his mind was badly dejected. Upon all these, Chelidonium was given in two consecutive doses in 1000th potency, and he continually felt improvement for three months. The pain re-appeared after the period and another dose of the same potency was given. The action of this dose seemed to wane down about four months after, when a dose of 5M was given, after which no medicine had to be given; and the patient was completely cured.

Colic pain,—In colic pains, Chelidonium can do much good if the following characteristics are present, viz, (1) the patient wants very hot drinks, so much

hot as cannot be tolerated by ordinary people ; *Nux* has also this symptom, but *Nux* has frequent urgency for stool and urine, mostly ineffectual. *Lycopodium* has also a desire for hot drinks, but not so hot as *Chelidonium*. (2) Anything eaten during the pains brings in a relief. This symptom is also found in *Graphites*, *Anacardium*, *Petroleum*, *Iodine*, etc., and the other symptoms will decide the choice. *Graphites* has violent skin diseases and hard constipation ; *Anacardium* has a general relief of all disease symptoms from eating along with frequent ineffectual urgency to stool ; *Petroleum* has the pains as soon as the stomach is empty ; and *Iodine* has good eating with continued emaciation and a constant desire for cold and free air. These differentiating features must have to be remembered. (3) During the pains the patient likes to lie on the left side with legs drawn in and wants to keep still, because movement aggravates. (4) Touch aggravates, and eating and eructations relieve.

Liver,—The remedy has a profound action on the liver. The whole body gets yellowish. In some cases it is constipation, in others ball-like stools of grey colour, and in the rest it is loose stool that may be an accompanying symptom, but the scapular dull pain must be there.

* It is a remarkable fact that the mind of a man is affected quite differently as the different external organs are found to be diseased, e.g., a patient who suffers from liver disease must be sad and dejected, but if from heart ailments he must be anxious ; a patient having indigestion is generally found to be

discontented and irritable. So, there is a *correspondence* between internals and externals, and this ought to be remembered, because this is true pathology.

Chelidonium has thick and yellowish coated tongue taking imprint of teeth. *Podophyllum* has all these but it has extremely offensive stool. *Merc. sol* has also the above tongue symptoms, but profuse sweat and aggravation from sweat as well as slimy mucous stool with tenesmus are the distinguishing features.

This remedy, as I have already said, has the predominance of its action on the right side of the human organism. *Lycopodium* is its complementary. Another peculiarity of this remedy is that the liver disorder and lung symptoms are found to appear at the same time, and specially the right lung is affected. In liver disorders the whole body turns yellow and the dull scapular pain associates with all the disorders. Where Chelidonium cannot finish cure, *Lyc* or *Sulph* should be thought of. If distension of the abdomen, acid feeling in the chest, 4 to 8 P.M. aggravation, etc., are there, *Lyc* comes in. But in case where burning of the palms and soles, driving out of bed stool, etc, are found, *Sulphur* must have to be given. The flapping of the *alae nasi* is characteristically found in *Lyc*, *Ant. t* and *Chelidonium*. *Ant. tart* has nausea and vomiting, relieved by lying to the right. Moreover, during cough, it appears that lots of mucus will come in but nothing comes up. Sometimes there may be a confusion between *Bryonia* and Chelidonium, for both are aggravated by movement; but Chelidonium has sensitiveness and so cannot lie on the affected side,

whereas *Bry* wants pressure and is actually relieved by lying on that side.

Chelidonium has **rheumatic** pains as said by some noted physicians, though I did not get any occasion for the test. Rheumatic pains and swelling with sensitiveness in the right knee associated with the aforesaid dull pains in the right scapular region will call for Chelidonium. Liver is also affected, which makes the colour of the body yellowish.

A special peculiarity with regard to Chelidonium must have to be carefully noted. The head pains and all the head symptoms of Chelidonium are aggravated from heat and in warm room, but the stomach symptoms are relieved from hot milk and hot drinks. A few other remedies have also this peculiarity, *viz.*, *Phosphorus* and *Lyc.* *Phosphorus* wants cold in stomach and head symptoms but in other spheres it wants warmth. *Lyc* has also relief from cold in head symptoms, but in stomach diseases, it is relieved from hot things and hot drinks. These peculiarities of remedies must be carefully remembered.

Case Report.—Sj. Dayamoy Biswas, an inhabitant of Dhanda-punda in the district of Manbhum, aged 41, had been much addicted to tea-drinking for the last 8 years. He had a tea-business shop in Calcutta, and so he could easily get a big quantity of tea for his own use. Not only was he addicted to the habit, but the tea-liquor must have to be very strong and as hot as could be borne. In March, 1922, he had several painful symptoms and placed himself under a Kaviraj and felt some relief. But after a few months those symptoms re-appeared in a much aggravated

form. This time under the advice of a pleader of our Bar at Dhanbad, he came to me for treatment on the 11th December, 1922. The important portions from my diary are given below. The patient had been like a bundle of sticks of yellow colour.

“Lean, thin, emaciated, with a good appetite, yet getting emaciated all along. I must have to eat frequently and if I do not, a sort of griping pain must appear in the stomach which is relieved only by eating. Dear Doctor, I have a peculiar dull pain under the right scapula more or less all the time, which commenced 4 or 5 years since, and I feel a soreness in the liver. Stool of grey colour, which is very difficult to evacuate, and after 3 or 4 attempts the stools come out in ball-like forms. There is hardly any urgency without a cup of hot tea, and after the stool I must have another cup. They say that tea-drinking impairs the appetite, but I do not feel so. Sometimes I have to vomit, and the nausea is also relieved by drinking of small hot tea. Occasionally, say, three or four times in a month, I get a neuralgic pain in the right side of my head, during which the right eye waters and the pains are relieved by pressure. I always lie to the left and never to the right, specially during pains.”

Being questioned he said,—“I can never lie to any other side but to the left, mouth is full of sticky saliva, extremities are always cold; I feel feverish in the afternoon, which goes away in the evening after a small sweat, there is a strong smell in my sweat, and urine is scanty, very strong and yellow.”

Upon the above symptom-totality, I fixed upon Chelidonium, which was given from 200th to 10M

with a gradual rise. Though the patient was greatly improved, yet the yellow hue of his body, pain and soreness in his liver and a few other symptoms stayed on. Moreover, the sadness and dejection of his mind and emaciation did not improve. I used *Lycopodium* from 200th to 1000th, and then *Sulphur* but to no effect.

I now thought upon re-recording the case, and on doing so I got that his father not only suffered from Asthma but had frequent hæmoptysis; mother died of apoplexy; his uncle was insane at his age of 23 and went away from home at his 30th year. I now got the key to the case and gave the patient two doses of *Tuberculinum bov* 1000 in three months' interval, and the patient got cured by and by. The tubercular taint that was dwelling within him was so long standing as a block to his cure.

* It may be asked that no mention was made regarding the excessive tea-drinking, and that why did I not forbid him to do so. The reason is that unless the inner miasm is cured, advice of restriction is hardly of any value. People get addicted to wine, hemp-smoking, opium-eating or excessive tea-drinking and they are not to fault, because it is the inner miasmatic weakness that compels them to do so. It has been seen that after the miasmatic weakness is cured, they give up the habit of their own accord. In this case after the use of *Lycopodium*, the intense desire for tea-drinking got lessened, and after *Tuberculinum* he felt an aversion to it.

The mental symptoms of Chelidonium did not fully develop in the proving except sadness, anxiety

and the weeping mood. Better and extended proving of this important remedy is needful.

Potency,—I have never used it below 30. Higher potencies up to 10M are beneficial. I did not use potencies higher than 10M, so I cannot say about the efficacy of those potencies.

CHINA or CINCHONA.

China is a very useful medicine, though it has hardly any depth of action. Where a patient was goodly nourished and healthy but has of late been much weakened on account of profuse discharge of blood or pus or any other vital fluid,—this is the apt sphere where China should be used.

The Master has advised to use this remedy where the system has been much devitalised due to the abnormal discharge of vital fluid, and he has also said that China can do good only in the acute condition. Where due to the said loss of vital fluids, there is a chronic disorder in the nervous sphere, *e.g.*, impairment of memory, indifference, weakness of mind, etc., a deeper medicine like *Phosphoric acid* should be thought of. China can do good only during the immediate acute condition after the discharge, and where the totality of its symptoms, viz., ringing sound in the ears, too much sweat after any exertion, voracious appetite, distension of abdomen without any relief from eructations, etc., is present. China can also do good for anæmia and weakness on account of

heavy discharge of blood from the lungs or the nose or the uterus.

The similar remedies which should be brought into comparison here are,—*Ars*, *Digitalis*, *Ferrum met*, *Kali carb*, *Phosphorus* and *Phos. ac*.

Ars,—*Violent restlessness, fear of death, chilliness, loss of appetite, nausea, aversion to take water, etc.*

Digitalis,—*Extreme weakness of the heart, heart-beats slow, weak and intermittent, with an aggravation from movement, sudden coldness of the extremities with anxious feelings, etc.*

Ferrum met,—*Bloodlessness, so that naturally red portions of the system are turned white, and these portions get reddened on small excitements. Violent appetite but undigested food-parts are found in the stools, urgency to stool during eating, palpitation, relief from slow walking, etc.*

Kali carb,—*Upper lids of the eyes are swollen like water bags, swelling of the feet, difficulty of breathing on ascending, stitching pains on the chest, distension immediately after eating, chilliness, etc.*

Phosphorus,—*Goneness or emptiness in chest and head, much thirst and desire for ice-cold water, liking to lie to the right and inability to lie to the left, palpitation, vertigo, etc.*

Phosphoric acid,—*Indifference of mind, extreme thinness of the semen with the tendency to night pollution, profuse and watery urine, good appetite with lienteria but want of weakness in spite of the diarrhœa, etc.*

China has much discharge of blood and the peculiarities are that the blood is deep red so as to appear

rather blackish. The blood is sometimes coagulated and the quantity is so profuse that there is a chance of immediate death of the patient. These are the peculiarities regarding the blood and its discharges, but something more is to be remembered with regard to the *patient*. Though the China patient is chilly, and in fact the whole body becomes cold during the discharge, yet the patient wants fanning. This desire is not because the patient himself gets warm but on account of the fact that his lungs want the supply of more oxygen at the time. The *Carbo veg* patient is also of like nature and desires hard fanning at the time but the peculiarity of *Carbo* is his internal burning with external coldness. There is another point with regard to *Carbo*, which is that he gets extreme coldness of elbow and knee downwards. Both the remedies are complementary to each other. A China patient hears many sounds in his ears and is liable to faint.

Ipecac,—It has also much blood-discharge but its blood is purely red, and as attending symptoms there are seen nausea, loss of appetite with distaste for food, want of thirst with clean tongue, breathing a bit laboured, etc. In case of little children, during their violent dysentery, if the above totality is present *Ipecac* acts wonderfully. In such cases there may be pains round the navel.

There is a word more in connection with the blood-discharge of China. As a result of the loss of blood of China patients, a swelling generally comes in, and which China can cure.

Fever,—China is one of the most efficacious reme-

dies in fevers, specially of the Malarial type. The symptoms are,—thirst in the prodrome, *i.e.*, long before the chill ; but as soon as the chill commences, there is no thirst. Then again, just after the chill when the hot stage comes in, there is thirst,— but no thirst during hot stage. If there is any thirst during the hot stage, it is generally for a few sips of water only ; but as soon as the sweating stage comes in, there is profuse thirst. So during the actual chill and heat, there is want of thirst but during the sweat there is profuse thirst. These peculiarities regarding thirst should be remembered, because thirst symptom of China is guiding. China has profuse sweat which is debilitating. Apart from fevers, China has generally good sweat on slight exertions. It has mostly intermittent types of fever. There is a good appetite but the patient cannot tolerate fruits, which bring in distension of the abdomen and diarrhœa.

Many advise to take one or two doses of China 30, before going to a Malarial place in order to prevent Malarial attacks. But so far as we have seen, many times it fails, the reason being that a cure or a prevention comes in when the totality of the patient's constitutional symptoms agrees. Where the patient is of China totality, it will prevent, and that is the law. For the purpose of prevention we know of another remedy which is also useful. It is *Malaria off*. The peculiar feature of this remedy on which the success depends is that there is no pronounced type of fever but only a Malarial feeling, *i.e.*, an uneasy or out-of-sorts sensation with small aches in the ankles and other joints, along with chilliness. It is more often used in 30th potency.

Diarrhœa.—In any case of diarrhœa, if the undigested particles of food are found in the stools or vomited matters, and, as an attending symptom, if there is distension of the abdomen without any relief from eructations, China is needful. A case in point is given below.

Case Report.—In the month of September, 1923, I was called in at the house of Sj. Basanta Kumar Mitra, the famous pleader of Dhanbad. A few days back there were a few cases of Cholera at the house. On the day I was called in, a maid-servant was attacked with Cholera. The symptoms were,—there were undigested particles of food in the vomited matters as well as in the stools passed by her, a great tympany and violent cramps of the extremities. Before I was called in, another Homœopathic physician of good merit and name was called in, and having observed the predominance of cramps he gave *Cuprum* 30, a few doses, but to no effect. After that I had been there, and having observed so much tympany and the presence of undigested food particles in the evacuations, I put a dose of China 30 and within five minutes the patient fell into sleep, which lasted for two hours. After that she passed a profuse stool of much offensive smell. I sent another dose of China 30, which finished the cure. It is to be noted that though there is hardly any cramp in China, yet that remedy cured the case.

* It may be fairly and reasonably asked as to why *Cuprum* could not cure, though there was a predominance of cramps in the patient. The reason is that the patient did not tally with the *Cuprum* individuality. A *Cuprum* patient must be cold and cyanotic, and if

there is found in such a patient a predominance of cramps, *Cuprum* must be selected, otherwise not. It was purely a case of China and the cramps were only the attending symptoms. The strict individuality of every case must have to be followed.

The main points regarding China diarrhœa are,—tympany in the abdomen, presence of undigested particles in stool and vomit and aggravation after eating and drinking. There may be thirst but for a small quantity of water each time. China diarrhœa aggravates from eating fruits, and the peculiarity of china tympany is that it is never relieved from eructations.

Carbo veg has also tympany but it is relieved by eructations ; but China has not only no relief thereby but it is all the more aggravated. Moreover, *Carbo veg* has distension more in the upper abdomen, whereas China, both in upper and lower. *Lyc* has almost no relief from eructations, but the distension pertains to the lower abdomen only.

Lienteric stools, i. e., stools containing undigested particles of food, are found in *Phosphoric acid* also, but *Phosphoric acid* has the peculiarity that its patient is not weakened or emaciated thereby, but rather gains flesh. China is just opposite and is greatly reduced thereby.

If the colic pain and the pain for the renal calculi appear at one and the same time, China gives a good deal of relief, the modalities are aggravation during night and after food, and amelioration from sitting bent forwards.

Pains.—The peculiarity of China pains and aches is that it is aggravated from touch, though the patient

wants to violently move and exert the limbs when the China pains are on. *Rhus tox* has also this desire for movement but has no aggravation from touch. One word more, when the China pains are on, the patient shows intense sensitiveness,—from touch and from exposure to winds; mentally, also, he gets much irritable. There is another peculiarity, viz, in China the aggravation comes from *soft* touches, whereas deep pressure is rather ameliorating.

Mentals,—Sad, irritable and indifferent; the patient has no desire to live but fears committing suicide. He has hardly any desire for working, as if unable to prepare the mind for work, though during night makes various plans and ideas which he would take up in future, and when he rises up in the morning he wonders to think how he could form so many plans and ideas. The mind of the China patient gets enfeebled after the loss of some animal fluids.

Headache,—The peculiarity is that when a China patient gets his extremities cold and perspiration all over, if he is exposed to cold winds, specially if the head is exposed, he must have headache. A China patient is unable to tolerate cold winds to the head, and so he cannot lie with his head just before the window (*Psorinum*, *Nux*, *Silicea*). *Carbo veg* is also so but only during orgasm; when the head perspires, he wants fanning. *Phosphorus* is just opposite, because *Phosphorus* wants cold in the head and stomach. The China headache is ameliorated in warm room and by hard pressure, and aggravated by soft touch, slow movements and in cold.

A few words may be said regarding the *nature of*

China. The patient is rather susceptible to the loss of animal fluids and is much weakened thereby. Moreover, he is liable to Malarial fever, neuralgic pains, headache and diarrhœa. Generally he has excessive perspiration with tympany and lienteria. He is much nervous and feels always chilly. He has not the capacity to stand cold in any form,—on even the smallest exposure, he gets headache. Lastly, he cannot tolerate fruits.

Arsenicum alb. is generally needed after China, and *Ferrum met.* is complementary. *Calc phos* comes in in children's cases, after China, specially in hydrocephalus. *Digitalis* and *Selenium* are inimical to China.

Potency,—30, 200 are often used, as the remedy is hardly used in Chronic cases.

CHINIMUM ARS.

This remedy comes from the combination of *China* and *Arsenic*. It appears that the debilitating sweat of *China* and the extreme weakness of *Arsenic* have been combined in the remedy. In fact, you will hardly find this combined condition in any other remedy.

The suitable sphere of its application must be borne in mind. In case where a patient has been enfeebled under the pressure of an acute illness, can never require this remedy. Where a person has been suffering from a long lasting illness, sometimes fever, sometimes diarrhœa, and perhaps his fever symptoms have been many times suppressed by quinine with the

result that the patient has been reduced to thin bones and skin,—this is the sphere of *Chininum ars.* You will find, such a patient is badly irritable, gets diarrhoea on the slightest cause, has a tendency to get fever off and on, pulse much accelerated and sometimes intermittent, and he has hardly any power to sustain. Of course, Tuberculosis or any of the destructive and wasting diseases has not yet appeared but the field seems to be already prepared for its on coming.

Reports of two important cases are given here, from which the true picture of this important remedy may be obtained.

Case Report (1)—Sreemati.....Sen, aged 19 or 20, mother of 3 children, was much reduced due to violent bleeding after the third delivery. After 15 or 20 days from the delivery, she was attacked with puerperal fever, and though her life was saved for the time under Allopathic treatment, she could not regain her usual health. After other deliveries, she used to have the return of her menses after about a year, but this time it came up in the fourth month. Though the quantity of discharge was as usual, yet her exhaustion was disproportionately greater. In spite of good appetite, she commenced to have loose stools every now and then, and though the thermometer did not read any temperature, yet she felt feverishness about noon. There was much perspiration during night. "I have to labour much for the family works and I am so exhausted, that I am to make efforts when I work. After meals I feel a bit better but that is only for the time." Very much chilly and she felt feverish on slight exposures.

In this case, the gradual exhaustion and weakness, profuse perspiration, tendency to diarrhœa, etc, suggested me Chinimum ars, which was given in 200th potency once a week. After the fourth dose, the patient showed signs of repair. After two months there having been no other improvement, and moreover, on the return of feverishness towards noon, a single dose of 1000th was given. Nothing more was necessary.

Case Report (2),—Sreeman Hari Prasad Roy, aged 9 or 10 years, had violently enlarged spleen, was emaciated, bloodless, irritated and always full of sweat, and with an inordinate appetite, but only for knick-knacks and for a very small quantity at a time. The boy was intensely chilly and could not tolerate cold at all. On exposure to winds, he used to have violent fits of headache with profuse sweat on the head and forehead, though without any relief. He had frequent diarrhœa with lenteric stools. Fearful emaciation due to long suffering from Malaria, and for many years. In the name of treatment, he used big doses of quinine and lost of patent medicines. Since last year he had only malarial malaise but no perceptible type of fever.

There were no other symptoms; but having obtained the history of the long suffering from Malaria and its suppression by quinine, I gave him Chinimum ars 6, and then 30, and then 200, upon which he made a perceptible improvement on all sides, and his spleen, though it did not come to its normal size, was perceptibly reduced. I thought of interpolating a single dose of *Sulphur* 1M, which brought out the suppressed fever

for 8 or 10 days. I gave nothing for the fever, and it ceased of itself. But the patient having had no further general improvement, I gave *Chininum ars* 1000 and finished the case with *Thuja* 200. It cannot be denied that it was *Chininum ars* that saved the patient's life.

Potency,—6, 12, 30, 200, and 1000 are in general use.

CHINIMUM SULPH OR QUININE.

It is a remedy which works wonderfully curative when applied on true homœopathic principles, i.e., on the totality of symptoms, but it has been and is being misapplied in crude doses on the idea that it is able to kill the malaria germs in the human system; but it should always be remembered that it is merely a surmise, and the only curative principle is homœopathy, i.e., the application of drugs on the similarity of totality of symptoms. When used under this principle, it can cure in infinitesimally small doses, and when used on any other dubious principle, it can only *suppress* the fever paroxysm only for a time, but with irretrievable injury to the patient himself and his organs.

The remedy has no depth of action and when, even applied on truly homœopathic principles, it cannot cure permanently, and so the patient should be treated *constitutionally*, with the help of his desires and aversions, likes and dislikes, etc., being taken within the

totality of symptoms. For instance, in many cases *Nux vom.* or *Ipec.* cannot permanently cure the fever cases, where *Sulphur* and *Arsenicum album* have been found to be *constitutionally* similar and permanently curative

Fever Symptoms.—The paroxysm comes in about 3 P.M. with violent chill and thirst attended with pains within the spinal column. Then the heat stage comes in which has also thirst but in the sweaty stage there is thirst for a profuse quantity of water each time, the perspiration being also profuse. A feeling of soreness within the spine is there for all times and only in the chilly stage there are pains as well. Moreover, thirst is there in all stages. The paroxysm comes daily or every alternate days with a good regularity, and all the three stages are fully developed. Apart from all these, the patient may have vertigo and buzzing in the left ear. It is never used in chronic intermittents, because it has no depth of action.

To compare with *China*. Both the remedies have a voracious appetite, profuse sweat and profound weakness, but only the symptom of thirst can easily distinguish between them. The thirst of *China* is quite peculiar,—sufficient thirst in the prodrome, after which chill comes in but no thirst during the chilly stage. Then again, there is thirst between chill and heat, i e., when the chill goes away and heat comes in. But there is altogether absence of thirst during hot stage. Lastly, there is a violent thirst during sweat. In short, it has thirst before the chill, between chill and heat, and during sweat. The thirst of *Chinimum sulph* is during all the stages, specially the sweat.

If there is profuse thirst during the chilly and hot stages, *China* is out of place, and if there is no thirst in those stages, in that case, *Chininum sulph* cannot be thought of.

Lastly, in *Chininum sulph* there must be a sweaty stage with profuse thirst, and the three stages must be quite expressed.

On account of the misuse and the use of big and crude doses of quinine, the fever paroxysms are only suppressed with the result that there are anæmia, buzzing in the ears, enlargement of spleen and liver, susceptibility to cold, emaciation, want of appetite or voracious appetite, etc., when the Allopaths declare the case to be one of Kala-a-zar. But it is a name only and, in fact, a combination of the poisonous action of quinine and disease symptoms suppressed and lying dormant in the system.

When in spite of true homœopathic treatment, i.e., with the help of remedies selected under the Law of Similars, the fever is found to be persistent, it must be known that it is due to the presence of one or more than one of the miasms, viz, Psora, Sycosis, Syphilis and more specially Tuberculosis.

Potency,—30 and 200 are in general use, but I had to use in some cases 1000 and even 10M. Dr. Swan has used 50M and C.M in cases poisoned with the crude doses of quinine.

CICUTA VIROSA. *Anti-psoric.*

Cicuta is a remedy having a few symptoms produced by it. But it is indispensably necessary when a few terrible symptoms peculiar to it are found in patients. Those symptoms are spasms and convulsions. A few remedies are there which have spasms and convulsions most fearful to look to, of which *Nux vom*, *Cuprum met* and *Cicuta virosa* are worth mentioning.

Spasms and Convulsions,—Though *Cicuta* has various types and peculiar kinds of spasms and convulsions, the main peculiarity of the remedy must be remembered. All spasms and convulsions of *Cicuta* are opisthotonus, i. e., the patient is bent backwards. Secondly, the spasmodic conditions are much terrible and violent. But those two features, even if carefully remembered, are not always sufficient when treating an actual case in hand, and before fixing upon this remedy you are to know the main peculiarity of *Cicuta*, which is that its spasms commence in the centre and run towards the extremities. *Cuprum* has mostly the same violence but its spasms commence in the extremities and run towards the centre. You are to carefully bear in mind this distinctive feature, so that you can easily distinguish and fix upon the remedy that is indicated.

There is another point which ought to be remembered in connection with *Cicuta*. Apart from stray spasms and convulsions, it is very much useful in epileptic fits. You know the difference between ordinary hysteria and epilepsy. In the former, the

patient generally retains consciousness in subdued form and can remember afterwards that he had a fit, whereas in the latter, neither can he retain his consciousness during the fit nor does he remember that he had the fit. Epileptic fits are generally very hard to cure. Cicuta is many times needed for the epileptic patient. A case is in point.

Case Report,—Sj. Babulal Basak was the Fourth Teacher of the Rajagram A. S. School in 1908, when I was the Head-master there. He was a very poor man and had none to look after him. He had two private students in a rich family of Saldah, where he used to put up. Sj. Purnendu Raha, the proprietor and secretary of the school, used to love this gentleman for his goodness, sincerity and many manly qualities. Purnendu Babu specially requested me for the treatment of Babulal Babu, and so I commenced to keep an eye over the gentleman. I observed that after holding the usual classes, he always desired to *keep alone* and never to meet with any body. I also found that he was always sad, dejected and full of dissapointment. One day I asked him and he requested me to know about his condition from other teachers in the school. So I commenced to make an enquiry off and on. At last I came to know that he had been suffering from epilepsy for a long time. I give the details of his condition below.

Just when he was teaching in the classes, he would suddenly rise up and go out, so that the students would think that he went perhaps to urinate ; but as a matter of fact it was a vacant movement without any purpose, and he used to come back to his class and

resume his work. Sometimes when he was walking with the umbrella in hand, it fell down from his hands, and he was not conscious of it; then after walking a few steps when his consciousness returned he would step back and take up the umbrella. Other times he used to talk quite incoherently. The main point was that there was no remembrance or memory of all these that happened. After a fair study of his mental condition, I could understand that his mind was a fair field of deep disappointment and dejection. Apart from all these I could not ascertain anything regarding his desires and aversions, so that I could not select any deep acting medicine and I had to fix upon *Cicuta virosa*. I gave it first in 200th potency but having found no change a dose of 1000th was given. A violent aggravation was found, and serious form of epileptic fits came forth. I waited without giving any further dose and a good change for the better was found. Even the natural glow of his face returned, and there was no further fit of his epilepsy. I am of opinion that this remedy is a goodly deep-acting one. It is most unfortunate that Babulal Babu was attacked with a serious type of Asiatic Cholera at his native place after four years and died.

The **mental** condition of *Cicuta* is worth-remembering, because the mental condition is really guiding. This type of fits may also be found in other remedies, specially *Nux vom*, but *Nux* is highly irritable and full of excitement. In any case, mental symptoms are to be carefully noted. Master Hahnemann has repeatedly advised us to look to the mental picture in every case.

In many cases during Typhoid fever or Meningitis or in Dentition cases of little ones, if epileptic fits complicate the case, it has been seen that Cicuta has cleared up the condition, when other remedies could bring in a complete cure.

Loss of memory,—The loss of memory which this remedy has may be periodical or continued. A case may be reported here.

Case Report,—There was a patient, an inhabitant of Cutch, under the treatment of Dr. Bsanta Kumar Mitra of Jheria near Dhanbad. Recently he had suffered from an attack of Typhoid fever and Basanta Babu treated Homœopathically and cured him. The patient got his first diet on the 49th day but unfortunately it was found that he had lost his memory altogether, and could not recognise his house-hold members and even the nearest of his relations. All the members of his family as well as the neighbours were under the impression that the patient had turned perfectly insane. Under this circumstance, Basanta Babu did not dare keeping the patient solely under his treatment and asked my consultation and help. Both of us put our heads together and simply on the basis of deeply dejected mental condition, we selected Cicuta and gave it in 1M potency. Within a fort-night his natural memory was found to return.

There is another form of loss of memory in this remedy, as also in few others, which is rather *periodic*. But if the mental condition is found Cicuta can cure.

There are a few other remedies having the loss of memory which should be brought in for comparison in this connection.

(1) *Nux mos*—Intense drowsiness is the main characteristic attended with intense dryness of the mouth with absolute want of thirst. Moreover, *Nux mos* has susceptibility to fainting fits.

(2) *Zinc met*—It has trembling of the whole body with much fidgetiness of the lower limbs, so much so that the patient continues moving his feet even during sleep.

(3) *Natrum mur*—has an intense desire for salt and salty things, violent thirst for cold water, profuse sweat, inveterate constipation, desire for repeated cold baths, emaciation, sadness but with desire to remain alone.

(4) *Medorrhinum*—has also loss of memory but mostly for the names of places and persons; *Medorrhinum* is specially forgetful of recent events which seem to him to have happened a long long time back. The *Medorrhin* patient is sycotic.

Cicuta has also the anti-psoric effect, by virtue of which it can re-produce the eczema or any eruptions that have been suppressed, as a result of which epileptic fits are found to appear. Here *Sulphur* should be remembered. Our illustrious Dr. E. B. Nash cured an obstinate head-eczema which looked like a hat over the head, by the help of Cicuta.

There is a type of convergent strabismus in which the eyeballs are drawn inwards, which can be cured by Cicuta in case the mental condition is there. *Cina* and *Cyclamen* have also this symptom.

Nux has also hysteric fits without loss of memory and consciousness. But Cicuta has the true type of epilepsy, in which both are impaired or lost. Both

the remedies are chilly, though *Nux* has much more excitement and impatience.

Potency—6 to 1000. The higher potencies have been used by many, though myself had not the occasion for using higher than 1000.

CINA.

Before writing anything upon this oft-used remedy, I want to remove the erroneous idea from the mind generally entertained. Most of the physicians are found to be under the idea that *Cina* is the *remedy of worms*. But it should always be borne in mind that there can be no remedy for a particular *disease* or a *disease symptom* of a human being, unless and until *the totality of symptoms* tallies. If there are symptoms of *Cina* in a patient, it will cure him irrespective of the presence of worms in the stool. There are various remedies which can manufacture worms, but only one of them is to be needed, which has symptom-similarity.

There is another thing which should be carefully noted. You cannot think of a remedy or remedies for a particular *disease* in Homœopathy. Homœopathy does not treat *diseases* but *diseased individuals*, and so the maxim runs "*Treat the patient and not the disease.*" Suppose, a man has got Pneumonia or Bronchitis or Broncho-Pneumonia, but nothing is there in a name, the man is to be treated in accordance with the symptom-similarity, so that the individual will be cured and necessarily the disease will be removed.

There are diseases of various names which are useless with regard to treatment. The principle is that the man must be cured, so that his disease-condition must necessarily be removed. Why has he got Pneumonia, or Constipation, or Asthma, or Piles, or any disease of whatever name? Because the Vital Force of the individual person has not been working properly, and selection of the remedy must depend upon the totality of symptoms as manifested in each case of the diseased individuals. So that because the man is ill, therefore he has the disease. Treat the patient according to the totality of symptoms and the disease will be nowhere. The child who is getting worms in his stool is diseased, i.e., his vitality has not been working naturally and so there are found worms in the stool. Take the totality of symptoms of the child and select the remedy accordingly, which will cure the child and there shall be no worms. People generally ask for a few doses of Cina because a child in the family has been passing worms. This procedure is wrong, and the people should be properly convinced.

Now let us come to the Cina symptoms. The most important point of Cina is its deplorably irritable condition of mind. Though the mental condition of each and every remedy must be taken into consideration before selection for a particular case in hand, yet the mind of Cina and of *Chamomilla* is the most important thing to be considered. Extremely ill-humoured, irritable, and highly impatient. Intense sensitiveness is its feature, obstinate and indignant, the patient cannot be consoled or satisfied. Both mind and body are sensitive. Even touch aggravates.

You cannot think of consoling a Cina child, because consolation aggravates.

The Cina child wants to rub over the nose, itches and keeps on boring at it. During sleep the child grinds the teeth and makes various sounds; sleep is restless, and sometimes the child startles up during sleep and generally wants to lie on the abdomen. During the first part of sleep, the child passes urine involuntarily.

The appetite of Cina is rather voracious and can not be satisfied. The child desires many things which, if given, are thrown off. Of course, sweet things are more wanted, though the child itself does not know as to what will give satisfaction, and as a matter of fact the child cannot be satisfied.

Just form a clear picture of the remedy and if such a patient is found to pass worms with the stool, it is all right, and that symptom will also be removed if Cina is administered under the above totality.

The face of a Cina child is discoloured, pale and stern; tongue is generally without coating but there is a voracious appetite all along. Cina has also convulsions but the mind of Cina must be there.

There is an intermittent type of fever in Cina in which the following symptoms are to be noted, viz, thirst only during the cold stage, seldom in other stages, tongue clear but with vomiting, nausea and voracious appetite. But the Cina mind must be there.

Cina and Chamomilla. Regarding the mental condition, the two remedies are similar but *Chamomilla* wants consolation and desires being carried on the lap, whereas the Cina child is averse to all these, even a

touch or a slight attention aggravates a Cina case. Moreover, rubbing or boring at the nose, voracious appetite, etc., are not to be found in *Chamo*. *Chamo* has rather an absolute want of appetite.

I have found from my experience that in many cases where duly administered remedies do not act, Cina can clear up and improve and sometimes cure them. It seems to act like *Sulphur*, though there are not *Sulphur* symptoms present in the case. In such cases, specially of younger ones, if *Sulphur* is not indicated, I strongly recommend Cina.

Case Report,—There was a mess in 21, College Street, Calcutta, where a child of eleven years, the son of a Barisal gentleman, fell ill of Typhoid fever and was kept under Allopathic treatment. There was a steady improvement all along, which stopped on the 39th day. I was called in and found that daily rise of temperature up to 99.5° in the afternoon with a fall down to 98° in the morning was continuing. In other respects, the child was all right, and it appeared that the patient must have to be given diets as he had rather a voracious appetite. The child was chilly and I thought of and administered *Psorinum* 200. Though I waited for four days no improvement was found. Then a single dose of Cina 200 was given and the patient was cured.

Clean tongue, voracious appetite, irritability of mind with aggravation from consolation, are the totality of Cina to be clearly borne in mind.

Modalities,—Aggravation,—during night, specially just before midnight, in open air and in cold air; moreover, touch and any form of attention or consolation are

aggravating ; rest also aggravates, and movement ameliorates.

Potency,—200th and 1000th are in general use.

CINNABARIS.	<i>Anti-Psoric,</i> <i>Anti-Sycotic</i> <i>and</i> <i>Anti-Syphilitic.</i>	}
-------------	---	---

This remedy is found to be of more use now-a-days on account of the universal prevalence of the Sycosis and Syphilis, these miasms being covered by the remedy. Of course, there are many remedies, viz, *Hepar sulph*, *Nitric acid*, *Merc sol*, *Thuja*, etc, each of which has the above two miasms and Cinnabaris is only one of them. Each of the remedies must have to be selected and used in accordance with the symptom-similarity.

Cinnabaris has the special efficacy of making the human mind and human brain dull and worthless. The patient turns up extremely dull and idle. Memory is almost lost and the acuteness of the brain is dulled down. Moreover, there are various types of skin diseases attended with itching ; warts and condylomatas are also found on the skin of the Cinnabaris patient.

The tendency to bleeding is specially to be found in this remedy, e. g, bleeding from the nose, from the warts and condylomatas, from the piles and from the ulcerations of the body. There are various peculiar sensations, as of creeping of ants with itching there-

from ; as if the left leg has been shortened ; as if there is a spectacle over the nose ; etc, etc. Moreover, burning and stitching pains are felt over the mouth of the penis.

There are skin eruptions of various colours, specially red. This reddishness is also found over the patient's face and round the eyes, attended with a bit of swelling.

Extreme touchiness like that of *Hepar sulph* is found in this remedy, though a good deal of relief is found in open air. And again, the patient feels chilly in a closed room. General aggravation is during summer and in the night. Rest and medium temperature are relieving.

There is a bad type of constipation with stiff and thick feces attended with prolapsus of the rectum. Various eruptions and fan-like warts are also seen round the anus.

Case Report,—Sj.....Roy, aged 31, came under my treatment in November, 1928. From his facial appearance, the reddish hue and a bit of swollen condition of his face, it appeared that a premonitory condition of leprosy was there. Information was received that he had been affected with both Gonorrhœa and Syphilis and that all symptoms of those two ugly diseases were forcibly suppressed by injections. At present there were various warts and condylomatas over and around the genitals, and though he got them removed lots of times, they continued to re-appear again and again. For these appearances he was much anxious and perturbed. Some of those warts were found to exude offensive secretions. The patient was chilly, and so I gave him *Thuja* 200th & 1000th, but to no effect. At last I fixed upon

When going to compare with other remedies of this nature, *Calcarea carb* stands foremost. But Cistus has the predominance of glandular derangements. The glands of the neck are specially affected,—they get enlarged, suppurated and sometimes indurated. Moreover, it is badly chilly. *Calcarea carb* is mostly fat and corpulent, whereas Cistus is just the opposite, though exhaustion and glandular derangement are found in both the remedies. One thing more, *Calcarea carb*, though has profuse sweat as in Cistus, yet the notable point is in the latter remedy that it is general, whereas in the former, i.e., in *Calcarea carb*, it is partial and more towards the upper part of the body, specially head and forehead. Both the remedies are extensively used in various types of chronic cases.

Case Report.—Sj. Shyamapada Roy, aged 36 or 37, came under my treatment in 1923, and delivered his case as in the following,—“Sir, I am extremely chilly and I am never free from cold feeling. As a result of slight exposure to cold, the glands of the throat swell up and I find a good deal of difficulty in swallowing. Moreover, for the last 10 or 12 years I have been suffering from catarrhal troubles of my chest. I am much susceptible to cold and however careful I am, I must catch it. Apart from the new attacks of cold and coryza, I have always a chronic catarrhal condition in the air passages and lungs. My nose is also full of catarrh, and I feel that what I eat turns into sputum. I am a lover of Homœopathy and I know a bit of it. I have used *Belladonna* and *Calcarea carb* in varied potencies but almost to no effect.”

I studied the whole case and at first gave *Calcareo carb* in a high potency but in fact found no benefit. I enquired and found that the patient desired much spiced things and salty articles; moreover, had no dislike for milk or any special liking for eggs. Taking all these things together and specially the thin appearance of the patient, I gave him *Cistus canadensis*, first in 1000th potency and got some benefit. After that I used the remedy in higher and higher potencies up to C.M., and the patient was fully cured. One thing must have to be noted in this connection that the *sense of chilliness* is a predominant feature in *Cistus*, and is hardly to be found in any other remedy.

In all catarrhal diseases, *Cistus canadensis* may appear to be useful and curative, *but the intense and inveterate chilliness must be there.* The intense susceptibility to cold, constant chilliness, and emaciation are the notable features. There is one thing more, which should be mentioned in this connection, viz, when the *Cistus* patient throws up the nasal catarrh or sputum, he must invariably feel a sensation from the spot from which it is raised and that sensation may be coldness, soreness or burning, as different patients feel it in different ways.

What is generally termed "*scrofula*" is likely to be met in most cases by this remedy. Chronic suppuration in the ears as also in the corners of the eyes, ulcerations in the lip-corners and in many parts of the body of most obstinate type are cured by this remedy if the constitutional totality as mentioned above is found.

*If the constitution of a Cistus patient is properly studied, it will appear as if the tubercular taint is dormant within the system and is simply waiting for the opportune moment for full development. Now-a-days by virtue of suppressive treatment and senseless injections, tubercular developments are largely accelerated and so the destructive course is rather helped than delayed.

Ulceration.—If the constitutional totality of symptoms is present, various types of ulceration all over the body, more specially in the gums, are cured by this remedy. The ulceration is very much obstinate and the discharges are highly offensive. I have already said regarding the glandular derangement of this remedy and I had a case which was cured by this remedy after failure of *Calcareo carb* and *Carbo animalis*. A particular case report is given below.

Case Report.—Sj.....Roy, aged 36 or 37 years, came under my treatment in 1932. The patient was an inhabitant of a village named Jara in the district of Midnapur. As soon as I entered the patient's house, his wife, the only adult attendant wept aloud and gave the following case. A few small children were round the patient's bed. The good wife said,—“Father, my husband has been lying ill for the last four months and I am sure, you are the person to save his life. For the last 15 or 20 days, he has not been taking any amount of food unless it is forced. Before that time he had an average appetite, but now-a-days he has almost none. You will please see that even in these hot days, he is lying quite covered, even the head is bandaged with a piece of cloth. No appetite, no thirst,

hardly any fever, and no body knows what is the matter with him. I called in two eminent physicians who declared the case to be a T. B. one and that there is no cure of this condition and the patient will go on emaciating and emaciating and will die. Father, you are the inhabitant of our neighbouring district and so I have dared, etc. etc."

I now commenced examining the patient and found that lots of glands, almost all over the system, were in swollen condition. He was very much weak and could only reply to a few of my querries in a very low tone. He was so much nervous and chilly, that he would at once cover the part which I finished examining. No appetite, *grit* all gone, saddest of the sad and extremely emaciated. From his mental condition, *Psorinum* came to the forefront but the condition of the glands stood in the way. *Arsenicum iodatum* could not be thought of, as no other symptoms of the remedy were there. There was profuse sweat along with the extreme chilliness. I could not give him any remedy then and there, and came back to my dispensary and studied the whole case. I thought of *Cistus* but did not dare give him higher than 200th. I found to my surprise that within a month much benefit was shown under three doses of 200, so much so, that the glands of the throat were much reduced. As the abdominal glands were not affected, I thought of rising higher. But it should be noted that under the action of 200th the patient got some appetite and a bit of facial flush seemed to have returned. A bit of strength was also gained. Now 1000th potency was commenced and in course of a few months under the action of a dose

each month, the patient was cured, so that the diseased condition could not be found in any way.

* You should know that a truly curative action must commence in the upper part of the body and proceed downwards. In this case under the action of 200th, the throat glands were found to have been first influenced, from which it was clear that the remedy was goodly selected and truly curative action commenced. Had it been otherwise, i.e., had the abdominal glands been first reduced, the remedy should have to be changed.

* The main characteristic of a tubercular patient, viz, intense desire for things that must aggravate, not being found in Cistus, it is better to classify this remedy as a Psoric one. Of course, if suppressive treatment is followed, tubercular developments may come in, as we have found in a few cases.

There is a crawling and itching all over the body in the Cistus patient, which is sometimes very persistent and obstinate.

There is also found soreness within the throat on exposure to slightest cold, which is ameliorated by warmth and warm food. A patient feels as if his throat is covered with velvet. But it should be noted that it cannot be used in every case of throat affection, because the whole case must have to be considered. *Belladonna* or such short-acting remedies may be thought of in this condition, because Cistus has a slow pace and cannot be used in any acute condition. A chronic patient having the totality of symptoms along with the *tendency* of such throat affection may be met by Cistus if its symptoms are there. But in order to

meet the actual acute condition it should never be used.

Potency,—From 200th upto C. M.

CLEMATIS ERECTA. }

*Anti-psoric,
Deep-Anti-Sycotic
&
Syphilitic.*

This remedy is of more use now-a-days as it commands all the miasms, specially Sycosis.

* All diseases of the human system originate from breaking of the natural laws, but people are generally found to be fond of the methods of treatment which are *suppressive*, because the manifested symptoms that are inconvenient and painful are thereby easily got rid of. But the result is that complicacies and even incurable conditions appear from suppressive treatments. Under this circumstance, if the diseased individual mends his ways of living and has the will to cure, in that case only the truly curative method of homœopathy can bring him round. The way of true cure is by *influx*, i. e ; the disease symptoms that have been suppressed must have to be brought out and then the truly similar remedy will cure. That is the only method and process of cure and there is no other.

* When by virtue of sinful sexual connections, a man is affected with Gonorrhœa, he should not think of stopping the discharge by injections and such other external methods now in vogue. The true way is the removal of the discharge by the use of truly similar

internal remedies. But if you suppress by the said external methods, you thereby invite eternal sufferings of various nature. Now with the remedy.

In case where the patient has already been affected with Gonorrhœa, and by virtue of suppressive methods applied, the discharge has already been stopped, in that case the true method of cure must be to get the reappearance of discharge. Many of our brother physicians are sadly under the impression that special medicines like *Thuja*, *Medorrhin*, *Nitric acid*, etc, must have to be administered but that is clearly a mistake. It must have to be borne in mind that in every such case the only remedy that can be thought of and that can commence the true mode of healing is to be selected upon the totality of the patient's constitutional and individual symptoms; and on the application of such a remedy, the discharge will be re set and the process of cure will commence. The discharge should be allowed to continue.

In these cases, patients generally want their physicians to hurry up and stop the discharge immediately or within a short time. But they should be taught that it is not possible and should not be done, had it been possible. I cannot refrain from quoting a few lines from our illustrious Dr. Kent—"The returning discharge is often unmanageable and may resist treatment *for years*, because the miasm has become deep-seated, and the discharge *should* exist, until this miasm has been cured. Treating the discharge as a gleet is a most dangerous and unhomœopathic management." (The italics are ours). When the discharge is slowed down, a higher potency of the

constitutional remedy which brought out the discharge, should have to be given, upon which the discharge will increase. By and by when the discharge will stop and will not re-appear even after a higher potency, it should be understood that the miasm of Sycosis has been cured and the stoppage of the discharge is an indication to that effect.

* In these cases and in the typical complicated chronic cases, the selected medicine should be given not in the usual single dose fashion but in graduated courses as directed by our Master in the Sixth Edition of the Organon.

Mind—The curious mental symptoms of Clematis appear as a result of the suppression of the Gonorrhœal discharge. There is hardly any mental peace. The patient cannot remain alone nor in company. The surroundings appear terrible. Sycotic patients generally like privacy and do not at all like crowds. At the same time they fear to remain alone and are generally apprehensive of danger. *The mind is full of suspicion and fear.*

Skin—The skin symptoms and eruptions appear, just like those of *Rhus tox.* One thing to be especially borne in mind is that there is a point of similarity between the remedies regarding the chief modality of skin symptoms, viz, both are aggravated from washing with cold water and ameliorated by warm washing. So it is very difficult to differentiate in actual cases in hand. But if you remember that Clematis has the peculiar modality, viz, aggravation in bed warmth, whereas *Rhus* has amelioration thereby, your difficulty will be solved. Moreover, as a patient

Clematis has the drowsiness, but *Rhus* is proverbially restless.

Gum-pains—In gum-pains you can also distinguish the remedy from *Rhus* by this that Clematis has aggravation of gum-pains in bed-warmth and from any kind of warmth and has the only relief by keeping cold water in the mouth but *Rhus* has just the opposite.

Sycosis—When the Gonorrhœal flow has already been suppressed by injections or any other suppressive means, Sycotic miasm is prepared and Clematis is one of the remedies to meet the miasm and cure the patient. To know whether Clematis is indicated, you are to note the following, viz., the *patient never feels his bladder empty of urine*. He feels constant and frequent urgencies for urination and urinates every time, however small quantity it may be, but he feels that his bladder is always full of urine. Of course, by and by he can pass urine only in drops and at last stricture comes in. The urethra gets indurated and much uneasiness and pain are felt there. Sometimes he cannot urinate without the help of a catheter but hardly there is any urine. However, before stricture comes in, the symptoms of Clematis are intense tenesmus *during* urination and stitching pains. But before and after urination there is intense burning in the canal. You are always to bear in mind the picture of Clematis as given above.

Orchitis,—On account of suppression of the Gonorrhœal flow, Orchitis may come up, and generally *Pulsatilla* is needed because the totality of *Pulsatilla* symptoms is in most cases found. But where the

Orchitis is on the right side with swelling, redness, soreness and burning, having an aggravation in bed-warmth and on walking, Clematis will cure the case. In Clematis cases, frequent urgency for urination, a feeling that the whole quantity of urine is not evacuated, thin stream and intense tenesmus are found.

Rheumatism,—Apart from Orchitis, Rheumatism may also appear as a result of suppression. This Rheumatism also aggravates in the warmth of the bed and as soon as a patient commences to sleep.

Wherever there is a disease condition as a result of suppression of the Gonorrhœal flow, the proper course for a cure is by re-establishing the suppressed flow and there is no other course. To alleviate the aches and pains or the local conditions, with the help of superficial and short-acting remedies is no cure but only an apology for it. The true curative method is to get the whole case of the patient properly recorded and to administer a remedy selected on the *constitutional* basis and in high potencies. Thereby the discharge will re-appear, and the painful disease symptoms of the patient will be removed.

Case Report,—Sreebas Kar, aged 29 or 30, came under my treatment in 1929, for his stricture and rheumatic pains, from Brindaban Basak Lane, Calcutta, when I was practising from 72, Beadon Street. He had an attack of Gonorrhœa in 1925 and took injections for it. For five or six months after this he was all right, but after that, he found that there was a frequent urgency for urination but a sufficient quantity of urine was not coming out and that sometimes the flow would

of his body. The third thing that you should remember in this connection, is its terrible *vertigo associated with vomiting and nausea*. These three things make a complete picture of this remedy.

Now with regard to the *origin*. Night-keeping, fear, and continued anxious thoughts may bring in Cocculus symptoms. Sound, touch and any sad news aggravate, more specially, exertion aggravates. The symptoms of this remedy are more felt when walking in the sun, during nights, specially in the mid-night. Extreme exhaustion, sadness, terror and dejected condition, associated with extreme nervousness and anxiety, are the things to be remembered in connection with this remedy.

General Symptoms—The Cocculus condition of a patient may be said to be *paralytic*. He feels that he has to exert so much in ordinary thinking and even in speaking. Continued night-keeping for a long time, attendance and care-taking for patients and children, deep mental labour in form of study or writing books may bring in Cocculus condition, when the patient has almost no sleep and has to suffer from troublesome headache, vertigo, loss of appetite, vomiting and nausea, and the patient sinks down in the deep abyss of sadness and dejection.

Case Report—Pt. Shibaram Bhattacharya, aged 37 or 38 years, had to labour much for preparing 30 or 32 students of his Sanskrit School for the Title Examination and he was pulled down under continued night-keeping and study. At first he suffered from vertigo and nausea. Six or seven days before the examination he was confined to bed. There was hardly any

appetite and even the name of food was nauseating. He thought that a few days' rest would improve but far from it. Loss of appetite and sleep made the case very much serious and he had continually to lie still in the bed as even small movements would badly aggravate the vertigo and nausea. His life was despaired of and his eldest son took me there at his house to see his father and cure him, if possible. Upon the above totality I gave him *Cocculus* 200, three doses and advised him to take a dose of 1000th, if necessary. No necessity arose as the 200th potency, used every alternate days, fully cured him.

Now to compare with *Bryonia*. The aggravation from movements is so acute and distinct in *Cocculus* that even a slight turning of the neck or even of the eyes aggravates. Riding in carts, palanquin and even in boats aggravates. *Bryonia* has also this aggravation from movement, specially during its fever, when even small movements aggravate the nausea, but *Bryonia* has relief from pressure, which in *Cocculus* is aggravating. Moreover, there is hardly any exhaustion in *Bryonia* as in *Cocculus*.

Nitric acid is just the opposite, because roaming or riding in carriages relieves.

Nerve-centres,—The action of the remedy is quite peculiar regarding the nerve-centres. The point to be remembered is that there is an intense weakness and exhaustion of the nerves, yet there is found a great irritation and excitement. The hands tremble and things slip down from the hands. On the slightest cause, e. g., cold exposure, sun-heat, slightest fall or pressure, a good deal of impatience as well as irrita-

tion come in. Running cars, running boats and flowing rivers, when looked upon by the patient, bring in vertigo and nausea. Power of thinking and memory are slowed down. There is a good deal of confusion in understanding what is read or what is heard, and the patient falters down when speaking as if he is at a loss to find apt language. What has been read or done a moment before, he cannot remember. With all these difficulties, the vertigo associated with nausea is present.

* Though this remedy has not been styled by my worthy predecessors as a Syco-Psoric remedy, yet from my long experience I can definitely assert, as can also be ascertained from the cases cited herein, that in it the Sycotic miasm has been conjoined with Psora. The causes of Cocculus disease symptoms, viz., continued night-keeping, violent mental labour, etc., are not at all the *true* causes but only the *exciting* ones. When the patients are affected from the hereditary flow with Sycosis or vaccinated lots of times, they get within their system the Syco-Psoric miasm and is thereby prepared a fit field for the Cocculus symptoms, and manifest them, as soon as the *exciting* causes like night-keeping and brain labour are supplied. You should always remember that vaccination is a pernicious mode of developing the Sycotic miasm within the human system. Our illustrious Dr. J. H. Allen was perhaps the first to discover the truth and my humble self, with the help of my long experience fully concur with him. Now-a-days, the Sycotic miasm has become most common or rather universal in our society. So, there is no wonder that Cocculus

patients are being prepared oftener than formerly. If I am permitted to cite my own case, I can say that I worked as a Head-master of H. E. Schools for a long time and then as a pleader for pretty good eighteen years and along with those, I have been practising Homœopathy for more than 36 years, and not a single day passes, even now, without at least twelve hours' hard mental labour; yet at this age of 60th year, I do not know what an exhaustion is. Moreover, many personages who conducted their lives in purity and asceticism, have been known to have Cocculus condition. Under these circumstances, it may be declared with confidence that unless there is the Miasm behind as a field, there cannot be any manifestation as in Cocculus and such other remedies. The mental labour, night-keeping, etc., are only *exciting* causes.

Case Report.—Sj. Ramanath Chatterji, an inhabitant of Chandanpur, P. O. Bilaspur, aged 33 or 34 years, came under my treatment in 1918. The patient was horribly pulled down and so his wife, elder brother and his only son accompanied him and fixed a house on the side of the Bekar Bandh, Purulia. In the afternoon of 11th March, I was called in to see the patient and I found him lying still on the bed, as if wholly absorbed in deep thinking. One of my assistants and myself took our seats on the side of his bed, and his elder brother, Sj. Taranath Chatterji, welcomed us and offered betels and cigarettes, yet the patient appeared not to notice, or pay any attention to us. Had he not been a patient, we might have thought his conduct rather humiliating. But Taranath Babu asked

excuse of us and said that the patient was in such a condition that even the slightest turn of his head would bring in a violent vertigo with nausea. On that account, he said he had to take special care of the patient so long as he was in the railway carriage. He must always have to lie still, otherwise his condition would frightfully aggravate. The patient was of a bit irritable nature but of a highly pure and spiritual character. His father was a high Government servant in the Judicial department.

In the month of April, 1915, the patient had vertigo for the first time, attended with vomiting and nausea. He had to make mental labours by way of teaching a good many students and spent much time even up to midnight in meditation and other spiritual works. His good wife warned him lots of times against so much mental labour, but he did not listen to her admonitions. However, when the difficulties arose he had been to a good Allopathic physician of Bilaspur, who prescribed two Allopathic patent medicines., viz., Nerve Vigour and Huxley's Syrup, by virtue of which he was much better up to the end of 1917. Then the difficulties re-appeared, when the patient approached the then good Civil Surgeon of Purulia, Dr. Rai Barada Kanta Roy, Bahadur, M. D., who openly declared that in these conditions Allopathy can do no good and recommended my name and sent him to me, when I was working as a pleader and a Homœopathic physician (under the special permission of the Hon'ble High Court).

I fully examined the patient and got the symptoms as above. I fixed upon *Cocculus* and used it 30th and

upwards with a gradual rise, and for a perfect cure I had to use the remedy up to 5000. Wonder of wonders, when the patient was going through the 1000th potency of the remedy, his whole body was covered with various warts and condylomatas of many colours and sizes. When I rose to the 5000th, painful and bleeding piles appeared, and the disease symptoms for which he came to me were no more to be found. He gained in beauty and weight. But on his request I had to take up his constitutional treatment and had to use *Thuja*, *Sulphur*, *Staphysagria*, etc. The treatment and cure of this patient will clearly show the deep anti-sycotic nature of *Cocculus*.

On comparison with *Colchicum* you will find that want of desire for food and nausea on the very name of food are in both the remedies. But *Cocculus* has a gone feeling in the stomach and abdomen, whereas *Colchicum* has fulness and stuffiness there.

You should always remember the individual peculiarities of *Cocculus*, and if they are present, it can very well be used in female diseases where the menstrual discharges are profuse, continued and come in every two weeks. White discharges occur between two menstruations. In some cases, there is only a continued course of white flow instead of menses.

The remedy may also be used in Rheumatism, Headache, etc., if the mental condition and nervous irritation are present.

Modalities.—*Cocculus* cannot tolerate either cold or heat. It has a good desire for cold drinks, but cold drinks and cold food aggravate rheumatic pains. It has also an aggravation in open air, in sun-heat, in

cold, in bed-warmth and specially in movements. Anything flowing or running, when looked upon, aggravates.

Potency,—30th, 200th and 1000th are in common use. The higher potencies are also useful.

COCCUS CACTI.

Coccus cacti comes from a type of small insect, and as all the remedies from the animal kingdom are more or less deep-acting, it is also of that nature. Unfortunately, it has not been sufficiently proved.

The main use of this remedy is in *whooping cough*. Its cough aggravates towards the dawn and in the morning. The coughing commences as soon as the patient rises up from bed, and a *profuse quantity of transparent and stringy mucus* is ejected, after which the coughing stops. Many prescribe *Kali bi* simply for the stringy nature of the mucus but the difference between the two remedies must be remembered, which lies in this that the *Kali bi* mucus is yellowish and that of *Coccus cacti* is white and transparent.

In all mucous diseases in any region from throat to chest, *Coccus cacti* may be thought of and used with success, if the following symptoms and peculiarities are there. (1) Soreness and sensitiveness from the mouth and gums up to throat, so that any touch in that region will bring rise to severe cough which only stops after a good deal of vomiting. (2) Ejection of profuse stringy mucus with vomiting towards the end of cough

relieves the fit. (3) Its aggravation is in warm room, in warmth, specially bed-warmth, after eating, immediately after break of sleep, specially towards early dawn and morning and from the beginning of summer. The amelioration comes in from drinking cold water. During the cough, suffocation is apprehended and the face gets reddened up, so that the child tries, as long as possible, to suppress the cough and commences coughing only when he can no longer hold in.

* Though it may be taken as a routine advice, yet I think I should say that the whooping cough is a very troublesome type of disease for the children who are miasmatic. So that in order to shorten the time of suffering and to cure within the shortest possible time, remedies like *Ipecac*, *Carbo veg* or *Sulphur* should be administered at the very start, as a result of which the whole thing may be properly-manifested early and then a remedy which is truly symptomatic in the case may be at once fixed up.

* One thing which should be paid attention to, is that there are patients who may be *constitutionally* different from the remedy or remedies which must have to be administered to them, according to the modalities of their whooping cough, and if so, the symptomatic remedy or remedies should always be given in low and medium potencies. This is important. But where the patients are constitutionally of the same modalities, higher potencies are of course to be thought of.

The mental condition of this remedy may be said to be a deep dejection and apprehension and fear for

the future. Sometimes the patient is so much sad and hopeless that he desires to commit suicide. The mental condition aggravates after the sleep breaks up and towards the dawn.

Urinary Organs.—Coccus has a good action upon the kidneys and bladder. The urine is full of sediment. There is a frequent urgency for urination. But the main point is that *unless a blood-clot comes out*, there is no flow of urine. The female patients of this remedy have also that symptom, viz., unless a big clot comes out, there is no menstrual flow. Profuse discharge continuing for a long time is found in this remedy. At first there are *delivery-like bearing-down pains, after which black clots come out and then the real flow starts*.

Careful and extended provings of this remedy are very much needful, and it is possible that many more symptoms may be developed making the remedy useful in various types of diseases.

Potency.—6, 30 and 200 are in general use.

I cannot close this remedy without giving a *Case Report*,—Sreemati.....Debi, aged 40 or 41, extremely emaciated and sad, came under my treatment for horribly profuse menstruation in October, 1930. On a careful enquiry, I could not get any distinct set of symptoms, so as to arrive at the exact remedy in her case and so I had to use *Millefolium*, *Carbo veg* and a few other remedies, but without any happy result. At last, after tedious questionings, I came to know that black clots must come out with every flow and there was an aggravation towards the latter part of the night.

Moreover, she was all along chilly, and mentally very sad. All these symptoms together directed my attention to Coccus, and two or three doses of 200th and only one dose of 1000th not only cured her profuse menstruation but her mental condition also was greatly improved. I notice in every case that its action is goodly deep.

COFFEA CRUDA.

Coffea, though sometimes indispensable, is altogether superficial and cannot be thought of in chronic cases.

Nature.—Its nature may be expressed in one word, and that is its *impatient mood*. The disease symptom may be altogether trifling, yet the patient *feels* it to be very *grave* and *serious*. This *feeling* is important. Though the disease symptom is practically nothing, yet the patient *feels* it to be grave and serious, and therefore shows much impatience over it,—that is the sphere of *Coffea*.

Our feeling is generally of three types, viz, (1) excessive, or more than what is real; (2) much less than what is real and actual; (3) altered or changed, i.e., of altogether different type from what it actually is. In *Coffea* patients, the feeling is of the first type, in other words, the patient feels even a slight pain very much more acutely than what an ordinary man under the circumstances would feel. He is too much sensitive. Suppose, there is a spot very slightly

painful, but the *Coffea* patient will be so much sensitive and impatient that he cannot tolerate any body to approach his hands towards the spot. A slight touch, cold air and even slow fanning aggravate.

Insomnia,—It is a good acute remedy for insomnia which comes as a separate disease symptom or during the suffering of some disease, acute or chronic. As soon as the patient closes his eyes for sleep, a thought-current commences to flow in his mind and those thoughts are not at all orderly. It is due to extreme mental or nervous irritation, so that the mind runs even to the slightest sound in the neighbourhood.

Gum-Pains,—The gum-pains of this remedy, however slight, really bewilder the patient, so that the patient feels the pains absolutely insufferable. The pains may be of various nature, viz, drawing, pinching, stitching, etc. Patient fears open and cold air, as a variety of neuralgic pains may appear after the exposure. One thing you must have to remember in this connection, which is, that the gum-pains of any nature are ameliorated by keeping cold water into the mouth. As soon as the water is warmed up, the patient has to throw it off and to take in a further quantity of cold water. The pains of *Coffea* are aggravated by movements, mental irritation, fear, anger, exposure to cold wind and from warm food or warm drink. The slightest pain of *Coffea* seems unbearable,—this is the point. The head-pains are generally one-sided and of stitching nature, and get badly aggravated in open air.

Chamomilla is also much impatient, but the *Chamo* patient gets relief from being taken into the lap and

walking. But you can never think of touching the *Coffea* patient. *Chamo* wants to walk in the open air, *Coffea* fears it. Of course, the gum-pains are relieved, in both the remedies, by taking cold water into mouth. This relief is also found in *Bryonia*, *Puls*, *Causticum*, *Sepia* and *Natrum sulph*.

Let us compare. *Bryonia* gets relief from pressure, *Pulsatilla* always wants cool and open air, *Causticum* far from having any excitement or irritation, is rather paralytic and is full of dejection. It may appear that *Causticum* and *Coffea* are alike in mental condition. But the difference lies in this that *Causticum* is full of dejection, whereas *Coffea* is impatient and irritable. Moreover, *Causticum* is slow-acting and deep, whereas *Coffea* is swift-acting and very much superficial. *Sepia* is slow and deep but wants bath, which *Coffea* cannot tolerate. Last of all, *Natrum sulph* wants pressure and open air. These remedies are altogether different in nature from *Coffea*, yet the superficial likeness demands comparison.

Case Report,—Sreeram Bose, an inhabitant of Harishpur in the district of Midnapore, got more than two thousand rupees in a certain lottery and was over-joyed. When the news reached him he was holding a class in a village school,—and as soon as he got the news, he began to tremble and his power of speech stopped. His whole body became stiffened. That day I was in the neighbourhood, having been in the house of a pleader, whose case was very serious and I had to remain for that day there. I saw the patient and gave him *Coffea* 30, a few doses every 15 minutes. After the second dose his consciousness

returned. There is no record about the case, so I am unable to give the fuller details. The gentleman was very poor and the sudden news quite upset him in that way.

One word more regarding the insomnia of this remedy. I have found more than once that *Opium* and other remedies are used where in accordance with the patient's condition and symptoms, *Coffea* should be. A particular disease symptom, whatever it might be, should not be treated in Homœopathy, unless in accordance with the totality of symptoms, specially mental. I really wonder how *Opium* can be used where *Coffea* should be, because the mentals are quite different. The former is altogether dull and without any the least capacity to feel, whereas the latter is full of impatience and irritation.

Potency,—6, 30 and 200 are in general use.

COLCHICUM.

Anti-Psoric }
 &
Anti-Sycotic }

It is a rheumatic remedy of great importance. Its action is goodly deep, and in cases of rheumatism as also where heart is affected due to the suppressive treatment of the rheumatic pains it is used,—of course, where the symptoms call for it.

Characteristics,—*The main characteristic of this remedy is the absolute want of desire for food and violent nausea as also vomiting on the sight of food-stuffs and specially from their smell. This vomit-*

ing and nausea are more found from the smell of cooking of eggs and fish. In *Coffea* all the senses are excited, but in *Colchicum* only the sense of smell is found to be morbidly excited. Moreover, in stomach and abdomen, there is an intolerable sense of coldness as well as burning. The lower abdomen is full of gas even to bursting. In cholera, the above sense of burning or coldness, distension of the abdomen and intolerance of the smell of cooking, which brings in nausea and vomiting, are the main and essential points.

The rheumatic pains of this remedy travel along from one joint to another. There may be swelling or not, but this travelling nature must be there. The pains are aggravated, like *Bryonia*, from movements, but unlike the latter which wants pressure, *Colchicum* cannot tolerate even a touch. Moreover, the pains are aggravated from cold and ameliorated by warmth and covering. *Ledum* has the opposite, because its pains are relieved from cold.

Dropsy and swelling,—It is sometimes indicated in swelling and dropsy. The swollen portions are œdematous, urine becomes much less with white sediments, and it contains albumen, sugar and small blood clots. But the local conditions and symptoms are not so much important as the stomach symptoms, above referred to, are. If the latter characteristics are present, the remedy may be used in various types of diseases.

A *Colchicum* patient is very much *chilly* and *weak*. Lots of disease symptoms may appear from cold exposure, specially the rheumatism. Warmth and

covering are very much grateful to him. All pains are aggravated from movement and cannot tolerate touch.

Fever and Typhoid,—It is unfortunate that the stage when this remedy is truly indicated in typhoid fever, is generally taken up by *China* and *Arsenicum album*, as it appears that the symptoms of these two remedies are joined together in *Colchicum*. The typhoid condition of *Colchicum* is very severe and the patient cannot understand his condition. Full of confusion, and the eyes lose their sensitiveness to light. Forehead is full of cold sweat as in *Veratrum*. The nasal cavities are darkened. Apart from all these, the stomach and abdominal symptoms are present, so that the patient is unable to tolerate even the slightest amount of food. *Carbo veg* generally comes in after *Colchicum*.

Dysentery,—Its dysentery generally comes in autumn ;—before stool there is a twisting pain in the abdomen, which forces the patient to bend forwards ; during evacuation, much tenesmus ; the stool is jelly-like and profuse, with streaks of blood ; much thirst ; absolute want of appetite with nausea and vomiting, which are aggravated by movement and specially at the name of food ; much soreness in the lower part of the abdomen.

Heart,—In *Colchicum*, the heart is not *primarily* affected but only as a result of rheumatic pains being suppressed. When the rheumatic pains are suppressed and the heart is thereby deranged, the following symptoms are generally found, viz, aggravation of all symptoms from movement, difficulty of breathing, inability to lie to the left, want of appetite with vomiting and nausea. Under this condition *Colchicum*

should be used in a higher potency, so that the rheumatic pains re-appear and the heart is relieved.

Case-Report,—Sj. Dina Nath Haldar was a trader of Kaviraji drugs and dry plants. Every year towards the end of winter, he was attacked with scabies and he used various indigenous oils for external application. At the age of 23, he had a severe attack of rheumatism which was also suppressed by external ointments and oils. Four or five months after this, he got heart-pains with palpitation. Stitching pains, inability to lie to the left, very much difficulty of breathing on the slightest physical exertion appeared, for which he tried several Kaviraji medicines but hardly to any effect. Then he came to Homœopathy. A learned Homœopathic physician of Jheria gave him *Psorinum* 1000. Having obtained no relief I was consulted, and on the strength of the previous history of suppression of the rheumatic pains, as well as the totality of symptoms that appeared at present, I gave him *Colchicum* 10M, and in course of two weeks the suppressed pains vehemently made their appearance and the heart was relieved. After this he was treated for a perfect cure, the delineation of which is not necessary here.

Potency,—6, 30, 200 and 1000 are in general use.

COLLINSONIA CANADENSIS.

Collinsonia is a medicine which has a special action upon the circulation of human body. It is not so much used in practice, because its action is neither deep nor

steady. Both *Collinsonia* and *Pulsatilla*, *physiologically* act upon the circulation, but each of them should be used upon the totality of individual symptoms of each patient. Regarding these two remedies under consideration it should be borne in mind that *Collinsonia* is chilly, whereas *Pulsatilla* is hot.

Piles,—*Collinsonia* has special action upon the anus where it forms bleeding piles, and bleeds by causing irregular circulation in the system,—this is its main action. The patient feels as if there are so many little sticks in the anus, and along with the bleeding, stitching pains and itching are there. A good deal of constricted feeling in the anus. There is also prolapsus associated with constipation, and the rectum comes out by force of tenesmus which is required during evacuation. In *Collinsonia* there is sometimes diarrhœa as well, but the main feature is constipation, and diarrhœa is only an exception.

Our illustrious Dr. E. B. Nash has nicely given a few distinctive features of *Collinsonia* as compared with *Æsculus*, which are given here, viz, (1) both the remedies have a feeling of having small sharp sticks in the anus but it is *Æsculus* only which has *fulness*, which *Collinsonia* has not; (2) the piles in *Æsculus* hardly bleed, which in *Collinsonia* do profusely and continuously; (3) *Æsculus* has much pain in the small of the back, along with soreness in the parts, which aggravates when walking, *Collinsonia* has no such symptom; (4) *Æsculus* may have constipation or not but *Collinsonia* must have. Apart from all these, as given by Dr. Nash, something must be said regarding the modalities of the remedies. *Æsculus* has aggra-

vation from *physical* exertion and *Collinsonia* has it from *mental* excitement. Moreover, *Collinsonia* has special aggravation in evening and night, and relief towards the dawn and morning.

Heart,—Heart is also affected, though in a secondary way. Heart becomes weak, swift, palpitating and full of pains. And with all these, vertigo and difficulty of breathing are associated. By virtue of the suppression of the anal symptoms or the removal of the piles, the organ is affected, and truly symptomatic treatment, if followed, may relieve it.

Case Report,—Sj Maheswar Pathak, aged 39 years, an inhabitant of Joyrambati, had a shop in Bishnupur. His circumstances were not straitened and so was able to spend lots of money for treatment. This disease had its onset from 1908, and if the previous history were not obtained, it would have been quite impossible to make a prescription. There was practically no modality of the painful symptoms he was suffering from, nor had he any constitutional peculiarity. The only thing that I got was that he had for many years been suffering from a violent form of itches every winter, as also that he would lose his senses or faint down if any operation was conducted before his eyes. He could not tolerate to see any bleeding or severe pains of anybody. All these were practically useless and now the history gave me the key. In December, 1906, he took his treatment in the Medical College Hospital for the painful piles and obstinate constipation. His anal region was operated upon and those symptoms were relieved. After the operation, it was found that there

was a constant apprehension of involuntary coming out of stools, so that he had to wear a napkin in order to press up the region. The patient was chilly. 12th January, 1910.

From the history I thought of giving him *Psorinum* which was administered in 1000th and 10M potencies by and by, but except a general improvement of his health, his real disease condition was not at all touched. Now on 23rd May, I re-studied the case and thought of giving him *Collinsonia*, but as the remedy has hardly any depth to meet such a serious case, I gave him *Sulph* 1000. There was no benefit even, though I waited up to 2nd July, on which date *Collinsonia* 1000 was given. Wonder of wonders, on the 18th July, a report came to the effect that his previous anal symptoms fully returned. It is needless to say that on the strength of various potencies from 1000th to 5M the patient was fully cured. Before this I could not realise that *Collinsonia* can act so deeply.

Potency,—30 to 1000 are generally used, but where there is a history of suppression, much higher potencies may be needful.

COLOCYNTH.

A few words would be sufficient to know the nature of this remedy. It is hardly ever needed in chronic cases but mostly in acute ones, specially colic, I mean abdominal colic. The colic is ameliorated by pressure and by bending forward. If the colic continues for some time, there appears a soreness in the affected spot,

so that a touch even is painful. The relief also comes from warmth and warm applications. This is the nature of Colocynth colic.

Mind,—The mental condition of this remedy is badly irritable and the patient wants to remain perfectly alone. If during the pains, some body asks as to how he is, the patient loses temper even at that. He is full of anger which also brings in or aggravates colic. This symptom is also found in *Chamomilla* and *Staphysagria*.

Colocynth has also *vertigo*, and whenever he suddenly turns his head to the left, he fears he would fall down.

It has a *Sciatica* also in the left side, from the small of the back to the sole. The patient lies on the affected side and wants to be restless, because rest aggravates.

Magnesia phos and Colocynth appear to be just alike in colic, because the modality is same in both. The difference lies in this that the pains of *Magnesia phos* are nervous and cramping, and those of Colocynth are gastric and relating to indigestion, because the Colocynth pains generally come in or aggravate after meals and are associated with nausea, vomiting and even loose stools.

Gnaphalium sciatica is in the right side, aggravated on lying and ameliorated on sitting up. *Belladonna* has also many pains, but the nature of *Belladonna* is that the pains come as suddenly as they leave suddenly.

Potency,—6,30 and 200 are in general use.

CONIUM MACULATUM.

Deep
Anti-Psoric
 &
Anti-Tubercular.

The action of **Conium** is very deep and slow, so much so that the aggravation or amelioration, after its administration, cannot be easily ascertained.

It is not easy to form a picture of this remedy, because many of its symptoms are found in various other remedies.

Picture,—In order to form a rough picture of this remedy, you should remember that its mind goes on slowly, gradually but steadily, towards insanity, and all the glands get hardened by and by. These two things are very important. Now let us go on with its mental condition.

Mind,—The mind is always tired, so that the patient does not like to work but wants to pass the time in quietude and idleness. Absolutely indifferent and dejected, much irritable, so much so that he gets impatient at the slightest contradiction and even call names. But immediately after this, he becomes sorry and dejected. The memory is much impaired, so that he cannot remember anything — it is impossible for the patient to fix his mind on anything or meditate. By and by, the mind gets deranged and the patient acts like a mad man. If this mental condition is ever associated with fever, in that case people would call it a Typhoid condition,—but Conium has never any acute condition like Typhoid. Everything in Conium is *gradual and slow*. The mental change goes on so slowly—and gradually that the family members can

hardly detect. The patient can tolerate neither company nor loneliness,

The Conium patient, just like *Cocculus*, cannot look upon anything moving without getting head-pains, vertigo, nausea, etc. When he travels in trains, he is to be much guarded, because the trees and other things on both sides of the line seem to move in just the opposite direction, and he is aggravated thereby.

Eyes.—The Conium patient feels the lids of his eyes very heavy and they involuntarily close down. There is a photophobia but the eyes do not get red. During his vertigo, he keeps his eyes closed. These are not his eye symptoms but only an effect of his nervous derangement.

The *urine* starts and stops. It flows again after an effort. This is the way of urination.

Though the *sexual* desire is much, but the capacity is less and sometimes altogether absent. Then again, the semen comes out upon the slightest excitement. These appear as a result of too much sexual satisfaction.

Its *cough* aggravates on lying, so that the patient sits up and only after finishing the paroxysm of his cough, he can lie down. *Hyoeyamus* cough also aggravates on lying and is relieved on sitting up but Conium has the aggravation on *first* lying, but afterwards there is no more aggravation. This modality of cough, i. e., aggravation on lying and relief on sitting up is found in very many remedies, and it is the only remedy that is *Manganum* which has *relief of cough on lying*.

There are various *pains* of rheumatic nature in the

spine and the small of the back, but the peculiar feature is that the patient feels relief on hanging down the legs.

The *sweat* symptom of Conium is very peculiar. The *sweat commences just on entering into sleep*, even just on closing eyes before sleep, but it stops so long as the patient keeps in wakeful state. This peculiar sweat symptom of Conium is also found in *Thuja*, but *Thuja* has another peculiarity which Conium has not, viz., *Thuja* sweats only in the uncovered parts and its head does not sweat. *Sambucus* sweats only in the wakeful state, but as soon as sleep comes in, the sweat stops. So, *Sambucus* and *Thuja* are just opposite of Conium.

It may be said that though the underlying Psoric condition is mainly responsible for the above mental condition of the remedy, still as an *exciting* cause, the separation between husband and wife, and so the stoppage or long discontinuance of sexual union may lead to or aggravate it.

Glands.—After the mental condition of Conium, its action over the glands is to be considered. The glands are *enlarged* and *indurated*, but in a very slow process. The glands of the whole system, viz, the maxillary, axillary, abdominal and those of the testes and breasts are mainly affected. There is hardly any tendency to suppuration in them, but they get enlarged and indurated in a very slow process. Before and during the menstrual function, the mammary glands become hard and sore. You should always remember that the Conium patient has the tendency in him or her towards Cancer or Tuberculosis. Conium is never to

be used in the *acute* enlargement and soreness of the glands anywhere in the system, which should be met with acute remedies like *Belladonna*, *Arnica*, *Bryonia*, etc. In more chronic cases, *Merc*, *Pulsatilla* or *Phytolacca*, etc., may be needed, but *Conium* is never to be used in these conditions. When a case takes a more serious turn and the condition of the system is most deplorable along with the afore-said lamentable condition of body and mind, remedies like *Conium*, *Iodine*, etc., are to be thought of.

Vertigo,—Vertigo indicates weakness of the nervous system, and it is no wonder that *Conium* should have it. The peculiarities of *Conium* vertigo are that the patient feels it when lying and when changing the side ; at other times, when he turns the head to the left ; he has to keep the head still, otherwise, a slight movement or turning of the head brings in vertigo. *Silica* has also the vertigo when lying and turning the head to the left. But there is hardly any chance of confusion between the two remedies. One word more regarding *Conium* vertigo, which is that when the *Conium* patient gets the vertigo in lying condition, he also feels that all the furnitures and the house are turning round, and the more he feels it, the more he looks over it, so that he is compelled to close his eyes.

Case Report,—Sj. Jeeban Chandra Haldar, a jeweller, accumulated a large fortune but unfortunately did not get any peace in life. The full history I could not obtain, nor did I require, but so far as I could get, I found that he had all along been passing his days in utter grief and disappointment. He was so absorbed

in dejected thoughts that he did not or could not reply to any body except by a few movements or noddings of his head. This was his condition for the last four or five years. In October, 1927, he came to me for his treatment and declared that he had been so affected from 1923. Wonder of wonders, there was nothing in his family that might have been taken as the cause of so much mental dejection from which he had been suffering. As a man, he was all along pure and simple and mindful for the good of others. What I mean to say is this that there was nothing palpable, which could be taken as the *exciting cause* of his disease. However, I got the following.

Mentally he was so much dejected, as I have said above, associated with which there was a fearful vertigo, so much so that during his walk, often he had to stop as he feared he would tumble down ; he felt a trembling all over his system and two of his servants would carry him and place him over his bed. Most of the time, he kept his eyes closed, otherwise there was much aggravation of his vertigo. Often he would say,—“Well, please do not tease me, if I turn my eyes towards you, I feel that everything surrounding me is going round.” Having spent some time in lying, he used to sit up but passed his time in utter dejection. He did not like to remain alone but he would always avoid conversation or any thing that might draw his attention. He got his case examined by the worthy Civil Surgeons of Purulia and Patna, and both of them declared the case to have been Hypochondriasis or Melancholia. His age was 44 or 45, and he had two sons and one daughter. One of his sons was a student of the

Medical College, and he thought that there was no remedy for it, and so the treatment was quite useless. But the patient had two wives who were strongly bent upon placing him under me.

I examined the patient through and through. I observed various glands of many sizes in a swollen condition in his chest, ribs, armpit, below the knee-joints and throat. They were all painless and were in the same condition for a long time. The good wives said,—“Father, we have been observing that he has been having no sleep for more than a year and he only keeps his eyes closed. We several times asked the reason for his insomnia but we got none”. Lakshmana Babu, the eldest son, also corroborated it.

The patient was very much weak. The tremor and difficulty of breathing used to aggravate after meals and evacuation of stools. Though there was no strong desire for bath, yet he took it daily. There was much perspiration, specially just on entering into sleep and during sleep. The sweat was a bit offensive. There was no history of any self-acquired venereal disease. Nothing could be had regarding heredity. Father died of brain-apoplexy and mother of acute cholera. Except what are stated above nothing more could be obtained. The patient only said,—“My dear Doctor, please heal me up as soon as possible, because, you know, my business is going to be ruined.”

Having duly considered the above symptoms and condition of the patient, I fixed upon Conium. (Some Homœopathic Physician had used, just before my taking up of the case, *Iodine* in several potencies upto 1000 but *Iodine* is highly hot, and so cannot be used in

this patient and as a matter of fact it did no good). Conium 1000 was given by me on 24th October. On the 13th December, I observed a good deal of mental improvement of the patient, but towards the 18th November, there was a break-down and the benefit was not continuous, and so I repeated another dose of the same potency. Upon which the thread of previous improvement seemed to have been taken up and the benefit continued for about six months, when (the exact date is not found in my diary) I gave him a dose of 10 M. The result was that except the swelling of the glands, the patient was all right regarding all other troubles and symptoms. I studied the case anew and used *Calc. carb* upto 10M. It took about two years and a half for his complete cure.

Potency—From 200th upwards. The higher potencies are more beneficial.

CROCUS.

Crocus has no depth of action, so that it is hardly ever used for anti-psoric purposes, yet there are a few symptoms in it, which, if found in patients, require the use of this medicine.

Mind,—The peculiarity of Crocus mind is its hysteric mood. This moment the patient feels himself much fortunate and happy, and in the next moment he feels himself beset with heavy clouds of sorrow and dejection. This moment he gets badly angry and reprimands a person, the next moment he is badly sorry and repentant.

This *changefulness*, the *suddenness* of the change and *absolute absence of any reason* for the change, are the things to be specially remembered. Crocus is highly sentimental, so that he is easily charmed by music or singing. If anybody sings in his presence, he likes to join with him and sing. *Tarentula* has also this love or fondness for music, and his nervousness is much allayed by concordant music. *Bufo rana*, again, is just opposite and is quite averse to music.

Comparison,—Some may think that Crocus mind is like that of *Ignatia* and *Pulsatilla*. But as a matter of fact, Crocus appears to stand in the mid-way between the two. *Ignatia* is chilly but Crocus is neither chilly nor hot, though it can tolerate hot room or summer days, whereas *Puls* is badly hot. All the three have morning aggravation. The next thing is that *Ignatia* wants to remain alone, Crocus has no peculiarity regarding company, whereas *Pulsatilla* badly wants company and consolation. Of course, there is no mental steadiness in any of the three. Lastly, it is *Ignatia* only which has the peculiarity of having diverse symptoms, e.g., it has thirst during the chill of fever but none during heat; during grief there is hysteric laughter, desire for copulation when impotent, amelioration of sore throat from getting food, etc., etc.

Case Report,—I have already said that it has hardly any depth of action but may be used if its characteristic symptoms are present in a case. One thing which you should remember is that, whatever may be the depth of a remedy, if it is used on the strict totality of symptoms, it is quite capable to bring in the influx which is absolutely necessary for a cure.

The following case will give you a good picture of this remedy and prove the truth of my assertion.

Sreemati Karuna Bala Mitraja, aged 28 or 29, was attacked with dire insanity, and Sj. Harish Chadra Dalal of Baje-shibpur took me to his native village, Nandanpur near Kalna. It was a turbulent case of insanity. In July, 1929, she gave birth to a son which expired after three days and on the 6th day, the mother got fever attended with blood-discharge. According to the general practice in villages, an Allopathic physician was called in, who got much perturbed on account of the high fever and profuse discharges of the patient. He thought of stopping the discharges and gave her eight injections in course of five days with the result that the discharges were stopped. He further prescribed quinine and Vibrona (a type of medicated wine) and a few other necessary medicines, and the fever was off on the 22nd day. Now, though the patient was relieved from all those troubles, it was found that her mind was deranged, and premonitory symptoms of insanity came in. The family now thought of placing the patient under a Kaviraj, but even in course of three months no benefit was forthcoming. The patient having had a turbulent turn in form of loud screaming, violent weeping, laughing, dancing, etc, a local Homœopath was called in, who was able to give the patient a partial relief by the use of *Belladonna* in varied potencies. But true benefit having not come, I was called in for consultation under the advice of the physician.

When I had been to the patient's house, it was intensely hot being a sunny mid-day and the patient

got, as usual, more turbulent. It was impossible to make a record in her room and in her presence, so we retired to a neighbouring room and prepared the record. It is given below.

The patient, I obtained, was all along of varied and changeful mood. Sometimes she would laugh and be merry but in the next moment she would weep aloud for some real or imaginary grief. If any body enquired as to the reasons, she would not speak. But, for a long time past, i.e., immediately before the delivery, she had been of a comparatively calm and cheerful turn of mind. Regarding heredity, her father had piles and nothing more. The patient had black type of menstrual discharges for some months and a patent medicine was used, which minimised the quantity and removed the blackness. Just after this she had pregnancies at an interval of 2 or 3 years. She had four sons, of whom the last one expired as stated above. There was also nasal blood discharges, specially in hot days, the discharge being black and stringy; cold application and washing the head would stop the discharge. She was a good musician and used to teach music to several girls of the neighbourhood. Daily bath and cold application were much soothing to her.

Considering the above condition and symptoms, I took for comparison *Tarantula his* and Crocus, and at last fixed upon the latter remedy. The reasons are that though the manifested symptoms are alike in both the remedies and the patient had also love for music, yet there was not found any relief from it during aggravation, which *Tarantula* has, and so *Tarantula*

was ruled out. Secondly, the patient had no abnormal sexual desire and that is also why the spider remedy was not fixed. But the difficulty arose in the way that Crocus is a remedy which has no depth. However, as there was no better remedy for the case, I selected Crocus and thought that some deeper remedy may be required after Crocus^a duly acted in the case. I gave Crocus 1000 in four graduated doses with ten strokes each time. The report was to be given after a fortnight.

On the 24th June a report came to inform me that the extreme violence of the case was a bit mitigated and softened, and that was all. No medicine was given and an advice for sending a report after a fortnight was kept.

On the 6th July an information was received with a request to go and see the patient, as there was a profuse discharge of menstrual blood. I told the man who came with the letter that there was no necessity for my going, but on the following day a stronger request came for my going there personally. I had been there and gave 6 doses of placebo as I was convinced that the true curative influx was established. After 6 or 7 days the discharge was stopped leaving the patient almost all right. The family wrote to me a letter with a very very high opinion upon the last six doses and so I gave another 12 doses of the same valuable medicine. Be it quite clear that the symptoms of her insanity never came back, and no medicine was required after this.

Remarks,—The local physician as well as myself were struck with wonder as to how a superficial

medicine like Crocus could cure the insanity. Let us understand what did Crocus do in this case. It simply established or brought about the natural influx in the patient, which was suppressed by injections with the result that the brain of the patient was deranged. Now it may be asked that how could Crocus, not being an anti-psoric medicine, do so? The answer is whenever a medicine is selected on the totality of symptoms under the law, it must produce the influx and there can be no exception. In the present case, the insanity was only the result of suppressing the flow and stopping the natural influx, and Crocus having been administered on the totality of symptoms, did away with the suppression and established the discharge, the result of which was the re-establishment of the influx and cure of the patient.

Discharge of blood,—The main use of Crocus is found to be in blood-discharges. The colour of the discharged blood is black and the blood that is discharged is at once transformed into strings, and sometimes, specially, in nasal discharges, the strings are to be drawn out from the nose. It is also sticky. From whatever orifice the blood may come out, its nature is as above described. There is also another thing which is generally associated with the discharge of the females and that is intense head-pains, so much so, that the patient fears she would turn crazy. The head-pains and the discharge are both aggravated from movement.

Menses,—Along with the variety of pains and scanty menstrual discharges of the females, a ball-like thing appears to roll about in the regions of intestines,

lower abdomen, stomach, duodenum, etc. (vide the case of Sreemati Harisundari in *Calcareo carb*). *Puls*, *Thuja*, *Sulphur*, *Sabina*, *Calcareo carb*, etc. may be indicated in the above type of diseases. Let us compare.

Comparison,—*Puls* badly wants cold bath and has burning all over, therefore every type of cold is grateful; though *Puls* has a scanty discharge, yet the nature of the discharge is not like that of *Crocus*, and moreover, *Crocus* has no love for cold as *Puls* has. *Thuja* is extremely cold and the Sycosis-miasm is there. Not only so, it has various unnatural and wonderful feelings, e.g., she feels that she is made of glass and will easily break down, or, as if her soul is separate from her body, and so forth. *Sulphur* has violent burning, and though she likes cold and wants to lie upon the cold cemented floor, yet she cannot tolerate bath. Apart from this, the nature of the discharge or frequent changeability as is found in *Crocus* is not there in *Sulphur*. Of course, a few symptoms like fever, colour of the stool and their changeability may be found in *Puls* or *Sulph* and that is all. *Sabina* has the peculiar pain during her menses, which is not found in any other remedy. *Sabina* and *Thuja* are likely to have warts, big or small, all over the body; *Sabina* has aggravation from movement and is likely to produce moles in her uterus. *Thuja* and *Sabina* are complementaries. *Calcareo* is altogether different, with regard to her nature and symptoms, and has no likeness regarding the nature and discharge of *Crocus*.

Chorea,—It is a type of nervous restlessness and

is found in this remedy. Even there, there is a certain changeability of symptoms,—sometimes the patient is madly engaged in dancing, singing and merry-making, the next moment she will be crying and over powered with deep dejection and then again the next moment there will be a parade of anger and chiding. If you see the patient at this time you may take her to be absolutely insane and may confuse with *Tarentula his*, but in *Tarentula* there is a love for music and amelioration therefrom. The spider remedy has also an intense sexual desire but the constant changeability is never found in it.

Modality,—Aggravation from lying, in summer, in warm room, in the morning, on fasting and on staring at a particular object ; amelioration, in open air.

Potency,—6th to 1000th potencies are in constant use. Higher potencies are hardly ever used.

•

CROTALUS HORRIDUS

Deep Anti-Psoric
&
Anti-Tubercular. }

There are various remedies in our *Materia Medica* prepared from serpent venoms, and *Crotalus* is one of them. Those remedies are *Crotalus*, *Lachesis*, *Elaps*, *Naja*, *Cenchrus*, etc. These remedies are always *destructive* and none of them is ever of constructive nature. People who have their natural health and development, never need this remedy, but those that have a deplorable condition of the system, e.g., some organ oozing or discharging blood, decomposition or

putrefaction elsewhere, violent disorder in some other organ, the condition of the heart and brain most disorderly,—may need the use of some of these remedies. A system badly disordered by the unnatural function of liver and heart may be brought to a comparatively orderly state under the use of any of these remedies selected according to the totality of symptoms. Anyhow a low, disorganised and broken down condition of the system may need the use of a serpent poison.

Nature,—The nature and peculiarity of the remedies prepared from snake venoms should be understood and remembered. Each and every remedy of this kingdom makes the mind very much *sentimental*. In some patients there may be an excess of cheerfulness and a desire to speak much, in others again, there is a predominance of sadness and dejection. Easy weeping is found in almost all the remedies. *Lachesis*, along with his weeping mood, goes on talking and talking, constantly changing the topic on which he speaks, but the flow does not stop. *Crotalus*, a bit milder than *Lachesis*, though has the desire to speak much like *Lachesis*, yet he does not change the subject so often. *Lachesis*, *Crotalus* and *Cenchrus* look as if intoxicated,—at least, so it appears from their faces. Then again, each of those remedies has an action, more or less, upon the heart, the circulation and the liver, and except *Naja* each has the tendency to discharge blood,—even *Naja* also sometimes discharges black, stringy blood. Of course, this symptom is most predominant in *Crotalus*, so much so, that blood oozes out from the pores of the skin. All the serpent

remedies have a general aggravation during and after sleep and towards the end of winter and commencement of summer, i.e., along with the on-coming of hot days. The action of *Lachesis* is slow, that of *Crotalus* and *Naja* is very much swift. Some of them select a particular site of the human body where they commence their action and extend to the other side. There is flushing, more or less, in each of them, and they all act on the throat of human organism. Drinking of wine has amelioration in each of the remedies.

From the above, it will be clear that all diseases of low type, e.g., yellow fever, low typhoid, zymotic and septic fever, scarlatina, bad type of small pox, etc., etc., are to be found to be controlled by the serpent remedies, specially in cases where a destructive condition comes on.

Now let us go on with *Crotalus*. The main peculiarity of the remedy is its capacity to discharge blood, so much so that every pore of the body oozes it and the whole system turns yellow. For this reason it is used in all cases where there is a predominance of blood-flow, viz., Yellow fever, Diphtheria, Scarlatina, etc. A particular case is in point.

Case Report.—Sreeman Ganapati Chatterjee, aged 10 or 11, fell ill and ran on to a serious condition. I was then at Dhanbad. His father S. Bibhakar Chatterjee, who was an employee under E. I. Railways was my neighbour and came to me for the treatment of his son. I saw the patient and found that it was a case of high fever; lots of eruptions like measles came out on the fourth day but suddenly receded

within four or five hours, and immediately after this typhoid symptoms came in. To make the matter more complicated, severe fits with spasms appeared, and I knew from the history that a few months back there were scabies-like eruptions which were suppressed by external application. The fever used to come down to 99.5° and rise up to 103.8° or 104° . The patient was fully unconscious, would not reply to any question and was having fits of opisthotonic character every half an hour. The attending symptoms were vomiting, nausea, occasional restlessness, etc. On all these, I kept *Cuprum met* 30 with instructions to give a dose after every fit. Only three doses of *Cuprum* were necessary to be given and the fit was stopped, but no relief was obtained regarding any other symptom.

On the next day, I found the patient positively worse. Swelling of the throat, pain and soreness on swallowing, offensive smell from the nose, slight discharge of blood through ear, nose and gum,—these symptoms were marked. Fever rose to 104.4° with much difficulty of breathing and the colour of the whole body turned yellowish. I realised at once that Diphtheria with high fever was there. I gave *Belladonna* 30, 3 doses but far from getting any relief, on the following day we got terrified to see that the discharge of blood rather increased. From night up to 9 A.M. next morning, the outer cover of the pillow and two hand-kerchiefs were soaked in blood. Bibhakar Babu and his wife wept aloud, and upon proper study of the case I fixed upon *Crotalus* and gave it in 200th potency at 4 hours' interval. The very first dose arrested the blood but I could not see the patient up to evening.

because I was badly engaged in cross-examining a witness in Court. However, the blood was altogether stopped in the evening, and when I saw the patient next morning at about 9 or 10, I found him far improved in every way. The difficulty of breathing was far less, fever also came down and the swelling of the throat was also very much reduced. No other medicine was necessary, but most probably only one dose of *Ars 200* was necessary.

Mind,—The condition of the mind is weak and exhausted. You can easily differentiate the *Crotalus* mind from that of *Lachesis*. The main difference is this,—that in *Lachesis* the delirious talks flow like a stream with constant change of subjects, but *Crotalus* is mild and has delirious talks only in murmurs. There is a good deal of excitability in *Lachesis*, whereas *Crotalus* is rather mild. *Crotalus* delirium is rather attended with confusion and drowsiness. Sometimes there is fear of death though not so strong as in *Ars*, and anxiety, sadness, weeping and tremor are found in it. The *Crotalus* patients like those of other serpent remedies have the prominent aggravation during and after sleep and the aggravation is proportional to the time spent in sleep. There is a desire for wine and a timely amelioration from it. The mental condition is *low*.

Headache,—*Crotalus* has head-ache and it is occipital. It comes and goes away like a wave. The blood circulation is not orderly but in flushes. It is technically called orgasm; and with every beat of the heart, a stroke is felt in the head, which aggravates on movement. At this time if there is a necessity for walking, the patient is compelled to perform it slowly and with

soft steps. During the headache there is also felt a pain in the heart which aggravates on lying to the left. The headache is throbbing and attended with heaviness. In *Argentum nitricum* and *Crotalus* the patient feels during the headache as if the head is expanding but in heart cases *Argentum nitricum* wants to lie to the left and cannot lie to the right. *Belladonna* has also throbbing headache aggravating on lying and movements but *Bell* has violent congestion in the head with a red face. *Bell* has a violence attending all its symptoms. *Bell* has sleepiness but inability to sleep. There is another peculiarity of *Bell* which is not to be found in *Crotalus*, viz, its symptoms come as suddenly as they go away suddenly, though the aggravation after sleep is found in both, yet it is characteristic in *Crotalus* and other serpent remedies. Tendency to discharge of blood is never found in *Bell*.

Heart, Digestive Organs & Liver,—Every serpent remedy is found to have a special action upon the liver as well as upon the heart. The two organs are *sympathetically* connected, so that if one is affected, the other must be more or less. In all heart cases of *Crotalus* & *Lachesis*, the patient cannot lie to the left but in all liver cases, *Crotalus* is bound to lie to the left because lying on the back or to the right makes him restless and predisposing to vomit. No serpent remedy can stand tight clothing. Any tight clothing or bandaging over the stomach, abdomen or throat brings a discomfort to the serpent-remedy patients. Of course, *Belladonna*, *Apis*, *Hepar sulph* and a few other remedies cannot stand tight clothing but for a different reason. The reason is,—that there is a soreness within

the stomach or abdomen, but no such reason is there in cases of serpent-remedy patients. There it is a sort of *discomfort*. The liver of *Crotalus* is full of disorder, the whole body turns yellowish, sometimes black blood comes out with stool and even there is an ulceration in the intestines. The jaundice of *Crotalus* is in most cases incurable. But if there is a totality of *Crotalus* symptoms, we have no other way than to administer the remedy.

Diphtheria,—A very bad type of diphtheria is found in this remedy. Ulceration and decomposition are in a short time brought forth within the throat. There is a good deal of swelling within and without. *Empty swallowing* is most painful, though the patient does not feel much when swallowing food-stuffs. Blood-discharge in various ways, drawing pain within the throat, bad smell in breath, intense weakness, exhaustion and feebleness of the pulse, with cold and dry body are found as a totality.

I have already said that the tendency to blood-discharge is the main feature of this remedy, and when this discharge is suppressed by virtue of some un-homœopathic drugs, a serious condition is likely to follow. A case in point is given below.

Case Report,—Sj. Sanatan Dasgupta, aged 44 or 45 years, practised as a Kaviraj in Gangajalghati in the district of Bankura. He came under my treatment in 1919. In July, 1917, he had bloody stools for three days, again in August, 1918, he had similar stools for 5 or 6 days and had for two days black stools. On this, the family got terrified and engaged an Allopathic physician and the symptoms went away for the time;

but unfortunately in February, 1919, he got a re-attack, and an Allopathic physician from Raniganj was called in, who was very much dis-satisfied with the local physicians for their not having given any Injection in the case. Injections were at the time newly coming into use in that part. However, four Injections were given and a good deal of relief also forth-came. Unfortunately in June, that year, brain symptoms developed. The patient gave over to his son the charge of work and took complete rest. But, by and by, he became thin, emaciated and greatly exhausted. Blood was found to come forth from the nose and the patient got practically insane. A Kaviraj of good name and fame from Bankura was engaged, but symptoms of dejection, weeping mood and absolute insomnia developed, when I was called in from Purulia for treatment. I got the following symptoms and condition.

Reddish hue of the face, always sighing and thoughtful, though there was hardly anything, for which he should have been so. He had affluent to circumstances, two healthy and educated sons, one married daughter and a good and faithful wife. The worthy Kaviraj of Bankura and also myself concluded that all these serious symptoms were the result of stopping or suppressing the discharge of blood. But we understood that the Raniganj physician had rather been compelled to administer injections simply to avoid immediate death.

When I attempted to collect the symptoms from his wife and second son, the patient wanted to speak everything himself, but after a few sentences he wept aloud. I attempted to collect symptoms repeatedly

but was not successful. At last I sent the patient away to a neighbouring room and got the following.

“Very often the patient only weeps and on being asked the reason, he says that something is going on within himself which he is quite unable to express. He has a special desire for rich and highly spiced things. He has a hoarseness and a cough by which he raises mucus streaked with blood. He has hardly any desire for food, vomits very often and the vomited matter also contains blood. We always observe that whenever he lies to the right the vomiting aggravates. Visions of dead persons, constant weeping and sighing with talking in streams are constant symptoms. Discharge of blood is almost constant. We still remember that 12 or 13 years back he cut a finger but the blood could not be stopped easily. Towards the evening and in the morning temperature is often found 99°.”

Upon all these I selected *Crotalus*, though I did not obtain, any time before, any patient of *Crotalus* with a similar mental picture.

On the 24th September, 1919, I commenced *Crotalus* 1000, to be given daily in a graduated way for three days. 4th, 5th and 6th October I found that the mental symptoms were rather aggravated but on the 10th a good deal of blood-discharge came up and brought in a fair amelioration. Intestinal blood-discharge also appeared for two or three days from the 22nd and stopped by itself. On the 14th November, his Piles, which were suppressed by local applications long before, also appeared and commenced to bleed. I saw the patient

and did not notice any weeping mood now. In fact the whole picture of *Crotalus* was no more. I found the patient much perplexed on account of the Piles and the attending difficulties, pains and inconveniences. I now studied the Piles symptoms and found *Collinsonia* fitting in. It was given in 30th and 200th and a good deal of relief came forth. At this stage the patient was compelled to stop the treatment for a serious mishap in the family. I left the patient with a warning against any treatment of his Piles consisting of local application or operation, in future.

Though drinking of wine ameliorates the condition of acute poisonings, but it has been seen that if wine is given to the chronic patients of *Crotalus* and *Lachesis*, the disease symptoms are aggravated, though they have a strong desire for wine and other exciting drinks. You should remember that if the things for which there is a strong desire in the patient aggravate, the remedy and the patient should be understood to be *tubercular*. Moreover, *Crotalus* has a strong tendency to blood-discharge from almost all the orifices of the body, so it should be taken as a great tubercular remedy. Another thing you should remember in this connection that the people who have a strong desire for intoxicating liquors should be classed as low and degenerated. If there is no *acquired* miasm in these patients, there must be some faulty heredity for which they have such a low desire.

Typhoid and Blood-poisoning.—When there is fever associated with brain symptoms, or where there is a chronic diarrhoea and there are brain symptoms along with it, these remedies may be indicated, of

course, if the totality of symptoms agrees. There are various names of these conditions, viz, septic, typhoid, zymotic, malignant septicæmia, blood-poisoning, etc., etc., but if these symptoms, are present, viz, aggravation after sleep, tendency to blood-discharge from almost all the outlets of the body, offensive smell of the discharges, discharge of blood-clots with very much weakness and exhaustion, Crotalus may save the life. I have seen many cases in which even the sweat is bloody and Crotalus has saved many of them.

Female Organs.—The female organs are seriously affected, rather in a destructive way. In this remedy as well as in a few others, viz, *Culcarca carb*, *Digitalis*, *Phos*, *Pulsatilla*, etc, vicarious flows are brought in after the stoppage of the natural flow. This stoppage or suppression is caused *naturally* in the patients of these remedies. Of course, there may be drug-suppression, after which the vicarious flows come in and one of the said remedies may be indicated.

Menopause.—Menopause or the stoppage of the menses naturally occurs at the age of 44 or 45 years, and those females that are healthy get no troubles after it, but those that are miasmatic have to suffer in various ways. Sometimes Crotalus is indicated when the following symptoms are found, viz, violent orgasm or flushing with feeling of intense heat at the time, exhaustion, sense of emptiness in the abdomen, and, in many cases, attended with a violent discharge of blood which is black and offensive. If these symptoms are found, Crotalus may cure the condition and save the life. Other serpent remedies may also be indicated at this critical moment of female life.

Puerperal Fever,—This remedy may also come into use during puerperal fever, if the following symptoms are obtained, viz, tremor of the tongue when it is produced for showing, appearance as if intoxicated, aggravation of all symptoms after sleep and specially black and offensive blood, sometimes clotted, is discharged or oozes out from the uterus.

Chronic Condition,—The chronic condition of a *Crotalus* patient is really deplorable. Sleep, which gives a good deal of relief is almost banished from the patient and if it is there, there is a violent aggravation during and after it. The flushing or orgasm of blood with intense hot feeling and terrible dreams makes the life rather intolerable. In order to find a relief, the patient desires wine and other exciting and intoxicating drinks, as well as for low type of amusements. He cannot accomodate with his friends, so that he himself is without peace and tranquility of mind as also he makes others unhappy.

Potency,—It should not be given below 30. It works nicely well up to 1000th and I have not much experience with regard to the higher potencies.

CROTON TIGLIUM. *Anti-Psoric.*

Though this remedy has not yet been classified amongst the anti-psoric remedies, yet from my long and extended experience, I can most confidently assert that it should be enlisted so. This remedy has a variety of skin-diseases, which, if suppressed with

the help of external applications or some un-homœopathic means, surely lead to a severe set of symptoms, which cannot be removed unless those skin symptoms are brought back. I request my brother Practitioners to observe its anti-psoric efficacy amongst their patients. Our revered Dr. Nash also, on the similar reason, has been pleased to enlist *Belladonna*, *Apis* and a few other remedies amongst the anti-psoric remedies.

Indigestion and Diarrhœa,—A few points are to be remembered in this connection. Stool yellowish, making a commotion and sound so long as it remains in the intestines, specially before its evacuation, and then comes out like a shot. The evacuation brings in much weakness and exhaustion. There are frequent urgencies to stool which aggravate after eating, drinking and exertion. Mentally the patient is much irritable and sad. A few words more may be necessary in this connection, viz., the patient feels a weight in the lower abdomen and if a hand is put over it, it is felt that it is full of liquid stools; not only so, there is a sensitiveness in the abdomen, and on pressure, urgency for stool comes in. This in short is the picture of Croton tig diarrhœa. It may also be used in infantile cholera and it is to be remembered that the name of the disease is useless, and if the above picture is there, you may use the remedy with much benefit.

Comparison,—Now let us compare Croton tig with *Argentum nit*, *Podo*, *Sulphur* and *Natrum sulph*. I think I should repeat that there are three essentials of Croton tig diarrhœa, viz., (1) yellowish liquid stool, profuse in quantity, (2) coming at once like a shot,

and (3) aggravation after eating, drinking and exertion. *Argentum nit* has also aggravation after eating and drinking as well as coming out of the stool like a shot but the stool of *Argentum nit* is mixed with flatus, and therefore during evacuation it makes spluttering sound. Not only so, the accumulation of flatus is so profuse that it goes out upwards by eructations and the patient is much relieved thereby. The *Argentum* child has a great desire for sweet things and is much emaciated gradually. *Podophyllum* has also aggravation after eating and drinking; and you are to remember only three things in connection with *Podo*, viz, (1) stool is badly profuse, (2) intensely offensive, and (3) aggravation after eating and drinking, in the morning and in summer. *Sulphur* has the driving-out-of-bed stool, so that it has an aggravation before the patient leaves the bed. *Sulphur* has also the aggravation from drinking milk. The stool is sour and so much pungent that it excoriates the anus. *Sulphur* has no inclination for a bath. *Natrum sulph* has also much forceful evacuation, but its aggravation really commences sometimes after the patient leaves the bed, i.e., after the patient makes some exertion and not immediately after rising. Then again, its stool is interspersed with flatus, i.e., some feces, then flatus, then again some feces and then flatus, and so on. The sycotic miasm is rather deep-seated in *Natrum sulph* patients.

Skin Symptoms.—Every anti-psoric remedy has more or less skin-symptoms, which, when suppressed, give rise to various disease symptoms. The disease symptoms cannot be expected to be cured, unless and



until the suppressed symptoms are brought back by virtue of the anti-psoric remedy properly indicated. There are various deep-acting anti-psoric remedies which keep along their peculiarities in the patients even after the suppression, viz., the early morning diarrhoea of *Sulphur*, the offensive smell of the discharges in *Psorinum*, troublesome itching in bed-heat of *Mexereum*, but Croton has this peculiarity that no such peculiar indication is found, so that it may be selected and administered for the purpose. A particular case is in point.

Case Report.—Sj. Anathbandhu Chatterji, aged 39 years, an inhabitant of Gar-mandaran in the district of Hooghly had been suffering from cough, catarrh and difficulty of breathing for the last 12 or 14 years, and having had no benefit from various treatments adopted by him came to me at Dhanbad for a final trial. He saw me on 15th of November, 1926 at Dhanbad. From his external appearance, nobody could imagine that he had been suffering so long from such a tubercular type of disease. I learnt from him that for three or four months he would generally keep well and then suffer for 15 to 20 days from the troubles given above. Acute cold, nasal catarrh, cough, asthmatic breathing and occasional diarrhoea, are the symptoms from which he usually suffered. When I prepared his record, I found no modalities except that he is chilly and his coughing aggravated on lying. Regarding hereditary symptoms I got none, so that I was at a loss to understand as to how his medicine could be selected. Regarding acquisition he had none. Only he was vaccinated in his early

age for once only. He did not mention or care to mention that he had suffered from skin diseases, and his idea was that it was altogether a separate disease being related to the skin and could easily be "cured" by *Kandulabanal* (a patent medicine for external application) and several other external medicines. By the bye he only mentioned that there was a severe soreness in the skin-eruptions, so much so that they could not be touched by hands. Then I asked him,—“Do you feel any relation between these two sets of diseases?” He replied,—“Oh yes, certainly, when the skin symptoms are on, I am all right in other ways. But as soon as they are suppressed, it is quite natural that the other troubles must come on and as a matter of fact they do.” Now I asked him to come to me after two days, when I gave him definite instructions not to apply anything external on the skin disease. The patient was definitely impressed that I was making so much on merely a trifle. However, he agreed to my instruction. I now gave Croton in 1000th potency in four graduated doses and asked him to come after a month. He came to me on 11th December and gave me a report which I cannot refrain from quoting in his own words.

“Sir, what offense did I do that the severe skin symptoms, which I could remove after so much efforts and expenses, have been brought back by you, and the result is that I am unable to continue in the services I have been employed in”. I only explained to him in a few words that a physician can never do anything but good to his patients. I said,—“you are displeased with me for the re-appearance, but

in course of a few months you will understand that it is rather a good fortune that they have thus re-appeared. Patients are there in whose case repeated efforts have failed to do so and no benefit is produced, etc, etc."

On the 4th February the patient with a laughing face came to my dispensary and said,—“The skin symptoms have almost all disappeared, but dear sir, the wonder is that formerly after every such disappearance I used to be severely attacked with cough, coryza and difficulty of breathing, etc. Moreover, formerly every winter was a trial for me, but you will kindly see that I am more than ten annas cured.” I said in reply, “your skin diseases have not yet been fully cured and may come up again after the use of higher potencies, but in case you tease me in future on that account, I frankly tell you that I shall stop the treatment.” Most gladly he agreed to suffer all troubles and inconveniences and abide by the treatment so long as he is not fully cured.

On the 7th February I gave him another course of the remedy in four graduated doses of the 1000th potency. It was found that the skin symptoms re-appeared in a small way. And though the patient was feeling better, yet the difficulty of breathing and the nasal secretions continued. On the 11th April I gave a single dose of 10 M and the eruptions filled almost his whole body and his pains and troubles on that account could better be imagined than prescribed. He was fully bed-ridden and he had to take leave of his service for one month and ten days.

On the 18th May I found him fully cured of all his troubles. In September another dose of 10M and on 3rd January a dose of 50M finished his case.

The details of the **skin symptoms** are,—(1) violently burning eruptions coming upon reddish spots with extreme inflammation and intolerable itching. The patient gets impatient due to *itching* but the peculiarity is that there is so much *soreness* all over the eruptions that even a touch of hand is impossible. Actually he gets maddened for the itching and his inability to scratch the attacked spots; (2) though the whole body is more or less affected, yet it is found that the selected spots in the case of young boys are the head and of adults the sexual organs, testes and round about; (3) soft rubbing, if possible, much relieves; cold water greatly aggravates the itching but intense hot water relieves in a great way; (4) there is a relation of succession between the skin symptoms and other diseases, i.e., when the former are on, the latter go away and *vice versa*; in the case of young children, this relation is found with diarrhoea and abdominal symptoms, and in the adults, both abdominal symptoms as well as nasal coryza and difficulty of breathing; (5) lastly, its skin symptoms have the nature of frequently changing the spots and to appear in clusters.

Now let us compare,—*Arsenicum album*, *Rhus tox*, *Petroleum*, *Anacardium*, *Sepia* and *Bacillinum* are to be mainly compared with. A few words may be needed on *Anagallis*.

In skin-eruptions of *Arsenicum album*, there are intense itching, violent burning with relief from hot

water and aggravation from cold water ; moreover, there is soreness. The eruptions are mostly dry and there is hardly any secretion from them. But the main thing is the mental restlessness of the patient. *Rhus tox* and *Croton* may be confounded, because they are similar in many points. But the essential difference between them is that *Croton* eruptions are highly sensitive and sore, whereas in *Rhus*, soreness is not considerable ; then again, in *Croton*, if any soft rubbing is possible, it relieves, but in *Rhus* the itching violently aggravates from all sides and makes the patient all the more restless. In *Rhus*, there is violent burning but with regard to the modality, viz., aggravation from cold water and amelioration from hot water, the remedies are altogether similar. There is restlessness in both but the reason is different, viz., *Croton* is restless because notwithstanding the violent desire for itching, the patient cannot rub or scratch due to soreness, whereas, *Rhus* is physically restless due to burning and itching which aggravate along with the rubbing by the patient. *Petroleum* eruptions are peculiar in this that they come characteristically in winter and the affected spots badly crack. The skin diseases of *Petroleum*, when suppressed, bring in diarrhoea which aggravates at daytime and ameliorates after eating. *Petroleum* has offensive sweat in the feet. *Anacardium* and *Rhus tox* are almost similar and the three remedies have amelioration from hot water, and it is *Anacardium* only which has relief in every way from eating and has also a peculiar constipation with frequent urging but mostly ineffectual. *Sepia*

has skin-eruptions of herpetic type and mostly like ring-worms manifested in round spots and generally towards upper part of body. With Croton if you compare, you will find that the only difference lies in the pace and course of the diseases. *Sepia* has it very slow and delayed, in Croton it is rather swift. Moreover, mentally *Sepia* has extreme sadness and weeping mood and has inveterate constipation. The skin-symptoms of *Sepia* are Sycotic. When the eruptions are scratched, the patient gets no relief, rather feels a violent burning. As a patient, *Sepia* wants bath but the skin symptoms are aggravated thereby and are relieved by hot water. All the three remedies are alike in their modalities in relation to skin symptoms but their depth lies in the following order, viz., *Rhus tox*, *Calcareo carb* and last of all *Sepia*, *Sepia* being the deepest of all. *Anagallis*,—there is no other reason for mentioning *Anagallis* in this connection except that it has a peculiar selected spot for manifesting the skin symptoms, viz., the palms of hands which no other remedy has. As Croton has the selected spot in the sexual organ and round about, so *Anagallis* has it in the palms of hands.

Chest,—Croton has a peculiar symptom, viz., as soon as the patient puts his head on the pillow, he gets coughing and coughing attended with difficulty of breathing, so much so, that he must have to sit up. In the case of nursing mothers there is felt a peculiar drawing pain from the breast which the child sucks, and the pain goes upwards. So long as the child sucks, this type of pain is felt with every sucking. Though the pain is felt on both sides, yet the left sided

pain is more characteristic. The nipples of the breasts are sore and sensitive.

Potency,—6 to 200 generally used. In old cases, I have used 50 M with satisfactory results, and there is no reason why the higher potencies may not be beneficial.

CUPRUM METALLICUM. *Deep* }
Anti-Psoric. }

This remedy comes from the metal Copper and is a deep anti-psoric. It acts specially upon the nervous centre of the human system. Cramps and convulsions are its special feature and so it is generally indicated in hysteria, epilepsy, whooping-cough, cholera and a few other diseases in which cramps and convulsions are found to be attending symptoms. The patient is chilly and so all the symptoms and conditions of the Cuprum patient are aggravated from cold.

Mind,—*Mentally*, the patient is restless, but one thing which should be carefully remembered is that in Cuprum patients, i. e., in whom cramps and convulsions are manifested in almost all diseases, are prone to be dull and dull, and unless perfectly cured these patients are likely to be imbecile. *Baryta*, *Zincum met* and a few other such remedies have also such a tendency. These patients, unless thoroughly cured, look after a few years as *non compos mentis*.

Cramps,—In Homœopathy, diseases are never treated by their *names*, but by the peculiar symptoms

manifested in the *patient* attacked. In cramps and convulsions, either as attending symptoms of other diseases, viz, Cholera, Typhoid fever, Hysteria, Epilepsy, etc., or manifested by themselves, Cuprum is to be selected where the cramps are directed *from circumference to centre*. In Cuprum, at first, the extremities, by force of cramps, are directed inwardly and then the whole body is convulsed. At first in the hands, the big toe is bent inwards and then the other fingers are inwardly bent, so as to close up the fist. In the legs also, all the toes are bent inwardly along with the cramps manifested in the palms. The thing is that after the cramps of the extremities, i. e., the palms and fingers as well as toes and soles, the *general* convulsion follows. If this peculiarity is found in the patient, Cuprum is to be selected and cure must follow. Moreover, in all Cuprum cases, the extremities get cold. Lastly, it is a peculiarity of Cuprum symptoms, that they never come singly but in groups or clusters. For example, if there is a hiccough, it will go on for some time and then stop. Then again, after appearing for some time, it will stop. In cramp cases also, cramps are found to appear for some time and then they cease automatically. After sometime again they will appear and will cease after a time. This appearance of disease-symptoms in groups or in clusters is a peculiarity of Cuprum which should be carefully remembered.

Epilepsy.—In Epilepsy, Cuprum is frequently indicated as in a few other diseases, by the manifestation of cramps and contractions in the extremities and then they run up to the whole body. As an aura, the patient of Cuprum Epilepsy, just after the mani-

festation of the cramps in the extremities, falls down to the ground with a vehement cry and passes stool and urine involuntarily. Moreover, the tongue of the patient, as in Lachesis, comes out and goes in like a serpent tongue. *Bufo rana* has also this symptom but the *Bufo* patient wants cold room, cold bath and cold air, whereas Cuprum is very much chilly. Apart from Epilepsy, there are a few other diseases, viz, Cholera, Typhoid fever, Puerperal fever, etc, where Cuprum is much needful, of course if the peculiar symptom is found. It should also be remembered that a typical Cuprum patient sometimes acts as a maniac and talks in a silly way from which out-siders may think that he has turned insane. But that is not the case. After the Epileptic fit is over, he is found to act and talk in a healthy way.

Whooping-cough,— Cuprum has another peculiarity, viz, just after the disease symptoms are over, the whole body of the patient gets coldness, blueness and cyanosis. After the whooping fit is over, the patient turns cold and listless eyes turning upwards, the whole body turns blue and even the nails also are discoloured. In Cholera as well just after the purging and vomiting are over, the patient gets all these symptoms and the family fears immediate death. But after some time the patient regains by and by, after the administration of the remedy.

With regard to *Cholera* of Cuprum, a few remedies are to be brought in for comparison, viz, *Camphor*, *Veratrum alb.*, *Podo.*, *Phos.*, and *Cuprum ars.* One thing should be remembered that one of the remedies, viz., Cuprum, *Veratrum* and *Camphor* is generally

administered on the very name of Cholera. But in such a serious condition, the selection must be careful and correct. Coldness or cyanosis is found in all the above three remedies, but *Cuprum* has the predominance of *cramps*; moreover, the attack is *sudden*. *Veratrum album*, apart from the coldness, has the characteristic of *profuseness*. Camphor has coldness *before* the onset of the Choleraic discharges and it is very *sudden*. But *Cuprum* or *Veratrum* has the coldness *after* the discharge sets in and as a result thereof. This distinctive feature between Camphor on the one hand and *Cuprum* and *Veratrum* on the other should always be remembered. All the three remedies are chilly, but *Camphor* wants cold in proportion to his coldness of the body as felt by others, but where fever or any other painful symptom is there, *Camphor* wants warmth. This is a characteristic of *Camphor*, viz., it wants cold in proportion to its external coldness and wants warmth when it is hot with fever. The other two remedies are chilly and want warmth and they have no peculiarity in this direction. Another peculiarity of *Camphor* which should also be borne in mind is that it is dry in proportion to its coldness, and when it has sweat he commences to improve and that is an indication of its improvement.

Camphor has cramps as well which are of different type, for its cramps are almost limited to the cardiac muscles. After setting in of those cramps, various other symptoms, viz, difficulty of breathing, exhaustion, cyanosis, etc., follow. But the cramps of the other two remedies commence either *with* the discharge or *after*, as results thereof.

Regarding other symptoms these three remedies ought to be compared. It is certain that *Camphor* symptoms appear *before* the discharges set in, which may be small or profuse in quantity, and there is no certainty about that. Cuprum discharges are characteristically small but the cramps in the abdominal muscles and the calves of the legs are violent and troublesome, for which the patient becomes restless. *Veratrum album* has the *profuseness* of all the discharges and that is its characteristic. Cuprum and *Veratrum* are both chilly; Cuprum wants cold water and gets relief therefrom, *Veratrum* has also much desire for cold water but it is aggravating and warm drinks are relieving.

To sum up, *Camphor* is cold, yet it desires cold and has dry skin. Cuprum has the predominance of cramps and though the patient is chilly yet he is relieved from cold water. *Veratrum* has characteristically everything profuse and though the patient is chilly yet has a great desire for cold water which brings in aggravation and warm drinks are relieving.

Podophyllum,—In *Podophyllum* Cholera, there are sufficient cramps, though only limited to the abdominal muscles. The discharges are characteristically *profuse* and very much *offensive* with an aggravation in the morning. There is nausea more than actual vomiting. Thirst for cold water is also there though not characteristic. There is a soreness in the abdominal muscles which are sensitive to touch and pressure. In *Podo.* the characteristic points are only two, viz, the *profuseness* of the stool and its extreme *offensiveness*. Far from being chilly, *Podo*

is rather hot. It has characteristic aggravation in Summer, during dentition and in the early morning.

Phosphorus,—There is hardly any chance of confusion between *Cuprum* and *Phosphorus*, because *Phos.* has hardly any cramp, but there are two symptoms as in *Cuprum*, viz., restlessness and desire for cold water. *Phos.* has a characteristic which must be remembered, viz., as soon as the water drunk is warmed up in the stomach, it is ejected by vomiting. Lastly, though *Phosphorus* is chilly, yet it wants cold in the head and in the stomach. *Cuprum* cannot tolerate cold in the head.

Cuprum ars,—It has much more cramps than in *Cuprum* and has much more restlessness. Though it has thirst for cold water, yet the patient takes only small sips, because cold water aggravates his case. *Cuprum ars* is much chilly and so always likes to remain in warmth.

Skin Disease,—Though no specific skin-diseases are found in this remedy, it is found that when skin-diseases are suppressed, violent symptoms appear, which may indicate this remedy. There are a few other remedies, viz., *Apis*, *Zinc*, *Sulphur*, etc., and sometimes *Bryonia* also, which are found to be indicated to meet the results of suppression. In *Cuprum* there is a predominance of cramps, etc. In *Bryonia*, constipation, aggravation from movement, violent thirst for profuse quantity of water each time but at long intervals, are to be found. In *Bryonia* and *Apis*, a soporous condition of the mind ought to be expected. In *Apis*, mind is deranged, cephalic cry, minimisation of urine, rolling of the head, etc., are to be

found, so as to apprehend the on-coming of meningitis. In *Zinc*, involuntary movement of the lower limbs, tremor of the hands and feet, rolling of the head, etc., are to be expected. In *Zinc* cases, intense nervous exhaustion which may result in brain—paralysis is generally found. A case in point is given below.

Case Report,—Sreemati Surabala Dasi, aged 18 or 19, came under my treatment in September, 1917. For the last two years, she had been suffering from cramps and convulsions. She used lots of indigenous drugs on the assumption that worms might have been the cause, or some ghosts and evil spirits might have been at the back, but all these were of no avail, and in last July the attack was very serious, and so her husband engaged a house at the *Nilkuthi danga* in Purulia for the purpose of treatment. I had been there and observed almost all the symptoms of Cuprum, but I could not at once fix upon it, as I had a doubt in my mind that such a deep and chronic patient could possibly not be of Cuprum.

I was informed that in winter of 1912 and 1913, she had scabies almost all over the body and external applications were used, with the result that in winter of 1914 they were not seen. The family got relief from the idea that such a troublesome and painful disease had been cured. I was also informed that during her girlhood she had had a similar attack for three or four years and similar treatment was followed. However, there was no general improvement of health and it was also found towards the end of 1915 that her menstrual flow was getting very scanty, and from 1916 there was no flow at all. The females of

the family and of the neighbouring ones were impressed that she must have been in her family way and that was the reason why the flow was no more. But as there was no other sign of pregnancy, her husband and sister-in-law thought about treatment. First of all, she was placed under an experienced Kaviraj of Raniganj, but as there was no success, an experienced Homœopath of Mihijam was engaged. But as no benefit was forthcoming, she was thus brought to Purulia and placed under my treatment.

The patient was very much chilly, so much so that she had never taken a dip for bath. She used to avoid cold winds also. Apart from this, I got no other symptoms and gave her *Psorinum* 1000. Not only there was no effect but the cramps grew more vehement. Now I understood my mistake and administered Cuprum first in 200th potency and then after a pause in 1000th. But with all these the discharge did not re-appear and so I gave her Cuprum 10M. Wonder of wonders, on the 12th day after its administration a flow of very much offensive, black and clotted blood started, which continued for about 15 days. After this she was taken home and though I waited upon the dose for four months there was no sign of returning of the suppressed skin symptoms. Now I administered Cuprum 50M with the result that the skin symptoms returned and were on for a month or so, and then went off by themselves.

* Here the administration of *Psorinum* was a transparent mistake on my part. The symptoms that were *expressed* after the suppression must have to

be taken into consideration when selecting a remedy for a case Here Cuprum was clearly indicated.

Hiccough,—The hiccough of Cuprum met. comes in groups, i.e., after a few hiccoughs there is found a pause and then the hiccough begins, again a pause, and so on. There is another peculiarity that drinking of cold water relieves the fit of hiccough. If there are cramps along with it, specially found in the extremities and running towards the centre, Cuprum must be selected.

Potency,—In acute cases, 6, 30, 200 are often used but in Chronic cases I have used upto C.M. with high benefit.

CYCLAMEN.

Cyclamen is a remedy not much used, because most of its symptoms having been in *Pulsatilla*, the latter remedy is generally used when Cyclamen should be. There is much difference between the two remedies, which should be carefully remembered, so that each and every remedy may be correctly used.

Adaptibility,—It is a chlorotic remedy, fat, fair and bloodless, like *Calc.* or *Pulsatilla*, idle and disinclined to labour. There is hardly any excitement or working capability in the remedy.

Mind,—There are some contradictory and even imaginary symptoms. For example, though the patient gets relief from exertion and work, but she herself does not desire it; then again, as a patient she gets much relief from open air or from walking but none of them

she desires. In this way there is a contradiction between her in and out, i.e., between her mind and body. Her temper as well is much changeful. This moment full of rejoices, next moment full of wrath and revengefulness ; even sometimes the patient wants to be off her company, though at other times much congenial. Sometimes she is given to sadness and even to weeping for fear of future mishaps which are quite imaginary. Sometimes incongruent and insane talks come out from her, though there is hardly any reason for them. If some body cheers her up, she will be dancing and dancing, and if some body says anything discouraging, she will sit alone and be weeping. There is no mental strength or steadiness. One thing should be remembered in this connection that the action of the remedy is just in line with the nature of the patient's mind, so that even if the symptom-totality is found, any one of other remedies like *Puls*, *Crocus*, *Thuja*, *Ignatia* should be used, whereby a steady, deep and permanent action may be obtained.

The patient is *chilly*. There is an aggravation from cold, open air and bath in cold water ; all the troubles during the menses are aggravated from rest, i.e., sitting or lying down ; there is relief in a warm room, in general warmth, from covering and when walking. During cough and coryza, though the open air is relieving but the patient does not desire it.

Head,—There is a peculiarity in *Cyclamen* that the patient gets a peculiar stitching and contracting pain in the head along with the headache and vertigo ; the patient is apprehensive of losing her senses and actually she falls into a swoon, and her sight becomes

misty,—all these are due to disorder of circulation in the brain. The headpains are all ameliorated in cold and from washing with cold water.

Eyes,—The sight gets misty, and the patient sees many colours; sometimes one thing looks as two. The eye-balls are attracted towards the root of the nose,—all these are aggravated during head-pains. During these disorders, the patient cannot lie on the affected side or on her back.

Mouth,—The mouth cavity is full of sticky and salty saliva. Taste is also salty, or the patient gets no taste from food-stuffs; various pains are there in the gum. Moreover, there is a desire for un-eatable things but no desire for meat, bread and ghee. Generally, there is no desire for food. If there is any desire at all, a few morsels fill the patient up.

Menses,—The menstrual flow is full of disorders. Frequent, profuse, blackish and clotted, and there are various pains before the flow sets in, and specially if it happens to be scanty, but the patient feels better specially mentally when the discharge is profuse. A pain sets in from the small of the back to the lower abdomen before the clots come out. This pain is like the labour pain and there is a sensation attending with it as if a living thing rolls down in the abdomen. She gets more chilly during the flow and fears to go into the open air. There is also a feeling of orgasm at this time. All the troubles during this period are aggravated from rest or sitting, and ameliorated from walking about. If there is the mental condition of Cyclamen in the patient, the remedy may be given with

great benefit on the strength of these menstrual symptoms.

Case Report,—Sreemati Biraj Mohini Debi, a daughter of a small Zemindar of Maldah, aged 19 or 20, had insane symptoms after a delivery. There was a profuse flow along with fever, a few days after the delivery. According to the general custom in the villages, she was treated allopathically and a few medicines and injections were given, by virtue of which the flow stopped and the fever subsided within ten or twelve days. After ordinary diets were given, it was found that her mental condition was altogether meta-morphosed. She could not recognise her own son and would not desire to sleep in the same room with the son. During a first few days she was a bit better in the morning times and would enquire about her son, but after some time there was a great disorder, so that she used to weep in a room quite alone. Her younger sister Bijan Bala was not allowed to come to her though Bijan Bala greatly loved her. By and by this weeping mood greatly aggravated, and so the family got terrified and placed her under the treatment of the Civil Surgeon of Maldah. No benefit having forthcome, she was placed under Kaviraji treatment but the worthy Kaviraj, after a full consideration of the case, could not give any hope and kept her under his treatment for two weeks only. Under such circumstances the family preferred her treatment at Calcutta. In March, 1931, she was brought to me and I recorded her symptoms and condition as following.

The patient did not say anything but went on weeping. So I got almost nothing from her and I

collected the following from her husband and father. The patient would not like to take her daily bath but only to wash the head every two or three days. She used to lie alone, plunged in extreme sadness. She had hardly any desire for food, though she used to take fried pulses, mud and such like unnatural things, specially during her pregnancy. During her menses, clots of blood flowed, but after delivery, there was a profuse flow which was suppressed, as a result of which symptoms of insanity had appeared. She was too much chilly and idle and would like to be covered with a quilt and lie down alone. She had even hardly any desire for nursing the child, though with much difficulty and reluctance she would do so.

With much insistence and request I got from her only the following, viz, "my head pains and my abdomen pains", "my heart pains and palpitation", "I do not know what is going on there" I could not have much reliance on these words but could fairly mark her extreme dejection and sadness.

3rd April onwards, Cyclamen 200, daily a dose in a graduated way. After a few doses, the mental symptoms appeared to improve a bit and the medicine was stopped.

On the 11th May a report came to say that her menstrual flow had re-appeared, but the flow was highly offensive and of black colour. I was requested to go and see the patient, as the symptoms of insanity were very much aggravated. However, I saw the patient and decided to come again after a week or so. After a week I had again been there and what I saw definitely gave me an idea that she was better. On

the 9th June another flow appeared but the mental condition was a bit better than formerly. After the flow had ceased I gave her *Cyclamen* I000 in a graduated fashion, a dose to be given every 4th day, altogether 6 doses. After this she went on better and better and had second pregnancy after 5 or 6 flows more. During her pregnancy I gave a dose of *Psorinum 1M*. In due course, she gave birth to a male child and out of the gladness of her heart she asked permission of me to put my name to his son, and I gladly agreed. It may be remarked here, that the dose of *Psorin 1M* was given to help the work of *Cyclamen* which has hardly any depth, so as to bring in a perfect cure.

Now, a few remedies ought to be brought in for comparison here, viz, *Calc carb*, *Thuja*, *Puls*, *Ferrum met*, *Crocus*, *Ignatia* and *Natrum mur*.

Out of the above remedies, *Puls*, *Crocus*, *Ignatia* and *Natrum* are almost similar to *Cyclamen* regarding mental symptoms, but *Calcarea*, *Ferrum* and *Thuja* are not so similar. *Calcarea carb* is chlorotic and chilly as *Cyclamen*, and *Calcarea* is deep-acting; though both are chilly, *Cyclamen* cannot tolerate open air, though it relieves the symptoms of catarrh, but *Calcarea carb*, though chilly, badly desires open air. Moreover, *Calcarea carb* has sufficient action upon the bony kingdom of the human system which *Cyclamen* has not.

Ferrum and *Cyclamen* have no real similarity in them, though bloodlessness and flushing are there in both the remedies. Apart from that, profuseness of the menstrual flow and chilliness are there in both the remedies. *Ferrum* has urgency to stool during eating,

abnormal appetite and the natural red parts of the body which have turned whitish due to anæmia get reddened on small excitements. These two, though peculiar to *Ferrum*, are not found in Cyclamen. Relief from slow exertion is found in both, though Cyclamen avoids it and *Ferrum* desires it.

Crocus and Cyclamen are alike in the changeability of their mental symptoms, but *Crocus* has no senility like Cyclamen. A sensation of something living rolling in the abdomen is found in *Crocus*, *Sabina*, *Thuja* and *Sulphur*. The peculiarity of *Crocus*, viz., the coming out of sticky and stringy blood from the nose as well as during menstruation is not to be found in Cyclamen. The essential difference between the two remedies lies in this that in spite of the changeability of the mental symptoms, *Crocus* is highly delightful and merry, whereas Cyclamen is extremely sad and dejected with a desire for weeping whenever alone.

Ignatia,—Both the remedies are often deeply impressed with sorrow and dejection, but the difference lies in this that in *Ignatia* there are real and actual reasons for being sad and dejected, whereas in Cyclamen it is merely a wave of the mind. *Ignatia* has the peculiarity of sighing often and constantly but it lacks in the weeping mood of Cyclamen. Both the remedies desire loneliness but only Cyclamen has the desire only to weep. Both are chilly.

Natrum mur has the weeping mood, intense dejection and a great desire to remain alone but the remedy is so hot that there is hardly any chance of confusion between the two remedies. Moreover, bad constipation, desire for salty food, great thirst,

intense headache, profuse sweat and depth of its action are peculiar to *Natrum*. Lastly, *Natrum* is restless, *Cyclamen* is full of lassitude and has aversion to exertion.

Puls,—Though there may be a superficial likeness between the two remedies, yet as a matter of fact they are widely different. *Puls* never wants to remain alone but always desires company and consolation. *Puls* is much hot-blooded and always wants cold and open air. The menstrual flow is rather scanty. Changeability of *mental condition* is found in *Cyclamen*, *Crocus*, etc. But *Puls* has the changeability of *disease symptoms*.

Modalities have already been given, and there is hardly any reason for repetition.

Potency,—30 to 1000 I have constantly used. I have hardly any experience in higher potencies but there is no reason why they should not be useful.

DIGITALIS.

Deep }
Anti-Psoric }

Digitalis is a deep anti-psoric medicine but it has been much misused. *Mercury* and *Digitalis*, when used in crude form, have the efficacy of doing so much injury to the system that it cannot be corrected easily. We use it only in potentised form and generally in the 200th potency and higher. Occasionally we may have to use 30th potency but never below it, and never advise our Profession to use it below 30th.

Heart.—The main action of Digitalis is upon the heart and the subsidiary action is upon the liver. The remedies that have their action upon the heart must have also, at least, some action upon the liver. But in any case, unless the individual totality is obtained for a remedy, it cannot be used on the idea of its action upon any organ. Homœopathic treatment is always according to the totality of symptoms, local and individual. Cases may arise, in which the remedy selected according to the individual totality has no action upon the organ affected, still that remedy will cure.

The action of Digitalis upon heart is characteristic. There are various remedies which act upon the same organ, but the characteristic symptoms of Digitalis must be borne in mind, so that it may be correctly used in time of necessity. If you forget all other symptoms regarding Digitalis, but remember its main characteristic, viz, that beatings of the heart are *slow and weak*, it will be sufficient, and you cannot injure the patient, even if you cannot bring in any benefit. You must always remember that in Digitalis *the heart beatings cannot be swift and strong*. Moreover, Digitalis has aggravation from *movement*, and the patient himself *feels that the action of his heart will stop in case he moves*. These two things, viz, the slow and weak action of the heart and the feeling of the patient that any movement will stop the heart, are most important concerning this remedy. The beatings of the heart are intermittent, so that the 3rd, 5th or 7th beats are not felt. Necessarily the breathing also is disorderly and sometimes with sighs. The facial appearance is pale

and without natural taint, and the mind is also sad and anxious. A few remedies shall be brought into comparison in order to fix the place of Digitalis amongst the heart remedies.

Mind,—The mind of Digitalis is extremely sad and anxious. You know there is a *correspondence* between the mind, the interior of man, and the organs, the externals. When the liver is out of order, the man must be *sad*, and when the heart is diseased he must be *anxious*. This correspondence is most important and should be carefully borne in mind. Moreover, he is timid and sometimes gets fainted. He always fears that the action of his heart may be stopped even on the slightest exertion, so that he wants always to remain still. Lastly, he cannot tolerate company and always wants to remain alone.

Digestive Organs.—The digestive organs are necessarily out of order, because of the disorder in the liver. The most characteristic and tormenting symptom is the peculiar *goneness* in the stomach, which continues even after eating. This goneness is again associated with a peculiar type of nausea which is again attended with the fear that the heart may at any time stop. There is hardly any hunger, but for the goneness the patient is compelled to eat but he does not find any relief therefrom. In place of hunger there is a good deal of thirst. He feels nauseated at the smell of food-stuffs, and does not obtain relief even after vomiting.

Sleep,—Night is the terrible time for the Digitalis patient. He cannot lie except on the back, and as soon as he enters into sleep, he at once gets up on

account of difficulty of breathing and for this he entertains a fear long before the sleep comes in. By and by he finds that he has difficulty of breathing simply on lying. There is a peculiarity of the Digitalis patient that he dreams as if he is forcefully thrown down from a long height, and he is compelled to wake up with a good deal of fright and anxiety.

Liver,—There are various troubles in the liver region, as uneasiness, soreness, sensitiveness and pains. Bile does not properly secrete and so there are whitish stools, with nausea and secretion of much saliva. By and by the organ gets enlarged, and jaundice comes in. Along with all these, there is a feeling of goneness as already noticed. Palpitation on even slight exertion and profuse saliva from the tongue are also there.

Dropsy and Ascites,—In cases where the weakness of the heart and the disorders of the liver continue, scantiness of the urine comes forth attended with the dropsical condition. The dropsy itself is not a disease but a result thereof, and so medicine cannot be selected on only the *common* symptoms, but the *individual* symptoms are required. The sensations and symptoms of the liver and the heart which have been previously dealt with are to be found. In any disease where Digitalis is to be selected, the condition of the heart as well as sensations concerning it, must have to be obtained, because in Digitalis the centre of action is in the heart. A case report is given below.

Case Report—Sj.....Duita, aged 45 or 46, an Officer of the Jharia Raj Estate had long been suffering from various disease symptoms, and at present the troubles were asthmatic breathing, difficulty of breath-

ing and hydrocele. He got the hydrocele tapped several times, but the scrotum got again enlarged, so that he had a great difficulty when walking or during any exertion. He took to Allopathy, Kavirajee and various Drug-pathies and then again to Allopathy, but to hardly any permanent relief. In October or November of 1922, he came under the local worthy Homœopath, Dr. Basanta Kumar Mitra, who gave various remedies which I do not exactly remember. When he did not find himself successful in the case, he had been to my Dhanbad Dispensary with the patient, in February, 1923. I recorded the following symptoms and condition.

The patient was badly dejected and anxious. He had the idea that his disease symptoms were incurable, and so he only wanted that his Hydrocele could be reduced to save him from inconvenience and shame. It was deep winter, yet I observed that he was sweaty. He carefully covered his whole body and sat quite still upon a bench in my Dispensary. I also marked that on the slightest exertion he was getting hard breathing.

I carefully examined all the organs of his body and found that his liver was a bit enlarged and sensitive, and the beatings of the heart were slow, weak and intermittent. Dr. Basanta Babu informed me that he applied *Ammon carb* in various potencies under the idea that the condition of the heart was responsible for the difficulty of breathing. The patient expressed a strong desire for reducing the swelling of his scrotum. When I asked the patient as to the troubles he had been suffering from, he replied in weeping mood that "he must have to eat, (even when there is a strong hunger) only a small quantity of food-stuff, because eating

aggravates his troubles ; but on the other hand, if he does not eat or eats only a small quantity, he feels a terrible anxiety and goneness within." Under the circumstances, though his strong desire was to reduce the orchitic swelling, yet we had no other alternative than to proceed on truly *individual* lines. After due consideration, we fixed upon Digitalis which we commenced on 30th and then rose up to 200th. Under God's grace, a fair amount of relief was obtained on 200th. It was found that towards the end of April, the course of improvement was stopped, and so we had to give the same remedy in 1000th. Wonder of wonders, towards the middle of June, the orchitis remained only one-fourth of what it was previously. We never found this local action from Digitalis in any of our patients. The difficulty of breathing was also much reduced, and in the end of July, another dose of 1000th was given. However, the trail of hard breathing did not cease and so in October, 1923, a dose of 10M of Digitalis had to be given and no other dose of this or any other remedy was necessary for a complete cure.

* In Homœopathy, treatment cannot be made on the *name* of the disease from which the patient suffers, and those that do so have not been able to grasp the spirit of the truth of the Science of Healing. If a man has got Pneumonia, it is because he is *diseased*, therefore he has got Pneumonia, or if he has got worms, it is because he is *diseased*, therefore he suffers from the worms-disease. So, it is clear that Pneumonia or Worms or Rheumatism or Fever or any disease of any name and denomination is only the *result* of disease. The method of treatment, rather the

only true method of treatment, can never be according to the name, but on the totality of symptoms manifested by each and every patient. Hence different patients with the same name of disease may require different remedies, as also persons suffering from different names of diseases may require the same medicine.

Now let us compare the remedies which may be, in practical cases, confounded with *Digitalis*, viz., *Kalmia*, *Arsenic*, *Gels* and *China*.

Kalmia heart is also weak, slow and attended with vertigo, as we find in *Digitalis*. There are lots of cases in which the heart is deranged on the principle of metastasis, by virtue of external suppressive medicines used in Rheumatism. In these cases, *Kalmia* symptoms come in, where the Rheumatic pains are of travelling nature, i.e., running from one joint to another. Unless the previous pains re-appear, there is hardly any chance of cure.

Arsenicum album,—In *Digitalis*, the patient feels that if he moves, his heart may altogether stop working. In *Arsenicum album* it is just opposite, and the patient is restless and moves to and fro every moment. Moreover, *Arsenic* has a fear of death which *Digitalis* may have only in a faint way. Lastly, in *Ars.*, the beatings of the heart may be weak but very swift.

Gels also sometimes appears like *Digitalis*, but the essential difference is the feeling that unless the patient constantly moves, his heart may stop action. So, this sensation is just the opposite of *Digitalis*. Both are chilly and both want to remain alone. Lastly, in spite of constant urgency for urination in *Digitalis*, the urine does not come out, whereas

in *Gels*, though there is no urgency, yet the urine comes out involuntarily.

Typhoid condition of the Brain,—In a *Digitalis* patient, if brain disorder comes in course of acute fever, sometimes dangerous circumstances may forthcome. The heart symptoms of *Digitalis* intervene along with the typhoid condition of the brain, and the patient startles up during sleep. Throbbing head-pains and violent condition, etc., may point to *Belladonna*, but the heart symptoms at once decide against it. At this time the patient gets badly weak and exhausted and he hears a peculiar sound in his ears, and sometimes *China* stands for selection, but you should always remember that *China* and *Digitalis* are antagonistic to each other. And if by mistake one is used, the other cannot be followed after it. Moreover, you need not think of any other remedy except *Digitalis* which cures the patient in a perfect way.

Sexual Organ,—In *Digitalis*, the sexual organ is very weak, and any discharge from coition or pollution in dreams badly exhausts the patient. There is constant urgency for urination, though no urine comes out or only in a very scanty quantity. The prostate gland gets enlarged and so the urination is most unsatisfactory.

Points worth remembering,—In connection with this remedy, the following points should be carefully remembered, viz., symptoms of liver and heart,—very slow and weak beatings, jaundiced condition of the body, the gone feeling in the stomach, the enlargement of the prostate gland, whitish stool, very much dejected and anxious mind along with difficulty of

breathing. Along with all these, the patient wants to remain alone, but cannot apply his mind to anything. There is hardly any desire for food, even there is nausea at the sight of food, yet the patient cannot remain without food.

Modalities,—The modalities of this remedy have already been given. The main point is that there is good amelioration when the patient is in empty stomach but there is aggravation after food and on exertion. The patient is intensely chilly, so that cold air, cold food or cold climate he is averse to. Some physicians have said that there comes an aggravation from hearing music.

Relation,—*China* and *Digitalis* do not follow each other, because they are antagonistic.

Potency,—No potency lower than 30th should be used. We always use it in 200th and higher.

DIOSCOREA.

This remedy has no depth whatever, so when indicated, acts temporarily for the time being, so that it can hardly be expected to do any good in deep chronic cases.

Colic,—It is frequently indicated in abdominal colic cases and when indicated, can remove the pains at once. It has hardly any capacity to remove the recurrence of the symptoms for which it is given. The reason is very simple. Colic is not a disease in itself, rather it is a result of the disease, and there are Psoric, Syco-Psoric and sometimes Tubercular taints at the

back, so that unless deep-acting miasmatic remedies are selected for the whole case guided by the individual symptoms of the patient, the Colic can hardly be expected to be removed.

There are various other remedies which have colic, and the distinctive features of this remedy must be known, so that it can properly be selected and used in times of need. Various types of pain are there, viz, twisting, pinching, tearing, cutting, stitching, contracting, burning, etc, etc, and the pains may arise in one place and spread alround. There is aggravation *after eating* and relief from *exertion*. The patient becomes much restless and cannot remain still at all. There is also an aggravation from bending towards the front and lying, as also relief from sitting erect and bending backwards. So that the modalities are just opposite to those of *Colocynth*. Both the remedies may have the similarity of pains but the modalities being different, selection should be properly made. The nature and modalities of *Colocynth* pain have already been dealt with, so they need not be repeated here

Sexual Organs,—Though its action is not deep, yet it may have to be sometimes used for sexual diseases. Though the organ is weak and soft, yet there may be pollutions, even, for 3 or 4 times in one night. The semen is very much thin and gets easily discharged. The patient feels intense weakness in the lower limbs, specially in the knees. This symptom, i, e, weakness of the knees due to sexual loss is also found in *Calcarea carb*, *Kali bromatum*, *Lycopodium*, etc. I would advise you to use *Nux vom*, *Sulphur*, *Calcarea carb*

and *Lycopodium* in cyclic order in patients who are sexually debilitated from the excess committed.

Modalities,—Except the modalities regarding Colic nothing to be mentioned.

Potency,—6, 12, 30 and 200 are in use. The higher potencies need not be used.

DIPHTHERINUM.

A Nosode.

Diphtherinum is a nosode and is a deep-acting remedy as all nosodes are. But it is unfortunate that no faithful proving has been made of this remedy, and so its use depends upon what has been obtained from clinical sources.

Patients whose systems are vitiated from the miasmatic taints and so are susceptible to many diseases, specially of the throat and respiratory organs, are fit for this remedy, of course if symptoms correspond. These patients have generally very weak vitality and so are prone to Diphtheria off and on.

Diphtheria,—The peculiarity of this remedy in Diphtheria and its sequæ, viz, paralysis and irritation of the spinal column, is intense weakness attended with sopor or drowsiness. Moreover, its specialty is that there is hardly any fever, the *temperature being generally lower than ordinary*. There are hardly any subjective symptoms but the objective symptoms and condition are the only guide for its use. Tonsils are enlarged and the neighbouring glands are also enlarged and sore, and any secretion from the mouth cavity is *badly offensive*. Moreover, there is hardly any difficulty

to swallow other things except the liquid foods, which generally come out through the nostrils. The breath of the patient is also highly offensive. In Diphtheria where other well-selected remedies do not work, this nosode is to be thought of.

Case Report,—It was a case of paralysis after Diphtheria and there was hardly any hope of cure. Sreeman Nimai Charan Dutt, aged 13 or 14, a boy of a certain rich family in Calcutta, when going to school one day had an attack of fever, associated with intolerable urgency to cough and so he returned home without going to School. The boy had all along been suffering from diseases of various names and denominations, and hence his name was "Pacha" or "Decomposed". However, the family members got terrified when, towards the evening, they saw that his cheeks and throat were swollen and there was much difficulty in swallowing. Every now and then the patient was startling up. Upon all these, the family physician, an Allopath of great fame and culture, was called in. The worthy doctor applied anti-phlogistine externally over the affected and swollen portion and also gave injections. No relief having forthcome, on the 6th day, another Allopathic physician of higher order was brought in for consultation but unfortunately on the 11th day the condition matured up and verged on death. On the 12th day morning, I was called in and I recorded the following symptoms and condition.

The body temperature was found 97.6° , which came down to 96° towards the afternoon. The patient was lying quite unconscious and when called by his name only looked upon us with pitiful eyes but could not

speak. A highly offensive effluvia was coming out from the mouth cavity, so much so that no body could sit by him for some time. The worthy doctor sadly declared that the patient had gangrene in his throat. There was neither urine nor stool for the last four days, and even with the help of catheters, urination was not satisfactory. The use of douche proved rather dangerous because the douche water did not come out and a great difficulty of breathing ensued, and therefore douching had been stopped from the previous day. There was paralysis in the lower portion of the body from the small of the back downwards, paralysis having been both motor and sensory. Feeding was almost impossible and troublesome, because food-stuffs tended to come out through the nose.

Upon all these symptoms, a colleague of mine who accompanied me in order to observe the case, suggested *Causticum*, but I convinced him that according to the totality of symptoms, *Diphtherinum* was the only remedy that could be given. He fully agreed with me, and we gave it in 200th potency in graduated doses. After the sixth dose and on the following day, news came to us that the patient was moving the paralysed limbs and evacuated profuse quantities of offensive stool and urine. The medicine was stopped. On the 15th day there was found that the patient was far better though the throat symptoms were still partially there. Consciousness returned and the heart was also healthier and stronger than formerly. After this, only a single dose of 1000th potency was required for him, and the patient was fully cured.

Epistaxis,—There is also epistaxis in this remedy

but cases are hardly found for its use, and that is desirable.

Potency,—It should never be used lower than 200th. I have used it from 200th upto 50M.

DROSERA

Anti-Psoric
&
Anti-Tubercular. }

This remedy, though not of many-sided use, acts very deeply, specially in the diseases relating to respiratory organs, mainly in whooping cough. Whooping cough is a disease which is generally found in children of particularly tubercular heredity and is goodly controlled by Drosera, of course, if the symptom-totality is found. Patients who have the tubercular taint in their systems are prone to be attacked frequently by Pneumonia, Pleurisy, Whooping cough, Asthmatic breathing, etc, and after their acute troubles are cured, they should be properly *constitutionally* treated, so that the tubercular taint may not further work in them. In case they are not so cured, it is just possible that actual tuberculosis may appear in their after-life.

Cough,—I have already said that this remedy is mainly used in cough, its central action being in the throat and respiratory organs. Though various types of cough are found in it, yet whooping type is mainly remedied by it.

Whooping Cough,—At first a bit of hoarseness is felt in the throat attended with a feeling, as if a

small feather is in the throat along with itching and crawling. The time of aggravation is towards the mid-night, just after the first sleep breaks up; after each cough whooping continues, the face and eyes get reddened, and much difficulty of breathing is felt. At last relief comes after much vomiting. Whooping cough is a very bad disease, and unless a true remedy is selected in the beginning, the case gets confused, with the result that the patient gets infinite troubles. Our Master has said that only one dose of *Drosera*, if properly selected, will cure a whooping cough, and we can say that the dictum is verily true. The modalities of *Drosera* must have to be clearly remembered. It aggravates on lying, in the midnight, from midnight to 3 or 4 A.M., after eating and drinking, specially drinking cold drinks, in warm room, on laughing, speaking, weeping and singing; relief comes from open and cold air, keeping the vocal organs in perfect rest, and after profuse vomiting. For comparison a few remedies are to be considered, viz., *Mephitis*, *Corallium rub*, *Coccus cact* and *Kali bi*. We shall consider them one by one.

Mephitis,—has also aggravation after lying, and though it is not exactly in the midnight. yet night is the time of aggravation. *Corallium* has also dry cough more or less during the whole day, but it has severe aggravation towards dawn. *Mephitis*, and specially *Corallium* get black face during the cough. *Coccus cacti* and *Kali bi* have also aggravation towards the dawn and relief from vomiting. But the specialty is that both the remedies have long and stringy mucus,—in *Coccus* it is like white transparent thread and in *Kali bi*

it is yellowish. Both the remedies have aggravation after sleep. Though *Coccus* is chilly and its cough begins from cold exposure, yet its cough aggravates as also the patient himself, in warmth and warm room. Drosera has also the same condition but has an aggravation from cold drink, and *Coccus* has just the opposite, i.e., aggravation from warm drinks and relief from cold ones. Moreover, both Drosera and *Coccus* have aggravation from exertion. It should be carefully remembered that *Coccus* has both the desire for and relief from cold drinks. In some cases of fully developed Tuberculosis, it can bring relief though cannot cure.

In ordinary cough also, Drosera may be used. There is itching and crawling in the throat with a bit of hoarseness, and *as soon as* the patient puts his head upon the pillow, coughing commences. This symptom is also found in *Croton tig*, *Bell*, *Hyoscyamus*, *Rumex*, etc., and a bit of comparison is necessary. The *Croton* patient must have to rise and sit up at once, sometimes he has to walk, and in most cases, he has to sit up on a chair and sleep. *Croton* has another peculiarity in case of nursing mothers,—she feels a stitching pain in the breast other than what is being sucked. It has also a most sensitive type of skin diseases, which itch violently but so sore that they cannot be touched. The other three remedies have aggravation from lying,—*Bell* symptoms come and go suddenly; it has a dry type of cough and the patient wants covering and warm room. Moreover, *Bell* has red face and throbbing headache along with other *Bell* peculiarities. *Hyoscyamus* has a cramping nature of cough and there are twitchings in almost all

the muscles of the body. Its specialty is that it cannot sleep at all on account of its nervousness. *Rumex* has also aggravation from lying but its main peculiarity is that the air of breathing must be of even temperature and therefore the patient has to keep the whole body and head perfectly covered. *Rumex* has also stringy mucus and has Sulphur-like morning diarrhœa. There is a constant itching or crawling in the throat, which aggravates upon the slightest difference of the air temperature.

Cough with Skin-eruptions,—Little boys and girls, many times have a dry cough along with eruptive diseases, like measles, etc., attended with itching and crawling in the throat, aggravating during mid-night. The face gets reddened up and an offensive effluvia comes out from the mouth.

Tubercular cough,—Save and except other types of cough, the remedy is also used in Tubercular cough which goes on continually with a general aggravation in the mid-night. Bloody mucus or pus-like mucus comes out after the cough. *Coccus cacti* may, provided the modalities are similar, be used in this type of cough. But it should be clearly remembered that whether *Drosera* or *Coccus cacti* is used in these cases guided by the similarity of symptoms and modalities, none of these remedies has *curative* power but may only palliate. The tubercular condition requires deep miasmatic remedies for permanent effect, but these remedies have no depth to meet tubercular cases. A Case report is in point.

Case Report,—Sj. Das, M.A., was a teacher of some Calcutta Collegiate School. Though he was

highly educated, yet unfortunately he was a characterless man. In 1921, when he was only of 24 or 25 years of age, he got cough along with difficulty of breathing. The disease did not continue all through the year but used to appear only during the depth of winter. No regular treatment was followed but only a few patent medicines of western and indigenous form were used. In 1928, he found that the work of teaching was almost impossible, as fits of coughing used to appear just when talking, and did not cease unless the talking was discontinued. Moreover, a sort of hoarseness appeared in 1927, which aggravated by and by. Emaciation also came in, and the physicians declared it to have been a T. B. case. He took leave of his services for a few months and had been to a change in Deoghar and Bhubaneswar. Result was only a bit of palliation, but there was no sign of real cure. In 1930, he came back to Calcutta and placed himself under the treatment of late worthy Dr. W. Younan. After a few months when there was no change for the better, I was taken as well for consultation. We studied the case and according to the symptoms the then present, we agreed upon Drosera and gave it in 1000th potency. Palliation showed at once but after a month when we were again called in, we found the patient worse than formerly, because profuse mucus with blood and pus was being ejected,—stringy and offensive, attended with night sweat and intense weakness. Upon consultation, we gave Drosera 30 in repeated doses which showed a good palliation, and led the patient to euthanasia. We gave *Calc. carb* as well but to no effect, and on the 14th June, 1931, he breathed his last.

As a complementary, *Cuprum met* sometimes comes in after *Drosera*, in case there are cramps from extremities to centre and relief of cough from drinking of cold water. *Cina* also comes in when the totality of symptoms of that remedy appears.

Potency,—30th is generally used, though 200th and 1000th can be thought of and used in T. B. cases.

DULCAMARA.	<i>Deep Anti-Psoric,</i> <i>Anti-Sycotic</i> <i>&</i> <i>Anti-Tubercular.</i>
------------	--

It is a deep miasmatic remedy, but in cases where it should be used, other superficial remedies are generally administered, for the purpose of getting an immediate benefit, so that the essence of the miasmatic condition is not at all touched. This remedy should be properly understood.

Picture of the Remedy,—The true exciting cause for the oncoming of its disease symptoms is the *change of weather* and that change must be *sudden*. The change from warm to cold, from dry to moist, which being sudden, stands for the cause. Suppose, after much walking or physical exertion, when your body is full of perspiration, you take off the coat and shirt, so that your sweat is *suddenly* stopped,—this is the condition when *Dulcamara* symptoms will arise. Of course, that sudden change is only the *exciting* cause, but there must be, behind it, the *true cause*, I mean, the *susceptibility* within the system. Master Hahnemann has very truly said that the acute diseases are only the

occasional outbursts of latent Psora. However, regarding Dulcamara, the two principal things, viz., (1) the change of climate or weather and (2) that change must be sudden, ought to be carefully remembered. Another thing in this connection ought to be remembered, which is that all diseases of this remedy are catarrhal, whether the eyes or the nose or the ears or any other organ that is affected, the catarrhal symptoms must appear, otherwise Dulcamara cannot be thought of.

Mind,—The mind of this remedy must have to be known in order to form the totality along with the above exciting cause and condition, viz, sudden change from warm to cold and the oncoming of catarrhal symptoms. The characteristic mental condition is the *intense restlessness*, so that the patient feels relieved on walking, exertion and some sort of mental engagement. Not only he is mentally restless, he is physically so, as well. In all disease conditions of Dulcamara, this condition of body and mind is essential.

A comparison should be made with *Rhus tox* and *Arsenicum album*. *Rhus tox* cannot but be restless, though he does not feel even a bit of relief therefrom. *Ars* restlessness is absolutely mental and along with it there are anxiety, fear, and specially fear of death. *Rhus* restlessness is mainly bodily, Dulcamara restlessness should better be called love of or desire for exertion. And this exertion makes his troubles tolerable. *Rhus* has the aggravation from rains and moist air, *Ars* has it from cold, whether dry or moist, and Dulcamara has the aggravation from the change from warm to cold. Not only so but this change must also be sudden. Of course, all the three like warmth. Only Dulcamara

wants the uniformity of temperature. Regarding depth, Dulcamara stands highest, next *Ars*, and last of all *Rhus*.

Nose and Catarrh,—Though the moist cold, change of season and specially sudden change of temperature bring in Dulcamara disease symptoms, yet Autumn seems to be the special time for its aggravation. The reason is that in the Autumn season, the days are hot and a sudden change of cool temperature sets in from evening. For this, the Dulcamara patient is affected with a peculiar type of catarrhal fever which is technically called Hay-fever. Hay-fever should be very carefully understood and treated because it generally develops into Tubercular symptoms, if mal-treated or suppressed.

* Hay-fever does not attack anybody and everybody. Only those that have a tubercular susceptibility or tubercular affinity in them, are prone to Hay-fever when the exciting cause or causes appear. The pre-disposition must be there. So, whenever in any body two or three attacks of Hay-fever appear, he should be careful and must understand that his system needs perfect and constitutional cure. A particular attack of Hay-fever may be cured by a few doses of any remedy that is indicated by the totality of symptoms manifested at the time,—but that is not the point, because it will be seen that another attack will manifest another totality and so require a different medicine. So, the point is that the deep susceptibility of the individual patient must have to be cured by deep miasmatic remedies selected on the totality of *constitutional* symptoms and *individual* peculiarities.

A few remedies are there which should be compared with Dulcamara, regarding the Hay-fever that is found in them. It should always be remembered that the Hay-fever is not an ordinary cough and cold but a deeper miasmatic manifestation, and so simple palliation for the time being is not only useless but sometimes dangerous.

If a patient has the susceptibility of being attacked by Hay-fever in rainy seasons only, the physician ought to carefully observe during the treatment whether the patient has the susceptibility less and less in the following rainy seasons. It has been seen that it may take from two to six years for a perfect cure. Now to the comparison.

Dulcamara,—Dulcamara Hay-fever generally appears in August and September, because at the time the days are intensely hot, and in the evening and throughout the whole night there is a change, a sudden change from hot to cold. A Dulcamara patient is careful enough that the cold air does not enter into the nostrils, which he therefore keeps covered with his handkerchief, so that the nostrils do not stuff up, as usually they do; not only so, from this covering, coughing and sneezing are also much lessened or they altogether stop. Watering of the eyes and nose is also much relieved thereby; they aggravate in open air but ameliorate in warm and closed rooms. As a patient he gets relief from exertion,—in fact, he cannot do without exerting himself.

Ammon carb,—*Ammon carb* has stuffing of the

nose, specially during night, much less during the day-time. There is a drowsiness all along and much aggravation after sleep. Patient is much chilly, and so, cold bath aggravates. There is bleeding through the nose, and all its discharges are excoriating. However, *Ammon carb* patient does not want exertion as *Dulcamara* patient does, or the *sudden* change of temperature is necessary to affect him, but cold generally aggravates.

Nux vom,—*Nux vom* has stuffing of the nose and it is aggravated during night, but it is not the night that aggravates but it is the closed room that aggravates. It is better during day and in open air, so it stands just opposite to *Dulcamara*. The catarrhal symptoms of *Nux* aggravate during morning and in closed rooms, whereas ameliorate in open air and cold air. Though *Nux* is a chilly remedy, yet during catarrh and coryza, it has relief from cold and open air. *Ammon carb* has aggravation after sleep, *Nux* has rather relief at the time. The fact is that in cold air *Nux vom* gets the nostrils free, whereas *Ammon carb* is badly aggravated therefrom. *Dulcamara* must be careful, so that cold air cannot enter into nose. Then again, in rainy cold days, *Dulcamara* has to be more careful.

Hepar sulph,—It has much fear for cold, so that on the slightest exposure of any part of his body and on the slightest inhalation, nostrils are stuffed up. One thing you must remember that *Hepar sulph* is aggravated from dry cold or winter, but is better in moist cold of rainy season. The Hay-fever of *Hepar sulph* is also found to appear in dry cold. It has

relief in a closed room. *Hepar* patient is much impatient and has profuse sweat all the time.

Rhus tox.,—Its Hay-fever comes in during rainy season and from river bath and swimming. It is a rheumatic remedy, so there are pains all over the body during Hay-fever. Its relief is in closed room and aggravation from cold, specially moist cold. Its central point is its intense restlessness. Dulcamara has also restlessness, from which it gets relief, whereas *Rhus* cannot do without being restless, though it cannot obtain a definite relief therefrom.

Lac. can.,—In the Hay-fever of *Lac can*, the characteristic point is that stuffing of the nose frequently changes nostrils, i.e., for some time the right nostril is stopped and then it opens, and the left one is stopped. In this way, it changes sides. *Lachesis* and a few other remedies have this nature, but in *Lac can*, first right, then left, then again to the right,—this is characteristic,—changing of sides and then returning to the original side. The discharge is excoriating and so the nostrils are ulcerated. In this remedy, Diphtheria comes in more often than the Hay-fever. Its Diphtheria also has the same characteristic of changing sides.

Lachesis,—It has aggravation in the spring, i.e., just when hot weather commences after winter. It has also stuffing of the nose, but it has the characteristic that almost all its disease symptoms commence in the left and may extend towards the right. It has the special aggravation after sleep and in the sun-rays. So, you can easily differentiate this remedy from

Dulcamara, as *Lachesis* has no aggravation in the sudden changes of temperature but only when hot weather sets in after cold. It has also Diphtheric troubles. During Diphtheria or Hay-fever, the difficulty of breathing is its characteristic.

Arsenicum album,—It has also Hay-fever. The discharges are excoriating, bringing in frequent, almost constant fits of sneezing. There is an intense burning in the nostrils. Like Dulcamara, it has an aggravation if cold air enters into the nostrils. The patient is chilly, thirsty but can take water only in sips, because though the patient has thirst, he has no desire for cold drinks. It has relief from warmth and heat, even the sense of burning is also ameliorated thereby. Intense restlessness and fear of death are its characteristics. It has been found that *Arsenicum iod* more often comes in, as indicated in Hay-fever.

Arsenicum iod,—It is more used in Hay-fever than *Arsenicum album*, because the Hay-fever in most cases is tubercular, and *Ars. iod* antidotes that miasm. However, all the symptoms of Hay-fever are found in this remedy, though sneezing has the predominance. Its discharges are excoriating and the patient feels dryness in the nostrils, but the specialty of this remedy is that the glands round the neck are found to swell and much saliva comes out of the mouth. It has a voracious appetite. Much restlessness, physical and mental, is its characteristic. Cold certainly aggravates, though some patients want it and the others dislike it. Cold bath much aggravates. The patient goes on emaciating and emaciating. It is very hard to ascertain any other modality.

Psorinum,—A most necessary and deep-acting remedy. Though the change of temperature stands as the cause of its Hay-fever but it is not necessary, as in Dulcamara, that the change must be sudden and from hot to cold. The nose is stuffed up and the patient feels that he is constantly taking cold. The winter is its special aggravating time, and, in fact, *dry cold aggravates*. The patient has good appetite but does not develop and has much sweat. Unlike Dulcamara, he has an aversion to exertion. *Mentally much dejected*.

Tuberculinum bovinum,—Deeper than *Psorinum*. Much weak and always exhausted. *Psorin* wants to keep in one place and does not like exertion, but *Tuberculinum* not only wants exertion like Dulcamara but wants changes as well, so that he wants to change place, climate, his physician, etc., though he is never satisfied, unlike Dulcamara, who is rather relieved from the exertions. The aggravating feature is quite peculiar, because *the very thing which the patient desires aggravates his case*. *Psorin* is only Psoric, whereas *Tuberculinum* is Tubercular.

Throat and Chest,—The very nature of this remedy is that any sudden change of temperature brings in not only Hay-fever, but *catarrhal symptoms* as well. The patient might have engaged himself in some work, he came back and put off his shirt and coat, so that the flow of his perspiration is *suddenly* stopped, or may at once bathe himself, so that he suddenly cools down; and as a result, he may have tonsillitis, pain in the throat with cough and catarrh. There must be catarrhal symptoms, and this is the point which you must have to carefully remember. In these cases, unless

a deep-acting medicine like *Dulcamara* is used and with the superficial medicines only the manifested group of symptoms is somehow checked for the time, the result will be that the deep susceptibility of the patient will not at all be touched, and it will rather be helping the patient to proceed in the Tubercular line.

Diarrhœa,—The diarrhœic symptoms of *Dulcamara*, viz, indigestion, dysentery, etc., also appear in autumn, on account of sudden change of temperature. There are several pains in the lower abdomen, viz, cutting, aching, stitching, etc., before the evacuation, and then stools come out. The nature and colour of the stool are always changeful, sometimes there may be blood or there may not be, but there must be mucus. In any case, the changefulness is characteristic. *Puls* and *Sulphur* have also changeability in them, like *Dulcamara*. *Nux vom* has also pains in the lower abdomen before stool, but sometimes the urgency to stool in *Nux* is ineffectual; the stool that comes out in *Nux* is very small at a time and there is also tenesmus after stool; and though there is felt a relief after 'stool, yet the patient is troubled with the "never-get-done" feeling, i. e., he feels that much remains unpassed. *Nux* is chilly and he feels chilly on movement, so that the *Nux* patient does not like movement, whereas *Dulcamara* feels much relieved on movement. Regarding *Pulsatilla*, there is hardly any likeness except the changefulness of its symptoms. *Puls* likes cold air, cold bath and cold room, and the change of temperature, whether sudden or gradual, is not at all the aggravating element of *Puls*, rather the change is a relieving feature in it. *Puls* wants exertion, but it

must be very slow. Regarding *Sulphur*, the "driving-out-of-bed" stool, intolerable burning in the anus with excoriation, excess of hunger at about 10 or 11 A. M., susceptibility to skin-diseases, are important. The *Sulphur* patient, though averse to bath, yet likes cold, lies upon cold floor and likes walking in cold open air. The change of temperature has hardly any influence upon the *Sulphur* patient.

Rheumatism.—It has also Rheumatism and the exciting cause is all the same. During acute aggravation, the patient looks like that of *Rhus tox*, and in fact, *Rhus tox* is generally used for immediate relief of the patient. Of course, *Rhus* cannot complete the cure, and so you are to enquire into the details, and you will find that in Dulcamara, the exciting cause is sudden change of temperature from hot to *cold*, whereas in *Rhus*, the change is from hot or cold to *moist*. Moreover, a Dulcamara case is deeper and *Rhus* cases are rather acute. Dulcamara works much deeper and can work on anti-psoric lines, which *Rhus* cannot. In Dulcamara Rheumatism, there are inflammation, swelling and sensitiveness, and its aggravation is found in the evening and night, and from rest.

Urinary Organ.—There is a peculiarity in Dulcamara, viz, on the slightest exposure to cold, there is profuse urination. This is also catarrhal and I have already dwelt upon its catarrhal nature. This profuseness of urine of Dulcamara is also found in the rains but the temperature must be cold, and you should know that moisture or dampness is not the cause but the real cause is *coldness*.

Skin.—There are various types of skin diseases in

this remedy, viz, small and big warts, urticaria, herpes, eczema, boils, etc. and when Dulcamara should be given, *Rhus tox* is very often used. It is very difficult to rightly prescribe and differentiate between Dulcamara and *Rhus tox*. Only one thing is to be observed, viz, Dulcamara is deeper and has a general tendency of skin diseases, and *Rhus tox* has only acute cases.

In Urticaria cases, it is useful to remember that Dulcamara has aggravation from heat and relief from cold. So, it stands just opposite to *Rhus* symptoms. In deep cases, it is always better to take the individual and constitutional symptoms, specially if Dulcamara peculiarities are not obtained.

In cases where Dulcamara skin symptoms are suppressed, various bad effects come in, specially dropsy. After the case report, we shall come to the remedies with which a comparison is useful, viz, *Sulphur*, *Calcarea*, and *Ars*. We have already given comparison with *Rhus*.

Case Report,—Sj. Sreenibas Roy, aged 38 or 39, had all along been under Allopathic treatment. Now, under the advice of his friends and relations, came to me for treatment. I got the following history and condition.

“Every year towards the end of Summer, I have been suffering from various types of skin-diseases. The suffering used to continue during the whole of rains with relief as soon as cold days set in. This sort of suffering commenced early in my boyhood and it was only in 1923 that I got a few injections and since then, this state of things discontinued. But unfortunately in 1924, towards the end of March, my sufferings

appeared to take a new turn in which constant coryza, stoppage of the nostrils, constant but specially at night, breathing through mouth with dryness of the interior, with frequent waking in order to moisten the mouth came in, but the worst point was a type of slow fever with a continued emaciation. There was a loss of appetite and a constant uneasiness was felt. I took various Calcium injections in course of six months. The result was that though coryza and feverishness were no more, but as a whole man I was much worse. At last I thought of changing the climate and had been to Dhanbad".

I recorded the following condition and symptoms in September, 1926.

"Sometimes my brain gets confused, so that I feel that I am going to be crazy. What I have done this morning or yesterday, I feel to have done them two years back. I am under this condition, since I took injections and along with this condition of my brain, I have been getting violent palpitation of my heart and extreme exhaustion. I feel much exhausted on slight exertions. I suffer from palpitations, yet a man of my nature cannot possibly sit quite at rest. I like Summer because I am all along chilly. I am generally upset in Winter and Rains, and specially during the change of climate, when I get frequent cough and coryza ; but these catarrhal symptoms have gone away since taking those injections. At present there is a swelling of the whole body and dropsical symptoms are also there. Since early boyhood I had to suffer from various types of skin diseases with intense itching. These skin diseases were of weeping nature.

and that weeping of profuse watery substances used to come in after scratching. The skin diseases upon my head continued upto 12th or 13th year of my life, so far as I remember. Various drugs were externally used but to no effect. Then along with the age, the skin diseases slowly appeared to leave the upper part and be manifested towards the lower portions of my body. I suffered from these skin diseases from the end of Summer to Autumn, but since 1925 the skin diseases are no more. One thing I want to tell you is that so long as I suffered from my skin diseases, I was far better in all other respects though there was a susceptibility to cold. Now-a-days I have been suffering in every way and there is hardly any ease and comfort”.

From palpation over the abdomen, I was sure of much accumulation of water in the region, and I also observed the restless nature of the patient.

On the 13th September, 1926, his son, Nirad Baran came to me and I advised to administer four doses of Dulcamara 1000. On the 26th or 27th November, I found the body of the patient almost full of various types of skin-eruptions and dropsical symptoms were much less. I could not feel the wave and I learnt that after 10 or 12 days since the administration of the first dose, he was having a profuse quantity of dirty urine. Towards the end of December, the skin-eruptions became less and so another dose of 1000 of the same remedy was given. Towards the end of January, he was almost all right regarding disease symptoms but he was much reduced regarding his body. I advised for a change to Bhubaneswar. He

was all right except another cluster of skin eruptions which made their appearance just before the rains, and so I sent a dose of Dulcamara 10M for him. In 1928 he required another dose of 50M of the same remedy, and that was all. The patient was now fully convinced of the deplorable effect of suppression and of the sweet efficacy of a true cure.

Now let us compare the remedy with the following medicines.

Sulphur,—It has been called the “king” of anti-psorics. It has all types of skin-diseases but the *nature* of the patient should be understood. He is much dirty, does not desire bath which also aggravates skin-diseases; save and except cold bath, the *Sulphur* patient wants cold in every respect. The skin-symptoms are aggravated from cold bath, bed-warmth and in Summer.

Calc. carb.,—It is complementary to *Rhus tox.*, and if *Rhus* cannot complete a case, *Calcarea* is generally used. *Calcarea* is also used after *Sulphur*. Like *Rhus*, *Calcarea* has aggravation in rains, and if in young children *Calcarea* symptoms are there, viz, sour stool and vomit, profuse sweat in the head, specially in the forehead, wetting the pillow far around, fair, fat and plump make etc, *Calcarea* is very useful in all the skin symptoms. *Calcarea* has also, like *Dulcamara*, nettle-rash or urticaria but the *Dulcamara* patient manifests it on exposure to cold, whereas *Calcarea* is just opposite, i.e., *Calcarea* urticaria never manifests in cold days or winter. Moreover, in chronic cases, *Calcarea* must be used and in acute ones *Rhus* or *Dulcamara* may be used. Lastly, *Dulcamara* desires exertion, *Calcarea* does not.

Arsenicum,—It has also various types of skin-eruptions but when they come out, the patient, unlike *Dulcamara* wants covering and lying in the sun. Of course, both are restless but *Dulcamara* simply wants exertion, whereas *Ars.* is violently restless, anxious and full of fear of death.

Paralysis—*Dulcamara* has paralysis as well, but it is partial. The exciting cause is the exposure to damp cold. The kidneys, vocal organs, lungs or any other organ of the system may be affected with paralysis, as a result thereof. *Causticum* has also local paralysis but the exciting cause is *dry* cold. Of course, there must be psoric taint in the system, as a back ground.

Relationship—*Baryta carb* is the main complementary, *Calcarea carb* also sometimes comes in before or after *Dulcamara*, but *Baryta* should never be used after *Calcarea*.

Modalities—The main aggravating cause is cold, damp or dry, but the *sudden change* from warm to cold is the main point in this relation. There is also an aggravation from the suppression of any discharge, viz, menstrual flow, bleeding from piles, flow of perspiration, any type of catarrh, skin-disease, etc. Only relief is from exertion. The itching and burning after the appearance of urticaria are relieved by cold, though there is a general aggravation from cold.

Potency—Any potency from 6 upwards is useful.







